



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

38.

1086



ILLUSTRATIONS
OF
BRITISH HISTORY, BIOGRAPHY, AND MANNERS,
IN THE REIGNS OF
HENRY VIII, EDWARD VI, MARY, ELIZABETH, & JAMES I.

**B. RENSLEY, PRINTER,
GRIFP& BRIDGE, MITCHAM.**

ILLUSTRATIONS
OF
BRITISH HISTORY, BIOGRAPHY, AND MANNERS,
IN THE REIGNS OF
HENRY VIII, EDWARD VI, MARY, ELIZABETH, & JAMES I,
EXHIBITED IN A SERIES OF
ORIGINAL PAPERS,
SELECTED FROM THE MSS.
OF THE NOBLE FAMILIES OF HOWARD, TALBOT, AND CECIL,
CONTAINING,
AMONG A VARIETY OF INTERESTING PIECES,
A GREAT PART OF THE
CORRESPONDENCE OF ELIZABETH AND HER MINISTERS
WITH GEORGE, SIXTH EARL OF SHREWSBURY,
DURING THE FIFTEEN YEARS IN WHICH
Mary, Queen of Scots,
REMAINED IN HIS CUSTODY.

WITH NUMEROUS
NOTES AND OBSERVATIONS
BY EDMUND LODGE, ESQ.,
K.H., NORROY KING OF ARMS, & F.S.A.

SECOND EDITION,
WITH ADDITIONS, REVISED AND CORRECTED.

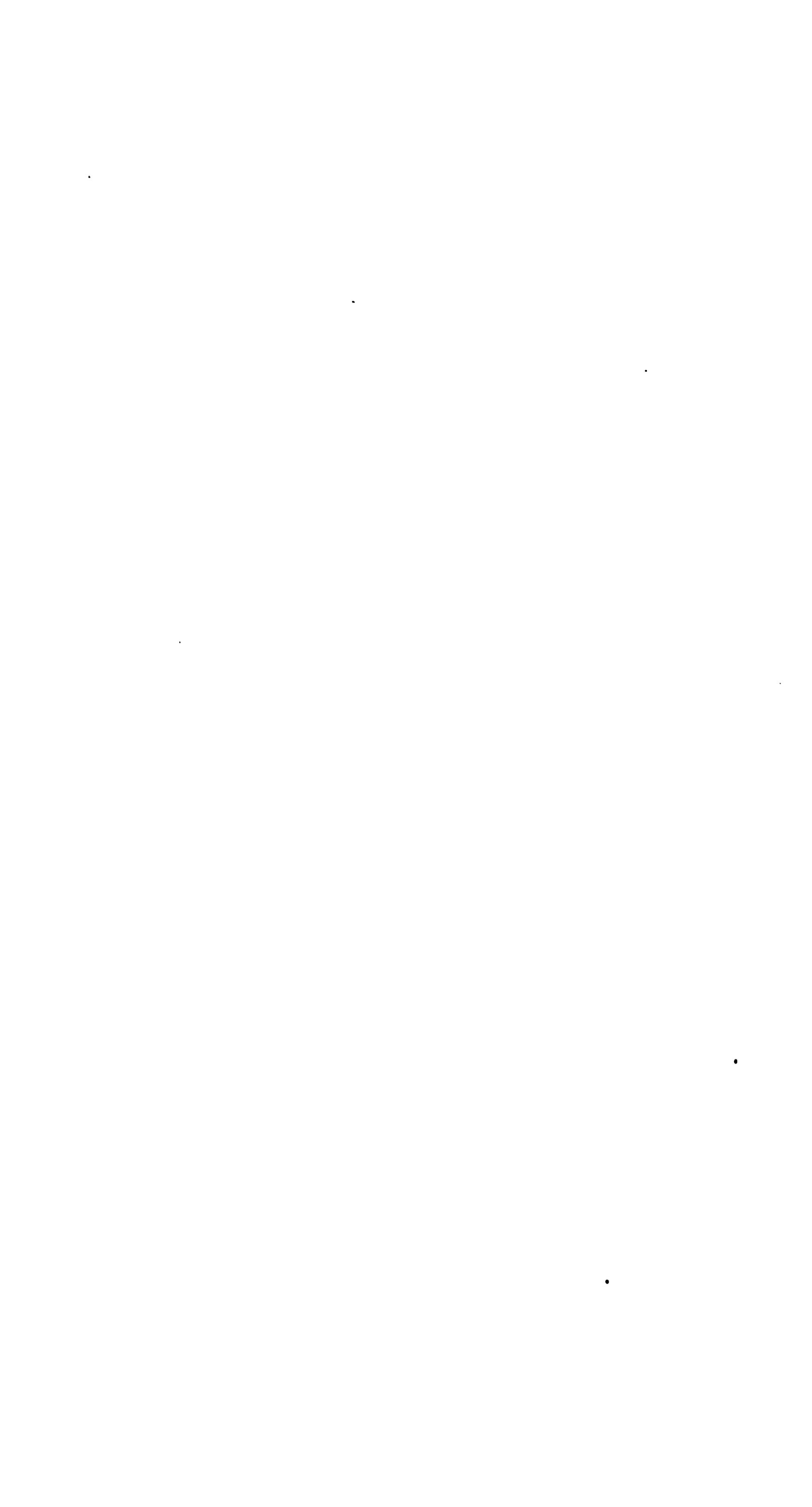
IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

LONDON
JOHN CHIDLEY, 123, ALDERSGATE STREET.
MDCCXXXVIII.

1086.





CONTENTS

OF

THE SECOND VOLUME.

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| Lord Burghley to the same. <i>Dec. 16</i> | 1 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to the Privy Council. <i>Feb. 1</i> | 3 |
| Sir Thomas Smith to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Feb. 17</i> | 4 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. <i>Feb. 21</i> | 8 |
| The same to the Queen. <i>March 3</i> | 12 |

1573

| | |
|---|--------------|
| Thomas Bawdewyne to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>April 12</i> .. | 14 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. <i>April 25</i> | 16 |
| Gilbert Talbot to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>May 11</i> | <i>ibid.</i> |
| The same to the same. <i>May 25</i> | 21 |
| The Earl of Leicester to the same. <i>June 1</i> | 23 |
| Lord Burghley to the same. <i>June 14</i> | 26 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Sir Francis Walsingham. <i>June</i> | 27 |
| The same to the same. <i>July 15</i> | 28 |
| Lord Burghley to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Aug. 10</i> | 30 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. <i>Nov. 30</i> | 33 |
| The Earl of Huntingdon to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Jan 18</i> . | 34 |

1574

| | |
|---|----|
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Gilbert Talbot. <i>New Year's Day</i> | 35 |
| The same to Lord Burghley. <i>April 16</i> | 36 |
| The same to the same. <i>May 14</i> | 38 |
| The same to Sir Francis Walsingham. <i>Aug. 31</i> | 40 |
| The Earl of Leicester to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Sep. 5</i> .. | 41 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to the Queen. <i>Dec. 2</i> | 43 |

| | PAG ^E |
|--|------------------|
| The Earl of Leicester to the Earl of Shrewsbury. Dec. 6.. | 46 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. Dec. 27..... | 47 |
| The same to the same. March 3 | 49 |
| 1575 | |
| The same to the Queen. Sep. 24..... | 51 |
| Lord Burghley to the Earl of Shrewsbury. Dec. 24..... | 52 |
| The same to the same. Jan. 1 | 57 |
| Lord Talbot to the same. Jan. 4..... | 58 |
| Gilbert Talbot to the Earl and Countess of Shrewsbury. Feb. 20..... | 61 |
| Sir Francis Walsingham to the Earl of Shrewsbury. March 19..... | 62 |
| The Earl of Sussex to Lord Burghley..... | 66 |
| Ralph Barber's Bill for various things purchased in France for the Earl of Shrewsbury | 68 |
| 1576 | |
| The Earl of Leicester to the Earl of Shrewsbury. May 1.. | 73 |
| Sir Francis Walsingham to the same. June 27..... | 74 |
| Gilbert Talbot to the same. July 6..... | 75 |
| Gilbert Talbot and his wife to the same. Jan. 3..... | 78 |
| 1577 | |
| The Queen to the Earl and Countess of Shrewsbury. June 25 | 80 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to the Queen. July 4..... | 81 |
| Lord Burghley to the Earl of Shrewsbury. July 19..... | 83 |
| The same to the same. July 23..... | 85 |
| The same to the same. Aug. 4 | 86 |
| The Earl of Sussex to Lord Burghley. Aug. 21..... | 87 |
| Lord Burghley to the Earl of Shrewsbury. Sep. 7 | 89 |
| The Earl of Leicester to the same. Feb. 15 | 91 |
| The Countess of Shrewsbury to the same..... | 94 |
| 1578 | |
| Gilbert Talbot to the same. May 3 | 96 |
| Mey, Bishop of Carlisle, to the same. July 25..... | 100 |
| The same to the same. July 30..... | 104 |
| The Earl of Sussex to the Queen. Aug. 28..... | 107 |
| Richard of Topcliffe to the Earl of Shrewsbury. Aug. 30.. | 119 |
| Lord Burghley to the same. Oct. 8..... | 125 |

CONTENTS.

vii

| | PAGE |
|--|--------------|
| "A proof how Cardinal Henry was rightful King of Portugal, by the death of King Sebastian." | 126 |
| The Earl of Sussex to Lord Burghley. <i>Nov. 4</i> | 131 |
| The same to the same. <i>Nov. 5</i> | 133 |
| John Alen to the Bishop of Carlisle. <i>Nov. 5</i> | 134 |
| Mey, Bishop of Carlisle, to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Dec. 3.</i> | 137 |
| Gilbert Talbot to the same. <i>Feb. 13</i> | 138 |
| Richard Topcliffe to the same. <i>Feb. 28</i> | 143 |
| Gilbert Talbot to the same. <i>March 5</i> | 145 |
| 1579 | |
| The same to the same. <i>April 4</i> | 148 |
| Mey, Bishop of Carlisle, to the same. <i>May 9</i> | 151 |
| Gilbert Talbot to the same. <i>May 15</i> | 153 |
| Lords of the Council to the same. <i>May 29</i> | 157 |
| Sandys, Archbishop of York, to the same. <i>Oct. 14</i> | 161 |
| The same to the same. <i>March 5</i> | 162 |
| Richard Topcliffe to the same. <i>March 16</i> | 164 |
| 1580 | |
| Lord Talbot to the same. <i>May 29</i> | 166 |
| The same to the same. <i>June 23</i> | 167 |
| The Earl of Sussex to Lord Burghley. <i>June 28</i> | 169 |
| Thomas Bawdewyne to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>June</i> | 170 |
| The Earl of Sussex to Lord Burghley. <i>July 1</i> | 172 |
| Thomas Bawdewyne to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>July 1</i> | 174 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. <i>July 9</i> | 177 |
| The same to the same. <i>July 26</i> | 179 |
| The same to the same. <i>Aug. 9</i> | 181 |
| The same to Thomas Bawdewyne. <i>Nov. 20</i> | 183 |
| Thomas Bawdewyne to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Dec. 22</i> .. | 185 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to the Queen. <i>Jan. 26</i> | 187 |
| The same to the same | 188 |
| The same to Lord Burghley | 190 |
| The same to — | 192 |
| The same to Sir Francis Walsingham | <i>ibid.</i> |
| Doctor Wilson to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Jan. 31</i> | 193 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Thomas Bawdewyne. <i>Feb. 23</i> .. | 195 |
| 1581 | |
| The Earl of Leicester to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>April 19</i> .. | 196 |

| | PAGE |
|---|---------------------|
| The Earl of Sussex to Lord Burghley. June 27..... | 199 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Thomas Bawdewyne. Jan. 25.. | 200 |
| The same to the same. Feb. 10 | 201 |
| Lord Talbot to the Earl of Shrewsbury. Feb. 12..... | 203 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. March 2..... | 206 |
| The Earl of Leicester to the Earl of Shrewsbury. March 8 | 207 |
| 1582 | |
| Robert Beale to the same. April 2..... | 208 |
| The same to the same. April 2 | 211 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. April 20..... | 218 |
| The same to the same. June 12..... | 219 |
| The same to the same. June 27..... | <i>ibid.</i> |
| Robert Beale to the Earl of Shrewsbury. June 28 | 221 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Thomas Bawdewyne. July 12.. | 223 |
| Sir Francis Walsingham to the Earl of Shrewsbury. July 30 | 224 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to the Queen. Aug. 5 | 228 |
| The same to Sir Francis Walsingham. Aug. 5..... | 229 |
| The Earl of Sussex to Lord Burghley. Aug. 7..... | 231 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to the same. Aug. 23 | 232 |
| The same to Thomas Bawdewyne. Aug. 29..... | 233 |
| The Earl of Leicester to the Earl of Shrewsbury. Sep. 5.. | 235 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Sir Francis Walsingham. Oct. 18 | 236 |
| The same to the same. Oct. 18 | 237 |
| The same to Thomas Bawdewyne. March 5 | 240 |
| 1583 | |
| The same to the same. May 20..... | 241 |
| 1584 | |
| The same to the Earl of Leicester. Aug. 8..... | 243 |
| Sir Francis Walsingham to the Earl of Shrewsbury. Sep. 2 | 245 |
| A Testimonial, by the Queen and Council, of the Earl of Shrewsbury's fidelity in the custody of the Queen of Scots. Sep. 15..... | 247 |
| Lord Burghley to Lord Cobham. Oct. 27..... | 250 |
| Thomas Stringer to the Earl of Shrewsbury. Nov. 15..... | 253 |
| John Harpur to the same. Feb. 3 | 258 |
| Sir John Somers to Thomas Stringer. Feb. 15..... | 260 |
| 1585 | |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to the Earl of Leicester. April 30.. | 262 |

CONTENTS.

ix

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| The Master of Gray to Archibald Douglas. <i>July 8.</i> | 264 |
| Henry Talbot to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Aug. 6.</i> | 268 |
| The same to the same. <i>Aug. 22.</i> | 271 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. <i>Oct. 23.</i> | 273 |
| The same to the same. <i>Nov. 9.</i> | 274 |
| Serjeant Walmsley to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Dec. 15.</i> ... | 275 |
| The Earl of Leicester to the same. <i>Jan. 16.</i> | 280 |
| " Abstract of the authority given to Lieutenants of Coun- ties by their commissions." | 282 |
| " Sir Francis Walsingham's instructions for the training of shot." | 284 |

1586

| | |
|--|-----|
| Sir Bryan Lascalles to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>May 20.</i> .. | 285 |
| The Master of Gray to Archibald Douglas. <i>Oct. 11.</i> | 287 |
| The same to the same. <i>Oct. 21.</i> | 290 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. <i>Oct. 28.</i> | 291 |
| The same to Lord Talbot. <i>Nov. 12.</i> | 293 |
| The Master of Gray to Archibald Douglas. <i>Dec. 9.</i> | 294 |
| Sir Fulk Greville to the same. <i>Jan. 12.</i> | 295 |
| The Laird of Restalrig to the same. <i>Feb. 25.</i> | 297 |
| Lords of the Council to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Feb. 26..</i> | 300 |

1587

| | |
|---|-----|
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Talbot. <i>June 17.</i> | 302 |
| Sir Henry Lee to the same. <i>Aug. 13.</i> | 303 |
| Richard Douglas to Archibald Douglas. <i>Aug. 30.</i> | 309 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Sir Henry Lee. <i>Sep. 6.</i> | 316 |
| ——— to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Oct. 11.</i> | 318 |
| The Earl of Sussex to the Queen. <i>Nov. 5.</i> | 319 |
| Richard Douglas to Archibald Douglas. <i>Nov. 6.</i> | 323 |
| The same to the same. <i>Jan. 24.</i> | 329 |
| Extracts from papers of this year relative to proceedings against Recusants in the county of Derby | 338 |

1588

| | |
|--|-----|
| The Earl of Leicester to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Aug. 15.</i> | 344 |
| The Earls of Shrewsbury and Derby to Lord Burghley and Sir Christopher Hatton. <i>Sep. 6.</i> | 345 |
| Richard Douglas to Archibald Douglas. <i>Sep. 11.</i> | 346 |
| Sir George Heneage to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Jan. 4.</i> ... | 348 |

1589

| | |
|--|-----|
| William Fleetwood to the Earl of Derby. <i>New Year's Day.</i> | 350 |
| William Bailie to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>April 7.</i> | 354 |
| Richard Bagot to the same. <i>April 16.</i> | 356 |
| The Earl of Derby to the same. <i>May 21.</i> | 358 |
| Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Norris to the Privy Council. <i>May 7.</i> | 359 |
| Lord Talbot to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>May 26.</i> | 367 |
| Lord Burghley to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>May 27.</i> | 372 |
| Sir Thomas Fitzherbert to the same. <i>May 28.</i> | 375 |
| Lord Burghley to the same. <i>June 6.</i> | 377 |
| Lord Howard to the same. <i>June 21.</i> | 378 |
| Sir Edward Norreys to Sir Christopher Hatton. | 379 |
| Sir Francis Walsingham to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Dec. 14.</i> | 383 |
| John Stanhope to Lord Talbot. <i>Dec. 22.</i> | 384 |
| Sir George Chaworth to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Jan. 7.</i> | 386 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley. <i>Jan. 31.</i> | 388 |
| ——— to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Feb. 4.</i> | 390 |
| Thomas Markham to the same. <i>Feb. 17.</i> | 392 |
| Lord Burgbly's orders for the better arming, and more speedy furnishing of the soldiers in Hertfordshire. | 394 |

ELIZABETH.

1590

| | |
|---|-----|
| William Dundas to Archibald Douglas. <i>June 11.</i> | 406 |
| Overton, Bishop of Litchfield and Coventry, to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Oct. 12.</i> | 407 |
| William Cecil to Lord Talbot. <i>Oct. 23.</i> | 412 |
| Thomas Kery to the same. <i>Oct. 23.</i> | 415 |
| Robert Brakinbury to the same. <i>Nov. 20.</i> | 418 |
| John Stanhope to the same. | 421 |
| Francis Needham to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Nov. 24.</i> | 425 |
| Richard Topclyffe to Gilbert Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Dec. 8.</i> | 428 |
| John Stanhope to the same. <i>Dec. 9.</i> | 432 |
| The Earl of Huntingdon to the same. <i>Jan. 6.</i> | 434 |
| John Stanhope to the same. <i>March 10.</i> | 435 |

1591

| | |
|--|-----|
| Sir Henry Lee to the same. <i>June 21.</i> | 438 |
|--|-----|

CONTENTS.

xi

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| 1592 | |
| Sir Charles Cavendish to the Countess of Shrewsbury | 442 |
| James Morice to Lord Burghley. <i>March 1</i> | 443 |
| 1593 | |
| The Earl of Derby to the Earl of Essex. <i>Dec. 19</i> | 447 |
| The Earl of Essex to the Earl of Derby. <i>Jan. 17</i> | 450 |
| William Hammond to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Jan. 26</i> | 451 |
| Translat d'un Pasquelle intitule "Le Cauefagisme."..... | 456 |
| 1594 | |
| Narrative of the Earl of Derby's illness and death. <i>April..</i> | 459 |
| Lords of the Council to the Justices of Assize on the Northern Circuit. <i>June</i> | 462 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Edward Talbot. <i>June 22</i> | 463 |
| Edward Talbot to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>June 23</i> | 465 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Edward Talbot. <i>June 23</i> | 466 |
| Edward Talbot to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>June 24</i> | 467 |
| The Earl of Essex to the same. <i>July 7</i> | 468 |
| Lord Howard to the same. <i>July 7</i> | 470 |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Howard. <i>July 13</i> | 472 |
| The same to the Earl of Essex. <i>July 13</i> | 474 |
| Roger Manners to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Aug. 31</i> | 479 |
| Anthony Ashley to the same. <i>Sep. 8</i> | 480 |
| Roger Manners to the same. <i>Sep. 20</i> | 483 |
| Doctor John Benet to the same. <i>Oct. 1</i> | 485 |
| 1595 | |
| The Earl of Shrewsbury to the Justices of Derbyshire. <i>March 7</i> | 487 |
| 1596 | |
| The same to Sir Humphrey Ferrers and John Manners. <i>April 13</i> | 490 |
| The same to Lord Burghley. <i>Sep. 16</i> | 493 |
| The same to Sir Robert Cecil. <i>Oct. 3</i> | 494 |
| Henry Constable to the Countess of Shrewsbury..... | 498 |
| The same to the same..... | 499 |
| The oath taken by Henry the Great for the observation of his treaty with Elizabeth. <i>Oct. 19</i> | 500 |
| Lords of the Council to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Nov. 6</i> .. | 501 |
| 1597 | |
| Sir Robert Cecil to the same. <i>April</i> | 505 |

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| Mey, Bishop of Carlisle to the same. <i>July 22</i> | 508 |
| Society of the Middle Temple to the same. <i>Christmas</i> | 510 |
| 1598 | |
| Sir Thomas Edmonds to the same. <i>July 12</i> | 511 |
| Sir John Stanhope to Sir Robert Cecil. <i>Oct. 3</i> | 515 |
| Lord Cromwell to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Jan. 25</i> | 516 |
| 1599 | |
| Instructions from the Council for the orderly mustering and training of soldiers in Derbyshire. <i>May 9</i> | 519 |
| Lords of the Council to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Aug. 5</i> . . | 524 |
| Michael Stanhope to Sir Robert Cecil. <i>November</i> | 527 |
| The Earl of Lincoln to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Jan. 7</i> . . . | 530 |
| 1600 | |
| Sir Thomas Edmonds to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>June 12</i> | 532 |
| The Queen to the same. <i>June 25</i> | 535 |
| Lords of the Council to the same. <i>June 26</i> | 537 |
| Lord Lumley to the same. <i>Sep. 30</i> | 543 |
| Names of the persons seized with the Earl of Essex, and their several places of imprisonment. <i>February</i> | 545 |
| 1602 | |
| Sir Henry Neville to Sir Robert Cecil. <i>April 3</i> | 547 |
| Sir Robert Cecil to the Earl of Shrewsbury. | 549 |
| Sir John Harrington to the same. <i>July</i> | 552 |
| Narrative of the execution of the Duke de Biron at Paris. <i>July 31</i> | 555 |
| A speech delivered to the Queen at her departure from Harvile, the Lord Keeper's house. <i>August</i> | 560 |
| Sir Thomas Edmonds to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Aug. 3</i> .. | 561 |
| Sir George Carew to the same. <i>Aug. 11</i> | 564 |
| "Extracts of Irish news." <i>August</i> | 566 |
| Sir Thomas Edmonds to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Sep. 1</i> .. | 568 |
| Benjamin Pigot to the Countess of Shrewsbury. <i>Sep. 2</i> .. | 570 |
| William Browne to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Sep. 17</i> | 572 |
| The same to the same. <i>Sep. 18</i> | 576 |
| The Earl of Worcester to the same. <i>Sep. 19</i> | 577 |
| William Browne to the same. <i>Sep. 21</i> | 578 |
| Sir Fulk Greville to the Countess of Shrewsbury. <i>Sep. 23</i> .. | 580 |
| Sir Robert Cecil to the Earl of Shrewsbury. <i>Sep. 20</i> | 583 |

ILLUSTRATIONS
OF
BRITISH HISTORY
IN THE REIGN OF ELIZABETH.

No. LXXVII.

(Howard Papers.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

It may please your Lordship,
THE Queen's Majesty has in very good part accepted your last letters to herself, and has willed me to ascertain your Lordship that she doth no wise alter her former good opinion of your approved fidelity, and of the care you have of such service as is committed to you, the same being such as none can in her land compare with the trust committed to your Lordship, and yet she would have your Lordship, as she says, not to mislike that when she hath occasion to doubt or fear foreign practices reaching hither into her realm, even to the charge which your Lordship hath, she do warn you thereof; and, in so doing, not to imagine that she findeth such informations

to proceed from any mistrust that she hath of your Lordship no more than she would have if you were her son or brother. This she wills me to write effectually to your Lordship.

Of late, the Queen of Scots wrote to my Lord of Leicester and me, seeming to require some answer whether the Queen's Majesty had received her letters of late time; and if she had, why no answer was made thereto; and also whether the French Ambassador had received his letters. Of which her writing, as it did become us, we made her Majesty privy; and her answer is, that either her letters required no answer, or else she saw no cause to grant her requests. And for the Ambassador, I have also let him understand the contents of the Scotch Queen's letters; and thereto he has made answer, which I send herewith, open and unsealed, which your Lordship may deliver; and if it please her to return any answer, I will safely deliver the same to him. Your Lordship may assure her that the Earl of Morton is chosen and established Regent, with a greater assent and liking of the nobility than was looked for; and he does, for the beginning, govern with good allowance of all the states, directing himself very earnestly to make peace with all parties.

The Earl of Worcester shall go in Ambassador to the christening of the French King's daughter. I think the day of the Parliament will not hold. And so I end, with my most hearty commendations to your Lordship and my good Lady.

From Westminster, the 16th of Dec., 1572.

Your Lordship's assuredly as any,

W. BURGHLEY.

*To the right honourable and my very good
Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of
the Order, and one of the Lords of her
Majesty's Privy Council.*

No. LXXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 615.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO THE PRIVY COUNCIL.

My very good Lords,

I do herewith send up one Avery Keller (according to your former letters) servant unto Rowland Lalcon, of Willey, near Bridgenorth, Esq., who sent him unto me, being charged thereto by my servant that searched for him upon my commandment. This Avery, upon my examination, at the first would seem to be simple, plain, and utterly both innocent and ignorant of any lewd doings or practice, either by himself, or by any other person; but, after sharper imprisonment for one night, he confessed that he was a dealer with the conjurors; and that he brought certain books of that art unto John Revell, which the conjuring scholars, named Palmer and Falconer, and Skinner, the priest, did occupy in their practice at the said Revell's house. And he says further, that they conjured for divers causes, namely, for hidden money; for helping a diseased; for knowing some secret place to hide them; and to have certain knowledge, also, touching the state of this realm; whereby I gather that he can declare some further matter needful to be

discovered. And, therefore, considering his being there may do more service, by conference of other examinations, than he can do here for trying out the more speedily of these practices, I thought meet not to stay him any longer, but forthwith thus to send him, to be used there according to your Lordships' wisdoms. I have given order for further search and apprehension of such others as I am informed of, suspected to be doers, or privy to the said practices. Thus I commit your good Lordships unto Almighty God.

From Sheffield Castle, the 1st of Feb., 1572.

Yours at commandment, to my power,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable the Lords, and the
others, of her Majesty's Privy Council.*

No. LXXIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 61.)

SIR THOMAS SMITH TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

THE pains that the two to whom you gave commission, viz. Payne and Peg, have taken to seek out the conjurors and massmongers is very well accepted of my Lords of the Council, and they willed me to give your Lordship therefore their most hearty thanks. The Queen, also not without great contention of her Highness, has heard of your careful ordering of those matters. The matters be referred, touching the massing and such disorders, to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the rest of the great commission ecclesiastical;

that which shall appear by examination to touch the state, and the Prince, to be referred again to my Lords of the Council.

I think your Lordship has heard how my Lord of Worcester in going over to Buologne was robbed by pirates, hard by Buologne. In France he was highly entertained, and the child named Mary Elizabeth,* the Empress and the Queen's Majesty both giving the name : I trust by this day my Lord will be at Dover. On Sunday last, upon the Downs, Mr. Holdstock (for my Lord Admiral, who has taken upon him that charge) took seven great piratical ships, and in them above 400 men ; and in the west there are three or four more piratical ships taken, so that shortly I trust our seas shall be well scoured, and I hope they who robbed my Lord of Worcester taken.

In Scotland, the Castle of Edinburgh is trench-ed round about, and the rebels within brought to such scarcity of water that they are fain to buy it oftentimes with their blood ; so now the town does besiege the Castle.† Sir James Balfour, and all

* Mary Elizabeth of France, the only legitimate child of Charles IX., born October 28, 1572, and died in 1578. The Empress, Queen Elizabeth, and the Duke of Savoy were her sureties ; the Queen being represented by William Somerset, Earl of Worcester, who carried with him, as a present, a font of pure gold, worth above £1000. The pirates here mentioned were Protestants ; French and Netherlanders : their principal object was to seize the Earl, and so to prevent the compliment which was the occasion of his visit to the Court of France.

† The Castle of Edinburgh was at this time besieged by the Earl of Morton, now Regent, who lay at Leith. Kirkaldy of Grange had long held it for Mary with uncommon obstinacy, among other instances of which, we are told that the wells within

his adherents, have submitted themselves to the King and Regent ; and at this present the Duke and the Earl of Huntley be in talk for an accord. James Kirkaldy, coming with money out of France, was besieged in Blackness, in Scotland, by the Regent ; and by composition that castle and he should have been delivered into the Regent's hands ; but, by a new treason, as it is written, that is revolted, but I trust not for long time. There is no man of mark in the Castle of Edinburgh but the Lords Lidington and Grange. The French King prepareth much for the besieging of Rochell, but he maketh no great haste thither. All kinds of victuals in France be extremely scarce and dear, so that great suit is made to have some wheat from hence.

After that I had written thus far, a packet was brought that as the soldiers corrupted by James Kirkaldy took the captain (coming from the communication and capitulation with the Regent for

the castle failing, for want of rain, the besieged had no means of procuring water but from a spring without the western wall, to which they were let down by ropes, and filled their vessels in the face of a shower of musquet balls. At length the enemy deprived them of this scanty supply by poisoning the spring, and an actual famine ensued. Kirkaldy, however, maintained the dispute till he was forced to capitulate by a mutiny in his little garrison ; and, in hopes of escaping Morton, his mortal enemy, surrendered himself, with the famous Maitland, Laird of Lethington, and others, to Sir William Drury, who commanded 1500 English, sent by Elizabeth to the aid of the Regent. Drury pledged the honour of his mistress for the safety and kind treatment of his prisoners ; but she, ever faithless where it was impolitic to be just, and sacrificing every other consideration to her vengeance against the unfortunate Mary, gave them up to Morton, and the brave Kirkaldy, after suffering various tortures, was hanged at the cross of Edinburgh.

delivery of the castle) prisoner, and also his brother, in the Castle of Blackness, and James Kirkaldy, made Lord of it the seventh of this month, so, by practise with other of the soldiers by the Regent, James Kirkaldy was taken prisoner, and Alexander Steward, the Captain, and his brother, delivered ; and so at last the said Castle of Blackness was delivered to the Regent, to be in obedience of the King ; and James Kirkaldy, and nine soldiers more also, who are like to be hanged for their treason ; this was done the 11th of this month. It is reported that the Rochelois have given divers overthrows to them who came to besiege it ; and also they of Haerlem in Holland, to the Duke of Alva's men, who went about to assault it.

I send your Lordship certain writings which a Scotchman desired me to send to your Lordship to shew them to the Scotch Queen to sign, so far as I can perceive. Thus I commit your good Lordship to Almighty God, with my hearty commendations to my good Lady. From Greenwich, the 17th of February, 1572.

Your Lordship's always at commandment,

T. SMITH.*

*To my very good Lord the Earl of Shrews-
bury, Earl Marshal of England.*

* Sir Thomas Smith, Knight, one of the principal secretaries. He was born at Saffron Walden, in Essex, the son of John Smith, by Agnes, daughter of Charnock, of Lancashire. Having been educated at Queen's College in Cambridge, he was sent into Italy at the public expense, according to the laudable custom of that time, and upon his return was made Greek Professor, and Orator of the University; and, afterwards, Professor of Civil Law. In the reign of Edward VI., he acquired the favour of the Protector, who appointed him one of the King's

No. LXXX.

(*Talbot Papers*, Vol. F. fol. 57.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My very good Lord,
I HAVE received your letters of the 16th of this present, and the letters therewith from the French Ambassador unto this Queen, which I delivered unto her. She read them in my sight ; and said thereupon, how she perceived thereby that it was informed him of great sums of money received out of France into this realm, to her use ; as 40,000 crowns, known, or heard of by some means, of the Duke.* “Truly,” said she, “I received not

Secretaries, Steward of the Stannaries, Dean of Carlisle, and Provost of Eton ; but Mary, who never looked for merit but in religious zeal, deprived him of these offices, giving him, however, a pension for his life of £100 per annum, upon condition that he should not quit the island. Elizabeth restored him to the place of Secretary ; chose him to assist her Committee of Divines in altering the Liturgy, and afterwards employed him in several embassies, which he performed with great credit. He was a very learned man for those days, and so fond of the study of languages, that in the midst of his political engagements he found time to compose some tracts on the Greek and English, and made a wild attempt to alter the alphabet and orthography of the latter, which fortunately proved unsuccessful. He wrote likewise on the Commonwealth of England, and on Parliaments ; and was an eminent patron of literary bodies ; of which the universities have a lasting memorial in that excellent law which directs a third part of their rents to be paid in corn, for he framed the bill and brought it into the House of Commons.

Sir Thomas Smith was twice married, but left no issue, except a natural son, who died in Ireland. His first wife was Elizabeth, daughter of William Carkyke, of London : his second, Philippa, daughter of John Wilford, and relict of Sir John Hampden. He died at his seat of Mount Hall, in Essex, of an asthma, on the 12th of August 1576, (*see a letter of July 6, in that year*) aged 65.

* The Duke of Norfolk. The curious conversation which follows lets us into the most material parts of Mary’s character—a spirit too high to be daunted by misfortunes ; and an open temper, which the greatest dangers could not teach her to disguise.

so much ; nevertheless if the Duke said so I “will not deny it.” Then she made a long discourse of the money she spent by the Bishop of Ross, termed her Ambassador, and the Bishop of Galloway, with other her Commissioners ; and gifts also unto her servants, and such like, which, by her long tale, amounted, I dare say, to double the aforesaid sum. I told her then, plainly, that I was given to understand, by sundry reports, of divers sums of money to be secretly conveyed from time to time into this realm, to be employed for practices to her use ; which reports being found true, or any part thereof, I said she was of good reason to blame her own self for her wants and lacks, and none others. “ Nay,” said she, “ let them never be afraid (which she repeated divers times) of any money that I will have come into England ; for I have given sure order that all which I can make shall be employed in my service in Scotland, which shall not be defeated for aught they can do.” I said again that I spake not for any fear that was any way to be had in the matter, and that if she thought so she was much deceived ; but that my telling her of those reports was that she should the better consider with herself where the fault was if she wanted : unto which she replied not, but entered into her wonted conjectures and suspicions ; and said, “ I fear now they go about some exploit in Scotland against me, and therefore would hinder the conveyance of money to my use out of France ; but I have,” said she, “ already taken sure order for their relief ; and that the same may be the more large

unto them, I will spend on myself here as little as I can." I asked her then if she knew for certain of any such acts or doings in Scotland against her ; but I could not gather by her answers that she understandeth any thing (either of the present siege or otherwise) of weight, but only occupieth herself with suspicions, according to her old custom. As concerning her sending into France, or coming of any from thence unto her, I cannot but judge much danger in either of them (for, certainly, whatsoever she pretend of wants for herself and her's, her very meaning and desire is of intelligence, and practices for her purpose, not tolerable) albeit if her Majesty of her pleasure will needs grant licence for one of those two ways, my opinion is that the sending thither of some such her servants as were most meet for providing her apparel, and receiving of money necessary (so as they are not apt for further discourses) were of less danger than the coming of some expert persons thence, that could not upon the sudden be well judged of, nor known here ; but seeing much peril to be either in sending or coming, I must in reason conclude with your Lordship in opinion the best way to be that she may be licenced to have some money brought from France to serve for her necessaries, in that her Majesty is now more inclined to be suspicious of her doings. I cannot but think her Highness has great cause so to do ; not only remembering that that is past, but also respecting the Cardinal of Lorrain's with the rest of that house, and herself, also, prin-

cipally : with the outrageous and cruel intentions of every of them, well known to be towards her Majesty and the state of this realm, if they had power and liberty to serve their wills.

As for your Lordship's friendly and courteous request, touching evidences of the titles my ancestors had in France, I will do my best in causing search to be made for your Lordship's satisfaction therein, with most hearty thanks always for the good affection your Lordship I see do bear in that behalf. And so I do end, with thanks also, most heartily, for your large and friendly discourse by your said letters, to your great pains respecting your small leisure ; and also for the occurrences therein, in the which I trust you will continue, as occasion and time shall serve your Lordship. I do heartily commit the same unto God.

From Sheffield Castle, this 21st of February, 1572.

Most heartily thanking your Lordship also for your friendly remembrance of the warrant for this Queen's diet. My wife desires her most hearty commendations to be done unto your Lordship and to my Lady Burghley, unto whom I desire to be likewise remembered ; wishing both of us to hear some good tidings that my Lady of Oxford has a great belly.*

Your good Lordship's ever assured to my power.

As I was about to seal up this letter, she sent

* Anne, eldest daughter of Lord Burghley, by his second wife, (See No. LXXXIII of this reign).

for me, and burst out with complaints of her estate; especially how she thinks herself not well used in France by such as she bath put in trust, touching her living there: saying that the Cardinal, her uncle,* that pretends chiefly good will to her, doth so dispose her profits and casualties there, at his own liberty, as nothing thereof comes to her necessary use: wherefore she desires that her new officer, whom she has lately put in trust there, may have licence to come and declare her estate unto her. This was the sum of her motion to me, whereof I thought good to advertise your Lordship. She has written unto her Majesty, and to your Lordship also, for that purpose; which I do send herewith. Her said new officer is called, as she says, Monsieur de Vergé. As for Mr. Rich's bill, she says she will understand from the Bishop of Ross the certainty thereof, and then she will see him duly answered.

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. LXXXI.

(Howard Papers.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO THE QUEEN.

May it please your most excellent Majesty,
It appears by my Lord Huntingdon's letters to
me, whereof I here send your Majesty a copy,

* Charles of Lorrain, called also in this letter the Cardinal of Lorrain; next brother to the Duke of Guise, and maternal uncle to Mary. He died in 1574, universally detested, as the chief author of those calamities with which the fiery zeal of his family had afflicted France for several years past.

that suspicion is of some new device for this Queen's liberty, which I can very easily believe, for I am (as always before) persuaded her friends everywhere occupy their heads thereunto. I look for no less than they can do for her, and provide for her safety accordingly. I have her sure enough, and shall keep her forthcoming, at your Majesty's commandment, either *quick or dead*, whatsoever she, or any for her, invent to the contrary; and, as I have no doubt at all of her stealing away from me, so if any forcible attempt be given for her, *the greatest peril is sure to be her's.** And if I be your Majesty's true faithful servant, as I trust your Majesty is fully persuaded, be your Majesty out of all doubt of any her escape, or delivery from me, by flight, force, or any other ways, without your Majesty's own express and known commandment to me; and thereupon I engage to your Majesty my life, honour, and all. God preserve your Majesty, with many happy years, long and prosperously to reign over us.

At Sheffield Castle, the 3rd of March, 1572.

Your Majesty's humble and faithful servant,

G. SHREWSBURY.

To the Queen's most excellent Majesty.

* It is too easy to discover the meaning of these frightful passages.—Behold Elizabeth, the wise, the pious, the happy Elizabeth of England, the envy of the world in her day, and the pride of history in ours, introducing the mutes and the bowstring into a dungeon which she had appointed for the residence of a Princess who had fled to her for protection.

Copy of the Earl of Huntingdon's Letter.

My good Lord,

I HAVE received credible advertisement this morning that there is some cause of suspicious dealing concerning your charge, for the stealing of her away. I doubt not but if there be just cause you shall be otherwise advertised; at present I can say no more but that there is in some heads such an intention, and yet at present no great cause to fear hastily the execution of the intent purposed; and yet, that your Lordship may not be ignorant of so much as I can advertise you, I thought good to write you these few lines, desiring you heartily to keep the contents to yourself, and, as your wisdom knoweth fit, you may, with the more wary eye, look about you; and secrecy in these matters, you shall find to be best. As occasion requires, you shall hear of me again; and thus I do hastily end, and commit you to the Lord Jesus.

York, the 1st of March.

Your Lordship's assured kinsman,
H. HUNTINGDON.

No. LXXXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 629.)

THOMAS BAWDEWINE

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My bounden duty unto your Honour most humbly premised, &c. Here enclosed I have sent down three letters, that one from my Lord Treasurer, that other from Mr. Middlemore, and the third

from Mr. Doctor Masters. The Lord Treasurer is very well recovered ; and, at my coming to deliver your Honour's letter, and also when I received his letter, did very earnestly enquire of your Honour's health, and in what sort the gout did trouble you. At my coming up to London the matter was very ripe in every man's mouth that the Scotch Queen should be removed ; insomuch I demanded whether there were any such matter intended. Mr. Doctor Masters made me this answer ; that the speech might arise of the troubles that were in Scotland; but that he was resolved that she should remain, for that she could not be so safe in any other place ; and that he has so given out, even amongst the best.

The soldiers, being 2000, for the city of London, were trained in the fields these four days past; and yesterday, being Thursday, they did pass by the lodgings of the Marquiss of Havering, and every, in order, discharged his piece. The Marquiss is Ambassador for the States, and has obtained, as I hear, £140,000. Master Alderman Hayward was attempted to be robbed ; the thieves conspired with his cook ; the cook uttered it to his Master ; the Alderman set privy watch ; did take them ; obtained a privy sessions ; and on the next day had them hanged all, saving one, who by speedy friendship made was reprieved. Thus I humbly do take leave of your Honour, the 12th of April, 1573.

Your Honour's most bounden servant,

THOMAS BAWDEWINE.

To my Lord.

16 ILLUSTRATIONS OF BRITISH HISTORY

No. LXXXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 633.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

I HAVE received, my very good Lord, your letters to myself, and, withal, the French Ambassador's letters to this Queen, both to one end—that the Queen's Majesty's pleasure is that Will Blake, a Scotch boy, shall be admitted to serve this Queen here, except I know some cause to the contrary; and upon your Lordship so writing, considering he is a painful drudge, and able to serve to no other end, I have taken him into my house. His mistress likes not so well of his services as mislikes; and is grieved at the Lady Livingstone's imprisonment, whereof the Ambassador now wrote to her. That and those Scotch matters grieve her more heartily than she would have appear. I thank your Lordship for the rest of your letters, that concern doings in Scotland; and so, wishing to your Lordship as well as to myself, with my wife's hearty commendations to you, I end, this 25th of April, 1573.

Your Lordship's ever assured,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
my Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. LXXXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 79.)

GILBERT TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My most humble duty remembered, right honourable my singular good Lord and father; because

of the convenience of the bearer hereof, I have thought good to advertise your Lordship of the estate of some here at the Court, as near as I have learned by my daily experience.

My Lord Treasurer, even after the old manner, dealeth with matters of the state only, and beareth himself very uprightly. My Lord Leicester is very much with her Majesty, and she shews the same great good affection to him that she was wont ; of late he has endeavoured to please her more than heretofore. There are two sisters now in the Court that are very far in love with him, as they have been long ; my Lady Sheffield and Frances Howard ;* they (of like striving who shall love him better) are at great wars together, and the Queen thinketh not well of them, and not the better of him ; by this means there are spies over him. My Lord of Sussex goes with the tide, and helps to back others ; but his own credit is sober, considering his estate : he is very diligent in his office, and takes great pains. My Lord of Oxford† is lately grown into great credit ; for the

* Daughters of William Lord Howard of Effingham. The Earl of Leicester married the former (See No. III. in this reign), and the Earl of Hertford the latter.

† This was Edward de Vere, the seventeenth Earl of Oxford of his family. The following anecdote confirms Mr. Talbot's hint of his eccentric character. When the Duke of Norfolk, whom he entirely loved, was condemned, he applied to Lord Burghley, whose daughter he had married, passionately beseeching him to interfere in the Duke's behalf ; but his request being refused, he told Burghley, with the greatest fury, that he would revenge himself by ruining the Countess : and he made his threat good ; for from that hour he treated her with the most shocking brutality, and, having broken her heart, sold and dissipated the most part of his great fortune. He died June 24th, 1604.

Queen's Majesty delighteth more in his personage, and his dancing, and valiantness, than any other. I think Sussex doth back him all that he can ; if it were not for his fickle head, he would pass any of them shortly. My Lady Burghley unwiseley has declared herself, as it were, jealous, which is come to the Queen's ear ; whereat she has been not a little offended with her, but now she is reconciled again. At all these love matters my Lord Treasurer winketh, and will not meddle any way. Hatton* is sick still : it is thought he will very hardly recover his disease, for it is doubted it is in his kidneys : the Queen goeth almost every day to see how he doth. Now are there devices (chiefly by Leicester, as I suppose, and not without Burghley's knowledge) how to make Mr. Edward Dyer† as great as ever was Hatton ; for now, in this time of Hatton's sickness, the time is convenient. It is brought thus to pass : Dyer lately was sick of a consumption, in great danger ; and, as your Lordship knows, he has been in displeasure these two years, it was made the Queen believe that his sickness came because of the continuance of her displeasure towards him, so that unless she would forgive him, he was like not to recover ; and hereupon her Majesty has forgiven him, and sent unto him a very comfortable message ; now he is recovered again, and this is the beginning of this device.

* Sir Christopher Hatton, Vice-chamberlain ; of whom hereafter.

† He was afterwards knighted, and appointed Chancellor of the order of the Garter.

These things I learn of such young fellows as myself.

Two days since, Doctor Wilson* told me he heard say that your Lordship, with your charge, was removed to Sheffield Lodge, and asked me whether it was so or not: I answered I heard so also; that you were gone thither of force till the castle could be cleansed. And, further, he willed to know whether your Lordship did so by the consent of the council, or not: I said I knew not that, but I was certain your Lordship did it upon good ground. I earnestly desired him, of all friendship, to tell me whether he had heard any thing to the contrary; which he sware he never did, but asked because, he said, once that Lady should have been conveyed from that house. Then I told him what great heed and care you had to her safe keeping; especially being there that good numbers of men, continually armed, watched her day and night, and both under her windows, over her chamber, and of every side her; so that, unless she could transform herself to a flea or a mouse, it was impossible that she should escape. At that time Mr. Wilson showed me some part of the confession of one (but who he was, or when he did confess it, he would in no wise tell me) that that fellow should say he knew the Queen of Scots hated your Lordship deadly because of your religion, being an earnest Protestant; and all the Talbots else in England, being all Papists, she esteemeth of them very well; and this fellow did believe verily all

* Soon after one of the principal Secretaries.

we Talbots did love her better in our hearts than the Queen's Majesty : this Mr. Wilson said he shewed me because I should see what knavery there is in some men to accuse. He charged me of all love that I should keep this secret, which I promised ; and, notwithstanding, considering he would not tell me who this fellow was, I willed a friend of mine, one Mr. Francis Southwell, who is very great with him, to know, amongst other talk, who he had last in examination ; and I understood that this was the examination of one at the last session of Parliament, and not since, but I cannot learn yet what he was.

Mr. Walsingham is this day come hither to the Court ; it is thought he shall be made Secretary. Sir Thomas Smith and he both together, shall exercise that office. He hath not yet told any news ; he hath had no time yet for being welcomed home ;* as soon as I hear any your Lordship shall have them sent. Roulsdon hath written to your Lordship as he saith, by this bearer, he trusteth to your Lordship's satisfaction. I have been very importunate of him for the present payment of his debt to your Lordship. He cannot any ways make shift for money unless he sell land, which he vows to do rather than to purchase your Lordship's displeasure. I have moved my Lord Treasurer two sundry times, as your Lordship commanded me, for the mustering within your Lordship's offices. The first time he willed me to come

* He had been long Ambassador in France, and was appointed First Secretary soon after his return.

to him some other time, and he would give me an answer, because then he had to write to Berwick in haste ; this he told me before I half told him what I meant. The second time, which was on Saturday last, my Lord Leicester came unto him as I was talking ; but to-morrow, God willing, I will not fail to move him thoroughly. For other matters I leave your Lordship to the bearer hereof. And so, most humbly desiring your Lordship's daily blessing, with my wonted prayer for the continuance of your Lordship's honour, and health long to continue, I end, this 11th of May, 1573.

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient son,
GILBERT TALBOT.

To my Lord, my father.

No. LXXXV. .

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 84.)

GILBERT TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

—My Lord, my brother told me of the letter your Lordship sent him for putting away of Morgan and Marven ; and said he rejoiced that your Lordship would so plainly direct and command him what to do ; and he trusteth hereafter to please your Lordship in all his doings ; whereunto, according to my duty, I prayed him to have care above all manner of things, and advised him to keep secret your Lordship's directions.

I have found out a sober maiden to wait on my wife, if it shall so please your Lordship. She was servant unto Mrs. Southwell, now Lord Paget's

wife, who is an evil husband, and will not suffer any that waited on his wife before he married her to continue with her. As it behoves me, I have been very inquisitive of the woman, and have heard very well of her behaviour, and truly I do repose in her to be very modest and well given, and such a one as I trust your Lordship shall not mislike; but, if it be so that she shall not be thought meet for my wife, she will willingly repair hither again. Her name is Marget Butler: she is about twenty-seven years old; Mr. Bateman hath known her long, and thinketh very well of her: she is not very beautiful, but very cleanly in doing of any thing chiefly about a sick body, to dress any thing fit for them. I humbly pray your Lordship to send me word whether I shall make shift to send her down presently, for she is very desirous not to spend her time idly.* Thus, most humbly desiring your Lordship's daily blessing, with my wonted and continual prayer for your Lordship's preservation in all honour and health, long to continue, I end.

At the Court, this Monday, the 25th of May,
1573.

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient son,
GILBERT TALBOT.

* Perhaps it is unnecessary to apologize for inserting this extract from a long letter of domestic matters, as it affords so remarkable an instance of the respect which people, even of the first rank, paid to their parents. Gilbert Talbot was at this time married, and a Member of the House of Commons.

No. LXXXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 107. 1573.)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My good Lord,

I MUST crave pardon that I have not more often written unto you of late, but I hope you do not impute it to lack of good will ; the truth is, that partly the cause hath been for want of sufficient matter worth the sending, and, partly, I myself have been of late sundry times abroad upon some occasions of mine own ; hereafter your Lordship shall hear oftener from me. In the mean time touching such news as we have, your Lordship shall understand them. First, we are advertised this last night from Killigrew and Mr. Drury,* out of Scotland, that the Castle of Edinburgh is like very shortly to be taken ; albeit hitherto they within have done their parts for defence thereof ; and they have refused all offers, and communication for appointment, other than to lose it by force, which I think by this they must be sorry for, forasmuch as they are but few within, and likely to want all manner of aid and succour, which perhaps the hope they had hath caused them so long to hold it as they do. Upon Thursday last a tower, called Davy's Tower, the chief of the castle, was battered down almost flat, with certain other smaller towers, so that these places were ready

* Henry Killigrew, the English Ambassador in Scotland.—
Sir William Drury.

assailable; and the bray* at the gate, which some call the Spur, was also the same day taken; whereupon we hear that the captain of the castle hath offered to parley, but the Regent doth refuse it now. What is since done is not yet come to our hands; as soon as we hear further your Lordship shall know it.

Out of France the Queen's Majesty is advertised, as well from her own Ambassador as by the French Ambassador here, that Monseigneur the King's brother is chosen King of Poland; about which election there has been much ado a long time; and, at the first, the nobility and people of that country were most against the French offers, protesting vehemently against their cruel and tyrannous government; whereupon it was little looked for that his request should have taken place: but it is certainly thought, and also written, that the Turk hath stricken the stroke for the French King's brother, by restoring to the kingdom of Poland two great countries which he had taken from them heretofore. This election of Monseigneur will much trouble the house of Austria; and will cause the matters of France to be the sooner ended, that Monseigneur may once be placed in his new kingdom; and thereby it is likely that the King will grow to better conditions with his subjects; for, as we hear, the town of Ro-

* A strong tower, or block-house, in the outworks of a fortification, before the port. The term "Spur" was not technical, but a casual appellation by which this particular building was known in the garrison.

chelle* yet holds valiantly out, and is well furnished for three months to come ; and there is, beside, almost 40 towns in other places that hold against the King, which will force him to come to some better composition than is looked for. The Count Montgomery is returned to this realm again.

This is all the news presently worth the writing, save of the good and perfect health of her Majesty, which God long continue ; and of her Majesty's good liking and most gracious using of both your sons, to whom she shews daily as great favours as to any about her ; and surely, my Lord, they are such as you have cause to thank God for, guiding themselves so wisely and orderly as they win the good opinion of all sorts ; whereof, for my part, as a branch of your house, I am most glad to see them govern themselves as they do. Thus, with my right hearty commendations to your Lordship and my good Lady, I commit you both to the Lord.

At the Court, this 1st of June.

Your Lordship's assured cousin,†

R. LEICESTER.

* The town of Rochelle was the principal rendezvous of the Huguenots, and was always remarkably disaffected to the French government. The Duke of Anjou had sat down before it early in the Spring; but raised the siege upon receiving the news of his election to the Crown of Poland.

† Leicester's constant application of the term "cousin," or "kinsman," to the Earl of Shrewsbury is a curious instance of the strict attention which the nobility then paid to genealogical matters. The former descended through the several names of Talbot, Grey, and Dudley, from a second marriage of John, the first Earl of Shrewsbury ; and the latter was fifth in descent from the same nobleman, by his first wife—A degree of kindred for which heraldry itself can hardly furnish a denomination.

No. LXXXVII.

(Howard Papers.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My good Lord,

PRESENTLY I have no matter newly to write of, but it is written that Liddington is dead of his natural sickness, being also stricken with great melancholy, which he conceived of the great hatred that he did see all his countrymen bear towards him since he came out of the castle ; in such sort as Sir William Drury was forced to keep a strong guard to save him in his own lodging from the fury of the people. I hear not but Grange, and the rest, do well ; and are to be delivered in custody to certain places in Scotland ; but not to be dealt withal in any wise to their detriment until the Queen's Majesty's pleasure shall be therein declared, which I think will not be hastily done.

My Lord of Essex is like to go into the north of Ireland with good force : God send him good speed and honour. They of Rochelle have abidden a general assault the 1st of June, wherein the King's part lost 1500, and gained nothing ; so as it is now written out of France that the King's camp is removed to refresh themselves, and there is a communication now for some accord, and to yield unto the afflicted Protestants liberty of their religion, but the difficulty will be in the manner of the assurance.

Mr. Edward Horsey is now going to the French King in message, to satisfy him for the Queen's doings in the recovery of Edinburgh

Castle for the young King. I send here inclosed a letter to your Lordship for the Queen of Scots, as it came to my hands out of France. I have dealt as earnestly as I could with Justice Harper, and have stayed Pierrepont from his proceeding in the Chancery, praying your Lordship to credit Mr. Batemen in writing to you my opinion thereof.

From Greenwich, the 14th of June, 1573.

Your Lordship's at command,

W. BURGHLEY.

To the right honourable my very good Lord, the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of England, and one of the Lords of the Privy Council.

No. LXXXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 440. 1573.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM.

Good Mr. Secretary,

THE President of Tours came hither the 9th of this month, and brought me my Lord Treasurer's letters and yours, mentioning his repair to this Queen for conference of matters of account; whereupon I have admitted him to have access to her, looking they will invent all the ways they may for her liberty; but I hope I shall foresee, and so look to her, as I shall yield the Queen's Majesty the same account of her person as hitherto I have done. And, whereas she has put her Majesty in mind of her journey to Buxton Well, and you refer to my consideration the convenience and meetness thereof, and what need she hath of that bane;

and, if her journey thither be needful and fit, then how it may be done conveniently; and thereof I to certify her Majesty. I can say little of the state of her body: she seems more healthful now, and all the last year past, than before: she hath very much used bathing with herbs now of late, as she hath done other years. What need she hath of Buxton Well I know not, further than I have here written; my Lord Treasurer knoweth Buxton, and the country thereabout; therefore I refer the fitness of her journey thither to his Lordship's consideration, and my Lords and others of the Council, as shall please the Queen's Majesty to direct. I shall carry and keep her safely here and there alike. So with my, &c.

I pray you remember the Queen's Majesty for a prest of money.

No. LXXXIX.

(Talbot Papers, vol. P. fol. 643.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY
TO SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM.

Good Mr. Secretary,

I HEARTILY thank you for your pains in getting me warrant of prest money. And where you wrote to me that the Queen's Majesty willed I should treat with this Queen to defray her own charges with her dowry of France, having by her own occasion good opportunity, I moved her as I might conveniently thereto; and as she seemed not to mislike thereof at all, but rather desirous to bear her own charges, so she asked me in

what sort, and with what manner of liberty, she should be permitted to the same ; and when I answered it had not been so far thought of, she would needs write to know the manner of it, and in what sort it was meant to her. Assure yourself if the liberty, and manner thereof, content her as well as the motion, she will easily assent to it ; and so I wish it, as may be without peril otherwise ; and for the charges in safe keeping her, I have found them greater many ways than some have accounted of, and than I have made show of, or grieved at ; for in service of her Majesty I can think my whole patrimony well bestowed.

Since I last wrote to you my opinion of this Queen's health, and something of her journey to Buxton Well, she has charged me (and the French here affirmed for true) that her going thither is referred to me, and I am thereby hinderer of her health by stopping her thence. She complains more of her hardness in her side than of late.* I look in such matters of her more liberty to be directed ; and therefore pray you, for my dis-

* The zealous vindicator of Mary devotes four pages (see *Vindic.* vol. ii. 248.) to the examination of an opinion which Dr. Robertson hath founded on the accidental mention, in one of the famous letters, of a complaint in her side. It answers Mr. Whittaker's purpose to conclude that she was not subject to an habitual indisposition in that part ; and that the pain in her side spoken of in a letter from Le Croc, the French Ambassador, which Dr. R. quotes in support of his argument, was a natural and common consequence of extreme grief, or any violent agitation of mind. We find her here, however, complaining, “*more than of late*, of hyr hardnes in hyr side ;” which was evidently a fixed infirmity, owing perhaps to some internal tumour, which occasionally caused great pain.

charge, procure her Majesty's resolution thereof may be signified hither. My care of her safety shall be here and there alike. So, with my hearty commendations, I bid you farewell, this 15th of July, 1573.

No. XC.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 65.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My good Lord,

By Alexander Bogg, bringing to me your Lordship's letters, I was glad to understand of your Lordship's well doing; and am now commanded to write to your Lordship by her Majesty, that she is pleased that if your Lordship shall think you may without peril conduct the Queen of Scots to the well of Buxton, according unto her most earnest desire, your Lordship shall so do; using such care and respect for her person to continue in your charge, as hitherto your Lordship hath honourably, happily, and serviceably done. And, when your Lordship shall determine to remove with the said Queen thither, it were good that as little fore-knowledge abroad as may, conveniently be given; and, nevertheless, that for the time that she shall be there, that all others, being strangers from your Lordship's company, be forbidden to come thither during the time of the said Queen's abode there. And this I write because her Majesty was very unwilling that she should go thither, imagining that her desire was either to be the more seen of strangers resorting thither, or for the achieving of

some further enterprise to escape ; but, on the other part, I told her Majesty, if that in very deed her sickness were to be relieved thereby, her Majesty could not in honour deny her to have the natural remedy thereof ; and for her safety, I knew your Lordship would have sufficient care and regard ; and so her Majesty commanded me to write to your Lordship, that you might conduct her thither, and also to have good respect to her. And, according to this her Majesty's determination, the French Ambassador, being with her at Eridge, my Lord of Burgeny's house, in Waterdore Forest, in Sussex, hath received knowledge from her Majesty that you shall thus do. At which time the said Ambassador dealt with the Queen's Majesty for two things ; the one, for a safe conduct for the new King of Poland, for himself, his ships, and train (amongst the which shall be 4000 soldiers, Gascons) to be well used in any of her Majesty's ports, if by tempest any of them should be driven into any her coasts ; which suit, although it were reasonable where good meaning is sure, yet at this time, for many respects, it was very suspicious, and yet, in the end, the same is granted ; but when this King shall now take his voyage is uncertain, for we hear from Poland that, although he be chosen by one number, yet another number are not thereto agreeing ; and thereto the Muscovite, the King of Sweden, and some say the Emperor, who were all competitors at the election, do give great furtherance to continue the discord. Some here have entered into a jealousy that at this time

the Ambassador here dealeth so earnestly for that Queen going to Buxton, and for a safe conduct for the said King's entry into this realm, having such a number of soldiers and ships ; but, thanked be God, your Lordship is far enough from any ports with your charge, and yet, as the time occasioneth, your Lordship may be the more circumspect, with secrecy, and without note to her or hers. The second suit of the Ambassador was also for a safe conduct directly for the Duke d'Alençon* to come to the Queen's Majesty now at Dover ; but thereto such answer is given to discomfit a wooer, as I think surely he will not come. Sure I am there is no safe conduct yet granted.

The Queen's Majesty has had a hard beginning of a progress in the Weald of Kent ; and, namely, in some part of Sussex ; where surely are more wonderous rocks and valleys, and much worse ground than is in the Peak. Now we are bending to Rye, and so afterwards to Dover, where we shall have amends.

The 3rd of this month, in the afternoon, Grange and his brother, with eleven Scotch goldsmiths, were hanged at Edinburgh ; where Grange confessed his fault, that he was seduced by others, hoping that he might always have made his own

* Francis, youngest brother to Charles IX., frequently mentioned in subsequent papers by the title of Monsieur. The first proposals for his marriage with Elizabeth had been made a few months before, he being then seventeen years old, and she thirty-eight, by la Motte Fenelon, the French minister in London ; and Chateauneuf was now sent, as an Ambassador Extraordinary, to press for the conclusion of it. The substance of the answer to which Lord Burghley here alludes may be found in Camden.

peace. I must end with my most hearty commendations to your Lordship and to my good Lady, wishing myself with her at Chatsworth, where I think I should see a great alteration, to my good liking.

From the Court, at Mr. Guildford's house in Kent,* Aug. 10th, 1573.

Your Lordship's at command,

W. BURGHLEY.

*To the Right honourable my very good
Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. XCI.

(Howard Papers.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My very good Lord,
I HAVE received your letters by this bearer, Lisley, servant to the Bishop of Ross.. And, first, where it pleased you in friendly manner to allege the cause of the want of your accustomed writing unto me ; indeed I must confess that I could not but think it long till I received your letters, and yet I assure your it came not of any doubt I had of want or decay, in your Lordship's friendship, or friendly remembrance (for ye have given me good cause to think the contrary) but only upon an earnest desire, with delight that I have from time to time to hear from yourself, as from him that I do

* Hempstead, near Cranbrook. Guldeford, Esq., the last of the family who possessed this estate was enabled to sell it by act of parliament in the beginning of the last century, and it was purchased by Admiral Sir John Norris, whose grandson sold it again. It is now possessed by a Mr. Hodges, who hath completely modernized its noble old mansion.

make my principal account of. Touching the Bishop of Ross his present sending hither, I have, according to her Majesty's pleasure by you signified, perused his letters and writings, and so suffered this said bearer to deliver them unto this Queen in my presence ; which were, besides his said letters, a book, or register of his service and travels in her causes ; a copy of an oration exhibited late unto the Queen's Majesty, as he saith ; and an instrument to be signed and sealed by this Queen expressing as well her acceptation of his said service, as also his discharge now of the same, which she hath performed according to his request.

Thus, with most hearty commendations from me and my wife, I commit your good Lordship unto Almighty God.

From Sheffield Castle, this present St. Andrew's Day (Nov. 30) 1573.

Your good Lordship's ever assured, to my power,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of Eng-
land.*

No. XCII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 665.)

THE EARL OF HUNTINGDON
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My good Lord,

THESE are to let you understand surely I cannot find those writings which you did send unto me for. The man hath been here with me, and, as he did

tell me, he hath given you the very true copy in effect; I think that I did tear them after Copley was with me by your commandment, but find them I cannot. Let not this matter trouble your Lordship more than it requireth. I doubt not your provident foresight in looking to your charge, and then let the devil and his instruments do their worst. For my part, you shall be sure I will have some care that way also, and if I hear any thing worthy your knowledge you shall speedily be advertised; but I trust you shall see the Papists of the North by a crooked measure reasonably met withall. They seek to deceive all men, but I doubt not they shall be first deceived themselves. Thus, with my hearty commendations to your Lordship, I commit you to the Lord Jesus.

York, this 18th of January 1573.

Your Lordship's assured friend and cousin,

H. HUNTINGDON.*

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
and kinsman the Earl of Shrewsbury, one
of the Lords of her Majesty's honourable
Privy Council.*

No. XCIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 715.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO GILBERT TALBOT.

I HAVE received your letter late of New year's Eve, and this New year's Day I begin to use my pen first to yourself, wishing you to use yourself this new year, and many years after, to God's

* Henry Hastings, third Earl of Huntingdon, and K.G. He died on the 14th of December, 1595.

glory and fear of him, and to live in that credit your ancestors have hitherto done ; and so doing as I hope you will be faithful, loyal, and serviceable, to the Queen's Majesty, my Sovereign, who to me, under God, is King of Kings and Lord of Lords. Your new year's gift shall be I will supply all your needful wants ; and so long as I see that carefulness, duty, and love, you bear me, which hitherto I see in you, my purse, and that I have, shall be as free to you as to myself. Time is so short, and I have so many come to me with new year's gifts, I can write no more, but thank you for your perfumed doublet you sent me ; and so praying God to bless you.

Sheffield Castle, this New year's day, 1574.

Your loving father,

G. SHREWSBURY.

To my son Gilbert Talbot.

No. XCIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 691.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

YOUR Lordship's friendly letters I accept in as friendly ways as I know to be meant to me. For Corker's* proceedings against my son Gilbert, I partly understand of his false accusation ; which, in my conscience is utterly untrue, and thereupon I dare gage my life. The reprobate's beginning

* Lately one of the Earl's chaplains. It appears by a letter from the Earl of Leicester, which is not inserted in this collection, that this man had combined with Hawarth, another clergyman, to infuse a suspicion into Elizabeth that Shrewsbury secretly favoured the interest of the Queen of Scots.

was against me, and now turned to Gilbert. His wicked speeches of me cannot be hid; I have them of his own hand, cast abroad in London, and bruited throughout this realm, and known to her Majesty's Council. Her Majesty hath not heard of him ill of me, so it pleaseth her Majesty to signify unto me by her own gracious letters, which I must believe, notwithstanding his dealing against me is otherwise so notoriously known, that if he escape sharp and open punishment dishonour will redound to me.

This practise hath a further meaning than the varlets know of: God grant their setters on have not over great respect to titles, and other practises against her Majesty. For mine own part, I have never thought to allow of any title, nor will, otherwise than as shall please her Majesty to appoint. I could never be content to suffer this Queen and others to reason of their titles without show of my plain misliking. I doubt not, by God's mighty goodness, of her Majesty's long and happy reign to be many years after I am gone, and I beseech the living God I live not that unhappy day to see the contrary. How can it be imagined I should be disposed to favour this Queen for her claim to succeed the Queen's Majesty? My dealing towards her hath shewn the contrary: I know her to be a stranger, a Papist, and my enemy; what hope can I have of good of her, either for me or my country? I see I am by my own friends brought in jealousy; wherefore I wish with all my heart that I were honourably read, without note or blemish,

to the world of any want to be in me. That being foreseen and devised by my friends (of whom I account your Lordship to be one of the chiefest, true and faithful to your Prince, careful for your country, and a favourer of the nobility) I shall not only yield willingly thereunto, but think myself most happy to be rid of so weighty and cumbersome charge (the care whereof hath almost brought me to my grave) and would become a humble suitor to the Queen's Majesty for the same. I trust her Majesty will have consideration of my poor credit, that hath served her truly, carefully, and chargeably. I must say for myself I have deserved no less than to have my credit preserved ; it is the least recompense I can have, and that I most account of.

So, wishing your Lordship as I desire for myself, I end, with my wife's commendations and mine to your Lordship and my Lady.

Sheffield, 16th of April, 1574.

Your Lordship's assured faithful friend,
G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
my Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. XCV.

(Howard Papers.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My very good Lord, and most assured friend, I CANNOT but continually think of your friendly advice concerning my discharge of the Scottish Queen, and have been long minded as your Lord-

ship advised ; and had been more resolute therein, if my faithful service towards the Queen's Majesty had not been brought in question, and so maintained by to disable the same, as I thought it could not stand with my honour to seek to be discharged, neither that her Majesty could think me a good subject if I had thereupon shrunk. The truth is, my good Lord, if it so stand with the Queen's Majesty's pleasure, I could be right well contented to be discharged of that charge ; and think myself therewith most happy, if I could see how the same might be without any blemish to my honour and estimation : but rather with the increase of both, as I dare before God and the world avouch that my truth and dutiful care in this service hath deserved : and, because your Lordship, whom I take for so dear a friend, knoweth her Majesty's pleasure herein, and can therefore best advise me what is meetest for me to do to her Majesty's best contentment, I heartily require your full and plain advice what your Lordship thinks best for me to do touching this Queen, which I mean to follow before all others, knowing your Lordship's especial regard to the quiet preservation of her Majesty and the commonwealth ; and, also, that you will have respect that such consideration may be had of my service as shall make it manifest to the world how well her Majesty accepteth the same. My Lord Scroop, and others, were not unconsidered of for their short time of service.

I mean not to write or impute any thing of my

intent or proceeding herein to any, otherwise than as your Lordship shall advise me ; and so, resting in expectation of your Lordship's answer, and friendly advice herein, for which this bearer shall wait upon you, I wish your Lordship health and prosperity as my own.

At Sheffield, 14th of May, 1574.

Your Lordship's most assured faithful friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
my Lord of Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. XCVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 711.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM.

Good Mr. Secretary,

SUCH things as happen here in my charge I think it my part to reveal it unto you, that the Queen's Majesty may first understand the same. The 30th of this instant August, Rollet, the Scots' Queen's Secretary, departed this life about eight o'clock in the morning, suddenly, being long visited with sickness : whereupon, in respect the said Rollet had, as I think, the whole knowledge of the whole secrets his mistress had dealt in these years past, and might have had some papers in his custody, considering the same, I thought good to take occasion (in hope to find some things that might serve the Queen's Majesty) to take possession of the keys of his coffers, as I did immediately after the advertisement ; which this Lady bade me look I

had good warrant so to do, for answer it I must. Wherein, after long search, I could find nothing of effect, saving certain reckonings that already past through my hands, which I would not deal with ; and some letters of the Pope's, the Spanish Ambassador, the Cardinal of Lorrain ; which, albeit it seemeth they are of old date, I thought best to retain, and make this advertisement of the same, till I should know the Queen's Majesty's pleasure thereupon ; but the said Rollet hath been so often within these three months in such extremity, that if there have been any things of importance in Rollet's keeping, it seemeth she hath taken order for the sure convoy thereof forth of his hands. The money he had in his coffer was 280 French crowns, which this Lady hath taken upon her to dispose. It is thought he hath much money in France that this Lady looks to have.

Thus, with my daily prayer for the Queen's Majesty's long life and good health, I take my leave.

At Sheffield, this 31st of August, 1574.

No. XCVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 97.)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

BEING somewhat long now since I have visited you with my letters, and lest you should think your friends over forgetful, I have thought good to trouble your Lordship in this sort, with my hearty

commendations ; and, withal, to let you know of the good estate of her Majesty, which, thanks be to God, for health was never better, and hath so hitherto overpast her progress, being now returned as far as Salisbury homewards. For news, we have yet very few, albeit the French Ambassador has been here at Wilton, with her Majesty, rather to do some ordinary compliments from his Master than for any matter of any great importance. His Master is not yet arrived in France ; great preparations for subduing of his subjects are made.

The Queen's Majesty has seemed of late to receive such tokens as that Queen has sent her very kindly, and has so shewed it to the Ambassador, and seems, ere it be long, that she will send some token unto her again, and so has her Highness said also to the said Ambassador, which, for that I think he will make known unto her, I thought it fit rather (that seeing her Majesty means such shew of favour to that Queen) that it might not be unknown beforehand to your Lordship, and that (being a matter of comfort) it were as good, or better, it might first pass from you than from a stranger, as the Ambassador is, who I am sure will use speed to advertise her ; which now being known to your Lordship, you may use it as time and occasion shall serve ; for, assuredly, the Queen's Majesty is fully minded to send in such sort to her. Thus, wanting leisure, but not good will, to do you all the honour and pleasure I can,

I bid your Lordship as myself farewell ; in haste,
this 5th of Sept., 1574.

Your Lordship's assured cousin,

R. LEICESTER.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord and
cousin, the Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of
the Order, and Lord Marshall of England.*

No. XCVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 103.)

Rough Copies, on one sheet, indorsed by the Earl of Shrewsbury,
“ 2 Decembr 1574. To the QUENE’s MAJESTE, to my
L. TREASAURER, and my L. of LEC. These conserne
the maryge of my La.’ dawghter.”

May it please your excellent Majesty,
THE commandment your Majesty once gave me,
that I should sometimes write to you, although I
had little to write of, boldeneth me thus to pre-
sume, rather to avoid blame of negligence than
dare tarry long for any matter worthy your Ma-
jesty’s hearing ; only this I may write ; it is greatly
to my comfort to hear your Majesty passed your
progress in perfect health, and so do continue.
I pray to Almighty God to hold it many years,
and long after my days ended ; so shall your
people find themselves most happy.

This Lady, my charge, is safe, at your Majes-
ty’s commandment.

And, may it further please your Majesty, I
understood of late your Majesty’s displeasure is
sought against my wife, for marriage of her daugh-
ter to my Lady Lennox’s son.* I must confess to

* Charles Stuart, second son of Matthew late Earl of Len-
nox, and brother to the deceased King of Scotland, married Eli-
zabeth Cavendish, daughter of the Countess of Shrewsbury by a

your Majesty, as true it is, it was dealt in suddenly, and without my knowledge ; but, as I dare undertake and ensure to your Majesty, for my wife, she, finding her daughter disappointed of young Barté, where she hoped ; and that the other young gentleman was inclined to love with a few days' acquaintance, did her best to further her daughter to this match ; without having therein any other intent or respect than with reverend duty towards your Majesty she ought. I wrote of this matter to my Lord of Leicester a good while ago, at great length. I bid nothing from him that I knew was done about the same ; and thought not meet to trouble your Majesty therewith, because I took it to be of no such importance as to write of, until now that I am urged by such as I see will not forbear to devise and speak what may procure any suspicion, or doubtfulness of my service here. But as I have always found your Majesty my good and gracious Sovereign, so do I comfort myself that your wisdom can find out right well what causes move them thereunto ; and therefore am not afraid of any doubtful opinion, or displeasure, to remain with your Majesty of me, or of my wife, whom your Highness and your Council have, many

former husband. His descent by the female line from Henry VII., not to mention his near relation to James VI., gave Elizabeth abundant cause for jealousy upon this occasion ; insomuch that the Countesses of Lennox and Shrewsbury were imprisoned for some time, and the Earl himself suffered a temporary suspension of favour. It is remarkable that the captive Mary, who was mortally hated by the whole house of Lennox on account of her husband's doubtful death, should have been suspected of promoting the marriage of her keeper's daughter-in-law to one of that family.

ways, tried in times of most danger. We never had any thought or respect but as your Majesty's most true and faithful servants; and so do truly serve, and faithfully love and honour your Majesty, ever praying to Almighty God for your Majesty, as we are in duty bounden.

Sheffield, 2nd of December, 1574.

TO MY LORD TRE.

My very good Lord, for that I am advertised the late marriage of my wife's daughter is not well taken in the Court, and thereupon are some conjectures, more than well, brought to her Majesty's ears, in ill part against my wife; I have a little touched the same in my letters now to her Majesty, referring further knowledge thereof to letters I sent my Lord of Leicester a good while since, wherein I made a long discourse of that matter; and if your Lordship meet with any thing the reof that concerns my wife or me, and sounds in ill part against us, let me crave of your Lordship so much favour as to speak your knowledge and opinion of us both. No man is able to say so much as your Lordship of our service, because you have so carefully searched it, with great respect to the safe keeping of my charge. So I take my leave of your Lordship.

Sheffield, 2nd December, 1574.

The letter to the Earl of Leicester is nearly in the same terms.

No. XCIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 109.)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

I HAVE received your letter, wherein your Lordship doth thank me for dealing at the Star Chamber with one Poultrell, who indeed did very much abuse your Lordship ; and, my Lord, you must think there shall no matter of yours come in question where I am, that I will not deal in it as well and as friendly every way as I would for the Earl of Warwick, my brother.

For our voyage, my Lord, we are now at a point for eleven other ships which shall be set forth by the company of Muscovy ;* and I am sorry your Lordship is no deeper adventurer; for, surely, my Lord, I am fully persuaded it will fall out the best voyage that ever was made out of this realm, Drake or any ; but I thank your Lordship that you do adventure this you do for company of me. I assure you if I had had £10,000 in my purse I would have adventured it every penny myself.

I can yet give you no certain account of our great matter. In appearance there is great likelihood it should be a marriage, but when I see her

* The Muscovy, or Russia Company, was incorporated in 1567, soon after the discovery of a new passage by Chancellor, and in 1569 had an exclusive permission from the Czar to trade throughout his whole empire, and were exempted from customs. The vast prospect of gain opened by this monopoly tempted great numbers of people to lend to the merchants ; and among the rest, some of the first nobility, as this letter informs us.

Majesty's indisposition to marriage it doth bring a suspense again. As soon as any certainty shall be your Lordship shall know. In the mean time I commend your Lordship to the Almighty, with my good noble sister, whose commendations your Lordship I have done and are most heartily requited, and so, my good Lord fare ye well, in haste, this 6th of December.

Your Lordship's faithful kinsman,

R. LEICESTER.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. C.

(Howard Papers.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY

My very good Lord,
UPON my Lady Lenox's earnest request, as to your Lordship I am sure shall appear, I have written to my Lords of the Council all I can find out of her behaviour toward this Queen, and dealing when she was in these north parts ; and if some disallow of my writing (as I look they will, because they would have it thought that I should have enough to do to answer for myself) let such reprove, or find any respect to her Majesty in me or my wife is sought for, and then there is some cause to reprehend me, and for them to call out against me as they do. I take that Lady Lenox to be a subject in all respects worthy the Queen's Majesty's favour, and, for the duty I bear to her Majesty, am bound, methinks, to commend her so

as I find her ; yea, and to entreat you, and all of my Lords of the Council for her, to save her from blemish, if no offence can be found in her towards her Majesty. I do not, nor can, find the marriage of that Lady's son to my wife's daughter can any way be taken, with indifferent judgment, to be any offence, or contemptuous to her Majesty ; and then, methinks, that benefit any subject may by law claim might be permitted to any of mine as well. But I must be plain with your Lordship. It is not the marriage matter, nor the hatred some bear to my Lady Lenox, my wife or to me, that makes this great ado, and occupies heads with so many devices ; it is a greater matter ; which I leave to conjecture, not doubting but your Lordship's wisdom hath foreseen it, and thereof had due consideration, as always you have been most careful for it.

I have no more to trouble your Lordship withal, but that I would not have her Majesty think, if I could see any cause to imagine any intent of liking or insinuation with this Queen the rather to grow by this marriage, or any other inconvenience might come thereby to her Majesty, that I could or would bear with it, or hide it from her Majesty, for that Lady's sake, or for my wife, or any other cause else ; for, besides the faith I bear her Majesty, with a singular love I look not by any means but by her Majesty only to be made better than I am ; nor by any change to hold that I have—so take my leave of your Lordship.

Sheffield Castle (where my charge is safe)
the 27th of December, 1574.

Your Lordship's assured friend to my power,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
my Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. CI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 1023.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

May it please your good Lordship,
I HAVE received your Lordship's letters; and where it is her Majesty's pleasure I should send up Doncaster, the Scot, either to your Lordship or else Mr. Walsingham, upon your Lordship's letter and advice I certified Mr. Smith and Mr. Walsingham, jointly (for that I doubted Mr. Walsingham's being at the Court) what I had done therein, and of my intention in letting him go up, if I heard not from them to the contrary; after whose despatch Mr. Secretary Smith's letter came unto me, with advice to send him up by some of my servants (wherein he wrote your Lordship thought so good) which came too late: and for that I could have no sort of intelligence, nor gather more than I had before written of, I directed my letters to Mr. Secretary, by Eleve the Frenchman, who not only promised the delivery thereof, but that also he would present the said Doncaster before him; and I was very glad to have them so gone, for I thought little good in their being here so long.

Most humbly I thank her Majesty in forewarning me of some of my servants, which, as her Majesty is informed, by conveyers of letters and messages in this Lady's behalf; whose names as I w^ould gladly learn, so do request your Lordship's help thereunto. Assured I am the Lady cannot use conference with any man that is mine, neither are my servants permitted to have recourse where she is. If they deal with her people it is very secretly done, for I am as careful as may be to meet with their doings. The mislike her Majesty

of my son Gilbert's wife, brought to bed in my house, as cause of women and stranger's repair thither, makes me heartily sorry; nevertheless, the midwife excepted, none such have, or do at any time, come within her sight; and, at the first, to avoid such resort, I myself, with two of my children christened the child. What intelligence passeth for this Queen to and from my house I do not know; but trust her Majesty shall find my service, while I live, both true and faithful. Yet be you assured, my Lord, this Lady will not stay to put in practice, or make inquiry, by all means she can devise, and ask me no leave, so long as such access of her people is permitted unto her. And for your Lordship's friendly answers in my behalf I give your Lordship most hearty thanks.

My Lord, where there hath been often bruits of this Lady's escape from me; the 26th of Februay last there came an earthquake, which so sunk chiefly her chamber, as I doubted more her falling than her going, she was so afraid. But,

God be thanked, she is forth coming, and grant it may be a forewarning unto her. It hath been at the same instant in sundry places. No hurt was done, and the same continued a very small time. God grant us all grace to fear him. Thus, with my very hearty commendations, and my wife's, to your Lordship and my good Lady, do take my leave, this 3rd of March, 1574.

Your Lordship's ever assured,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable the Lord Burghley,
Lord Treasurer of England.*

No. CII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 745.)

FRAGMENT.

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO THE QUEEN.*

May it please your most excellent Majesty, ACCORDING to your commandment to me, by Mr. Beale, I have made relation to this Queen how gracious your Majesty showed yourself in acceptance of her present, considering her manifold occasions given to the contrary; and, because Mr. Beale's credit is with your Majesty to make account of her answer, and dealings the French have had here, I leave all to his report. I have also, as from your Majesty, received by him (and partly it was signified me from Mr. Walsingham) that your Majesty was minded from Michaelmas-day forward

* Indorsed by the Earl, "Copy of the Quene's Majesty's lettar, sent by Mr. Beale, Clerk of the Counsell, the xxiiii of Cept., 1575.

to allow me for the keeping of this Lady but £30 a week. When I received her into my charge at your Majesty's hands, I understood very well it was a most dangerous service, and thought over-hard for any man to perform, without some great mischief to himself at least ; and as it seemed most hard and fearful to others, and every man shrunk from it, so much the gladder was I to take it upon me, thereby to make appear to your Majesty my zealous mind to serve you in place of greatest peril ; and I thought it was the best proof your Majesty could make of me. I demanded not great allowance, nor did stick for any thing, as all men use to do. My Lords of your Council, upon good deliberation, assigned, by your Majesty's commandment, a portion of £52 every week (less by the half than your Majesty paid before she came to me), which I took, and would not in that doubtful time have refused your Majesty's service of trust so committed to me, if my lands and life had lain thereon ; and how I have passed my service, and accomplished your trust committed to me, with quiet, surety—

No. CIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 117.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,
My most hearty and due commendations done, I cannot sufficiently express in words the inward hearty affection that I conceive by your Lordship's friendly offer of the marriage of your younger

son ;* and that in such a friendly sort, by your own letter, and, as your Lordship writes, the same proceeding of yourself. Now, my Lord, as I think myself much beholden to you for this your Lordship's kindness, and manifest argument of a faithful good will, so must I pray your Lordship to accept mine answer, with assured opinion of my continuance in the same towards your Lordship. There are specially two causes why I do not in plain terms consent by way of conclusion hereto ; the one, for that my daughter is but young in years ; and, upon some reasonable respects, I have determined (notwithstanding I have been very honourably offered matches) not to treat of marrying of her, if I may live so long, until she shall be above fifteen or sixteen ; and if I were of more likelihood myself to live longer than I look to do, she should not, with my liking, be married before she were near eighteen, or twenty. The second cause why I differ to yield to conclusion with your Lordship is grounded upon such a consideration as, if it were not truly to satisfy your Lordship, and to avoid a just offence which your Lordship might conceive of my forbearing, I would not by writing or message utter, but only by speech

* Edward, the Earl's fourth son. He married one of the co-heirs of Cuthbert Lord Ogle, and succeeded his brother Gilbert in the Earldom. The young lady was Elizabeth, youngest daughter of Lord Burghley by his second wife : she married William, eldest son of Lord Wentworth, and died before her father. The extreme caution and sagacity displayed here by Lord Burghley ; his remarkable account of the Queen's jealousy and distrust, even of him, her oldest and most faithful servant ; and the singular opinion of "human learning" with which he concludes, render this letter a most curious and interesting relic.

to your Lordship's self. My Lord, it is over true, and over much against reason, that upon my being at Buxton last, advantage was sought by some that loved me not, to confirm in her Majesty a former conceit which had been laboured to put into her head, that I was of late time become friendly to the Queen of Scots, and that I had no disposition to encounter her practices ; and now, at my being at Buxton, her Majesty did directly conceive that my being there was, by means of your Lordship and my Lady, to enter into intelligence with the Queen of Scots ; and hereof at my return to her Majesty's presence, I had very sharp reproofs for my going to Buxton, with plain charging of me for favouring the Queen of Scots ; and that in so earnest a sort as I never looked for, knowing my integrity to her Majesty ; but, specially knowing how contrariously the Queen of Scots conceived of me for many things past to the offence of the Queen of Scots. And yet, true it is, I never indeed gave just cause by any private affection of my own, or for myself, to offend the Queen of Scots ; but whatsoever I did was for the service of mine own sovereign Lady and Queen, which if it were yet again to be done I would do. And though I know myself subject to contrary workings of displeasure, yet will I not, for remedy of any of them both, decline from the duty I owe to God and my sovereign Queen ; for I know, and do understand, that I am in this contrary sort maliciously depraved, and yet in secret sort ; on the one part, and that of long time, that I am the

most dangerous enemy, and evil willer to the Queen of Scots ; on the other side, that I am also a secret well willer to her, and her title, and that I have made my party good with her. Now, my Lord, no man can make both these true together ; but it sufficeth for such as like not me in doing my duty to deprave me, and yet in such sort is done in darkness as I cannot get opportunity to convince them in the light. In all these crossings, my good Lord, I appeal to God, who knoweth, yea (I thank him infinitely) who directeth my thoughts to intend principally the service and honour of God, and, jointly with it, the surety and greatness of my sovereign Lady the Queen's Majesty ; and for any other respect but it may tend to those two, I appeal to God to punish me if I have any. As for the Queen of Scots, truly I have no spot of evil meaning to her ; neither do I mean to deal with any titles to the Crown. If she shall intend any evil to the Queen's Majesty, my sovereign, for her sake I must and will mean to impeach her ; and therein I may be her unfriend, or worse.

Well now, my good Lord, your Lordship seeth I have made a long digression from my answer, but I trust your Lordship can consider what moveth me thus to digress. Surely it behoveth me not only to live uprightly, but to avoid all probable arguments that may be gathered to render me suspected to her Majesty, whom I serve with all dutifulness and sincerity ; and therefore I gather this, that if it were understood that there were a communication, or a purpose of marriage between

your Lordship's son and my daughter, I am sure there would be an advantage sought to increase these former suspicions purposes.

Considering the young years of our two children

as if the matter were fully

agreed betwixt us, the parents, the marriage could not take effect, I think it best to refer the motion in silence, and yet so to order it with ourselves that, when time shall hereafter be more convenient, we may (and then also with less cause of vain suspicion) renew it. And, in the mean time, I must confess myself much bounden to your Lordship for your goodness ; wishing your Lordship's son all the good education that may be meet to teach him to fear God, love your Lordship, his natural father, and to know his friends ; without any curiosity of human learning, which, without the fear of God, I see doeth great hurt to all youth in this time and age. My Lord, I pray you bear with my scribbling, which I think your Lordship shall hardly read, and yet I would not use my man's hand in such a matter as this is.

From Hampton Court, 24th December, 1575.
Your Lordship's most assured at commandment,
W. BURGHLEY.

*To the right honourable my singular good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of
England, and one of the Lords of her Ma-
jesty's Privy Council.*

No. CIV.

(Howard Papers.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My singular good Lord,
BEFORE Christmas I had intended to have sent
a letter to your Lordship, which herein now I do
enclose; but not meaning to hazard it to common
posting, and not knowing of any that might come
directly unto you, I imagined that some of your
own would be here about this time; I did therefore
forbear to send it until now. Beseeching your
Lordship not to mislike with the delay of answer;
for truly I am so wary to enter into suspicion
where I neither desire nor mean to deserve, as
I would neither thereby harm your Lordship, nor
minister cause to unfriendly persons to calumniate
my actions; which truly have no other foundation
than upon the service of God and my Prince,
without any particular respect of offence against
any.

And now, my Lord, I find such continuance, or
rather increase, of your good will to me, by your
costly gift of plate this new year, as you may ac-
count me greatly in your debt, and yet ready with
my heart and service to acquit you. I humbly
therefore pray your Lordship to make proof of my
good will where my power may answer the same,
and I trust you shall find the best disposed debtor
that your Lordship hath to acquit my debt.

From Hampton Court, the 1st of January

(whereof God send your Lordship to see many in health and comfort) 1575.

Your Lordship's most assured to my power,
W. BURGHLEY.

*To the right honourable and my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of
England, and one of the Lords of the Queen's
Majesty's Privy Council.*

W. BURGHLEY.

No. CV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 121.)

LORD TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable,

My humble duty remembered, may it please your Lordship I have received by my bailiff from your Lordship £60, for the which I yield to your Lordship my most humble thanks, praying God to make me able to deserve the least part of your Lordship's goodness towards me. Also I understand by him your Lordship was offended with me for my not writing to your Lordship for it. May it please your Lordship, I was minded, before Christmas, to have waited on your Lordship in the country, and sending my lackey upon other business, I bade him tell the bailiff I meant, if I came not myself, that he should receive the £60 which was due, and send it me up, but trust I meant, according to my duty, to have written to your Lordship for it, so he waited on your Lordship before I would, wherefore I humbly beseech your Lordship to pardon me for not writing according to my duty.

May it please your Lordship, matters touching

the choosing of counsellors remain doubtful, but daily it is looked for that some shall be chosen. Here are ambassadors out of France, both from the King, and from Monsieur. It was a bruit that Monsieur was poisoned, but now advertisements are common to the contrary. He hath referred his cause to be dealt in by her Majesty betwixt him and his brother the King;* how her Majesty will please to deal in it is not yet known, but the ambassadors make show of desire to be despatched.

Here is also Sir Henry Cobham † returned out of Spain, with answer of his message. Also here

* Monsieur had privately favoured the Huguenots, partly from a personal dislike to Catherine de Medicis, his mother, and partly to strengthen a party which he hoped might advance him to the throne, in preference to his elder brother, the King of Poland. The vigilant Queen Dowager, however, penetrated into his designs; he was arrested, and imprisoned for some months, and in the mean time Charles IX. died, and was succeeded by Henry. Monsieur at length found means to escape, and, joining his friends to those of the King of Navarre, and the Prince of Condé, increased the Huguenot army to fifty thousand men. It was then that he applied to Elizabeth; in the hope, by her weighty mediation, to have made such terms with his brother as might have put it out of Catherine's power to molest him in future. Our historians say nothing either of this request, or of the Queen's answer; but it may be presumed that the latter was unfavourable, as Monsieur soon after sacrificed his party by an inglorious treaty, which some writers ascribe to the natural irresolution of his temper, and others to premeditated treachery.

† Descended from the very ancient Kentish family of that name. He had been presented to Elizabeth by his father, when very young, and before her accession, immediately after which she appointed him one of her Gentlemen Pensioners, and afterwards employed him in several embassies, especially to Spain, in the beginning of the last year, as before, in 1571, to mediate in favour of the Low Countries. He was a man of considerable abilities, but of a haughty and ungovernable temper, and particularly inimical to Walsingham, and his friends, which probably obstructed his further promotion.

is come one from the Prince of Orange, out of the Low Country, with a couple of chief merchants of Flanders, to make offer of that country to be delivered into her Majesty's hands ; and, if it will please her to keep it, they will betake themselves to their merchandise, and pay her Majesty such tribute as before they payed to the King of Spain ;* they also require speedy answer. The Council are all at the Court ; they sit daily, and the ambassadors come to them. The ambassadors have had audience of the Queen twice. Her Majesty is troubled with these causes, which maketh her very melancholy ; and seemeth greatly to be out of quiet. What shall be done in these matters as yet is unknown, but here are ambassadors of all sides, who labour greatly one against another. Her Majesty hath put unto her to deal both betwixt the King of Spain and the Low Country ; the King of France and his brother. Her Majesty may deal as pleaseth her, for I think they both are weary of the wars ; especially Flanders, which, as the report goes, is utterly wanting both of money, munition, and powder, and therefore hath offered their country to the Queen's Majesty.

It is thought her Majesty will remove very shortly to Whitehall. Thus, not having else worthy troubling your Lordship at this time, I humbly take my leave, craving your Lordship's daily blessing.

* The states offered to become subject to Elizabeth as their hereditary sovereign : she being descended from Philippa, Queen to Edward III. and daughter of William of Bavaria, Earl of Hainault and Holland, from whose co-heir the King of Spain derived his title.

From Hampton Court, this 4th of Jan., 1575.
Your Lordship's loving and most obedient son,
FRANCIS TALBOT.

To my Lord my Father.

No. CVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 133.)

**GILBERT TALBOT TO
THE EARL AND COUNTESS OF SHREWSBURY.**

My duty most humbly remembered : right honourable my singular good Lord and father. Although it be now the Parliament time, and therefore very great resort from all places, yet all things, God be praised, are in such quiet as, beside matter of the Parliament, I know nothing worthy to advertise your Lordship. The Parliament is likely to end very shortly ; I think to-morrow the bill for the subsidy will pass our house. There is a bill, as I hear, in the higher house, that whosoever will not receive the communion, and come to the church, shall pay yearly a certain sum of money, the which is not yet come into our house : for the rest of the bills yet spoken of, they are matters of no great moment though for the reformation of abuses.*

Yesterday I dined with the Bishop's Grace of

* This was the second session of Elizabeth's fourth parliament, which had not met since 1572. It began on the 8th of February, and broke up on the 15th of March, after which it was prorogued from time to time till 1580. Nothing material occurred in it, except a vote of a subsidy, and two tenths and fifteenths ; and another address, requesting the Queen to marry, which she, as usual, answered evasively : the bill concerning attendance at divine service did not pass till the next session, and its being proposed in this is not mentioned by historians. It is remarkable that the accurate Camden does not speak at all of this parliament in his history of this year.

Canterbury,* who lieth at Lambeth, newly made Metropolitan. He maketh good report of your Lordship's honourable entertainment of him at Rufford, in his coming hither. I think your Lordship bath a very good friend of him. I hear my Lord Huntingdon will be shortly at York; it is given out that he goeth hence the first week of clean Lent. As I write to your Lordship in the beginning hereof, I know nothing more to impart to your Lordship, wherefore, most humbly craving pardon in like manner dutifullly, I beseech your Lordship of your blessing, praying God long to continue your Lordship in all honour, and most perfect health.

From the Court, this Monday at noon, the 20th of February 1575.

I hear that my sister of Pembroke groweth somewhat better than she was, yet weak still. I am to crave pardon that I write jointly to your Honours, both for want of matter, and hasty departure of this bearer.

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient loving son,
GILBERT TALBOT.
To my Lord and my Lady.

No. CVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 145.)

SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,
I HAVE received your late letter concerning Ralph Radish, convicted at Chester of felony, and re-

* Edmund Grindal, lately translated from York.

prieved for the cause declared in your Lordship's said letter. According to your Lordship's desire the said Ralph is sent for up hither, by letters from my Lords to be further examined here upon such matter as he pretendeth to know. I am also now willed by her Majesty to let your Lordship understand how that she is very lately and credibly informed of certain secret messengers come out of Scotland with letters to that Queen, your charge, who are already entered England, and by all likelihood not far from your Lordship's house; her Majesty's pleasure, therefore, is that you devise all the best and most secret means you can, in belying the country round about you for their apprehension, and the intercepting of the said letters. Their names, with some more of the circumstances hereof, you may know by this enclosed note. For the last French news I refer your Lordship to the occurrence I send you herewith; and so humbly take my leave.

From the Court, the 19th of March, 1575.

Your Lordship's to command,

FRA. WALSHINGHAM.*

*To the right honourable my very good Lord the
Earl of Shrewsbury.*

* This great minister's public life and character are well known; I shall therefore confine myself to a short account of his family. He descended from a very ancient house in Norfolk, and was the third and youngest son of William Walsingham, of Scadbury, in the parish of Chiselhurst in Kent, by Joyce, daughter of Edmund Denny of Cheshunt in Hertfordshire. He was twice married; first to Anne, daughter of Sir George Barnes, Knight; secondly to Ursula, daughter of Henry St. Barbe of Somersetshire, and widow of Richard Worsley; and by the latter had issue two daughters; 1 Frances, who was thrice splen-

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 141.)

Indorsed by the Earl of Shrewsbury's hand, "Oc-
currances, from Mr. Secretary Walsingham, the
23rd of February, 1575."

They make little of the departure of the King of Navarre* in this Court, and the King maketh fair weather with him to induce him to live quietly in his country, and not to join with Monsieur or the Prince of Condé ; and his train have leave to go after him, with his stuff; neither is any restrained to go unto him that list. He staid two or three days at Vendôme, and then went to a town of his not far thence, called Fléche, and thence to Alençon. The young Count Montgomery met him, with two or three hundred horses, and is gone abroad into Normandy, to gather such forces as list to join with him out of that country, or to do any other exploit that shall happen to fall

didly married ; to Sir Philip Sidney ; to Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex ; and to Richard de Burgh, Earl of Clanricarde : 2 Mary, who died unmarried in June, 1580. Sir Francis Walsingham died April 6, 1590, and was buried in St. Paul's cathedral.

* Afterwards Henry IV. of France. He had been declared the leader of the Protestants when a child. Catherine de Medicis, dreading his popularity and growing abilities, had confined him together with Monsieur, her son, about eighteen months before the date of this letter ; but he made his escape from a hunting party which he had been allowed to attend, and took the command of the Huguenot army in the beginning of this month. The Duke of Guise mentioned here, was Henry, who succeeded his father as head of the Catholic faction, and was assassinated at Blois in 1588, by the order of Henry III. He had been on terms of great friendship with the King of Navarre, and it is probable that their disagreement at this time was owing to that Prince's late marriage with Margaret of Valois, whom the Duke also loved.

in his way ; and many gentlemen do resort unto the King of Navarre daily, namely of the religion, both out of Picardy and out of Normandy. His escape spiteth the Duke of Guise, for now all his practices are discovered which he wrought to bring discord between the King of Navarre and his wife, and between Monsieur and the King of Navarre ; for he hath carried with him the league that was made against Monsieur, whereby he may know what hath been devised against him.

There is a secret report, and that very constantly affirmed by men of credit, that a day or two before the King of Navarre departed, it happened the Duke of Guise and him to play at dice, upon a very smooth board, in the King's cabinet ; and that, after they had done, there appeared suddenly upon the board certain great and round drops of blood that astonished them marvellously, finding no cause in the blood of the world, but, as it were, a very prodigy.

Biron * is returned from Monsieur ; his report is that Monsieur is content to stand to his agreement for his part, but when Biron came from Monsieur the departure of the King of Navarre was not known. There is a new device to deliver Monsieur Moulins, and Dezice, a town upon the river Loire, a little above Nevers, which hath a bridge to pass the Loire ; and Biron is dispatched back again to Monsieur to deliver him those towns. It

* Armand de Gontault de Biron, Marshal of France ; a Huguenot, but passionately attached to the royal family.

is said that the Duke of Nevers, * being moved by Queen Mother to deliver Monsieur that town, should answer that it should never be said of him that he would render any of the King's towns to any rebel; and that thereupon Queen Mother should give him the lie, and tell him that he should well know that her son was no rebel; and that he, and others who should put that opinion in the King's head against his brother, should repent it; with many other great threatening words.

Bellievre † is returned from the Prince of Condé; and as he went with nothing but words, so hath he brought nothing with him but words, for the Reyters ‡ are past the river Loire, and so draw towards Moulins.

No. CVIII.

(Cecil Papers. 1575.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My very good Lord,
I RECEIVED this morning your Lordship's letters, for the which I do most heartily thank you. I am sorry that there is cause to give mistrust that it is intended there shall be a war in France; which, although it may satisfy some humours that only seek to break the marriage, and to that end care not what they do to have the pretence, yet when it shall bring the Queen into wars with all the Princes

* Louis de Gonzague, Duke of Nevers. Sully speaks very contemptuously of this nobleman.

† Pomponne de Bellievre, afterwards Chancellor of France.

‡ Reyters, or Ruyters; the German horse in the service of the Huguenots were so called.

of Europe, which she will not be able to continue, I fear both her Majesty and the realm shall smart for the pleasing of these men's humours to serve their own particulars. The division mape of three third parts for the bearing of the charges of the wars carrieth a good shew ; but, when I consider the poorness of the King of Navarre, and the covetousness of the Almains, I fear her Majesty in the end must pay for all, or let all fall when she hath put her foot in. And, therefore, if there might be a peace in France, surely I do think it were better for her, and for the King of Navarre ; for when she either can not, or will not, in time supply their lacks, their cause must fall to the ground, and they therewith, and her Majesty, after, shall feel the lack of her friends, and the danger of so great a war. Truly, my Lord, if this war were not sought by the King of Navarre, I know not who else I could well like that the Queen should strain herself greatly in their defence, to bring a peace for their surety ; but if for other respects this be wrought, without need, then I shall be sorry to see the Protestants of France (whereof I think the greatest part will not put themselves into the wars to please the King of Navarre) to be brought into so great peril of ruin, and her Majesty to be put to so hard a shifft, either to leave her friends at their need, or to put herself and her state in danger ; and, therefore, I conclude that either her Majesty must, in my opinion, procure the peace in France, or, by the wars, see the ruin of the Protestants there, and her own peril after.

I have been extremely taken since my coming from London with a cold and a cough ; which hath brought me such stitches, so great a pain in my head, and a continual burning fever, as, until this morning, I was greatly afraid of a pleurisy. This morning my fever hath left me, my stitches in coughing are less, my head is in better temper, and Mr. Atslow * does think that it was but *diaria febris*, which to me was *binaria*, for in two days and two nights I had no doze ; this will be some cause of my longer stay from the Court ; and so I do commit your Lordship to the Almighty.

From Newhall, this Monday.

Your Lordship's most assured,

T. SUSSEX.

No. CIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 723.)

"FRANCE. The accompt of me, RALPH BARBER, for one voyage made unto Rouen for your Lordship, as followeth, 1575."

| | |
|--|--|
| IMPRIMIS, paid unto Mr. Jasper Dublett, £. s. d. | |
| for three tons of French wine, at | |
| £12. 14. the ton - - - - 38 2 0 | |
| Item, more, unto Peter Delaport, for | |
| eight tons of French wine, at £13. 14. | |
| the ton - - - - 109 12 0 | |
| Item, more, for one ton of Orleans wine 15 0 0 | |

* An eminent physician of that time. He was a zealous Catholic, and a favourer of the Queen of Scots. -Thomas Morgan writes to that lady in July 1585, (see Murdin, vol. ii. 452.) "I hear that Dr. Astlow was racked twice, almost to death, in the Tower, about the Earl of Arundel's matters, and intention to depart England."

| | £ | s | d |
|---|----|----|----|
| Item, more, for half a ton of white wine | 5 | 4 | 0 |
| Item, more, to Peter Delaport, for 27 ells 2 qrs. of fine damask for table cloths, containing in breadth seven qrs., at 12s. 6d. the ell - - - | 17 | 6 | 4 |
| Item, more, for one ton of red vinegar, one puncheon of white - - - | 14 | 0 | 0 |
| Item, more, for 30 ells of damask, for table napkins, which is but payable 10 ells, at 12s. 6d. the ell - - - | 6 | 6* | 0 |
| Item, more, for 22 ells of diaper, of Rouen making, at 8s. 2d. the ell - | 9 | 0 | 4 |
| Item, more, for 19 ells of whited can- vas, at 3s. 6d. the ell - - - | 3 | 6 | 6 |
| Item, more, for 42 pounds of comfitures and other sugar works, at sundry prices, | 5 | 12 | 0 |
| Item, for boxes and cotton for the same, &c. - - - - - | 0 | 4 | 0 |
| Item, more, for 14 lbs of fine sleyed silk, for my Lady, being of all colours, at 32s. the lb - - - - - | 22 | 8 | 0 |
| Item, more ; 3 ells of whited canvas, at 3s. 5d. the ell - - - - - | 0 | 10 | 3 |
| Item, more, for 4 reams of fine paper - | 0 | 14 | 10 |
| Item, more, for 12 pieces of coarse buckram - - - - - | 1 | 12 | 0 |
| Item, more, for 48 dozen quails, at 6s. the dozen - - - - . - | 14 | 8 | 0 |
| Item, more, for 2 cages for the said | | | |

* An arithmetical blunder in the original. There are two or three more errors of the same kind.

| | | |
|---|-----------|--------|
| quails, two bushels of hemp seed, with 2 weeks' charges before I re- ceived them | - - - - - | £ 18 |
| Item, more, at Rouen, for custom of 12½ tons of wines | - - - - - | 1 2 |
| Item, more, in the Viscompt there, and unto the officers of the Romain | - | 0 18 |
| Item, more, for carriage of the afore- said wines and vinegar upon ship- board, with rummaging and plank- age of the same | - - - - - | 1 4 |
| Item, more, for 5 ells of canvas and cord to truss the said diaper and da- mask in, with packing of the same | | 0 6 |
| Item, for a panyer, a lock, sear cloths, and cords, for trussing the said com- fitures and sugar-works in | - - - | 0 6 |
| Item, more, for carriage of the same, by land, from Rouen to Dieppe | - | 0 11 1 |
| Item, unto one Robert Godden, for brokage in Rouen | - - - | 2 0 |
| Item, more, for the charges of me and my man in Rouen, being there the space of 21 days, at 4s. per <i>diem</i> | - | 4 4 |
| Item, more, for extraordinary charges during my being in France | - - - | 0 6 1 |
| Item, more, for a post horse from Dieppe to Rouen, and from Rouen to Dieppe again, with the charges of two several returns | - - - - | 0 16 |
| Item, more, at Dieppe, to the officers and searchers there | - - - - | 0 4] |

| | £ | s | d |
|-------------------------------------|------------|-----------|----------|
| Item, more, for my passport there | - | 0 | 2 10 |
| Sum disbursed in France, as appears | <u>275</u> | <u>18</u> | <u>1</u> |

ENGLAND.

| | | | |
|---|-----------|---|------|
| Paid for the charges of myself, my man, and my horse, from the last of April to the 26th of May, that I took ship- ping for France, being 26 days, at 3s. per <i>diem</i> | - - - - | 3 | 18 0 |
| Item, for my passage by sea made, my man and myself, with duties unto searchers at Rye | - - - - | 1 | 2 0 |
| Item, for passage of me and my man by sea, with two cages of quails and one hamper, in my return from France into England | - - - - | 1 | 0 0 |
| Item, for two horses from Rye to Lon- don, in carriage of the said quails and hamper | - - - - - | 0 | 11 0 |
| Item, more, for my horse grass at Rye, three weeks, 16d. per week | - - - | 0 | 4 0 |
| Item, unto John Boys, for the freight of $12\frac{1}{2}$ tons of wine from Rouen to Lon- don, at 14s. the ton | - - - - | 8 | 15 0 |
| Item, more unto him, for primage and average accustomed, with 3s. paid at the new haven | - - - - | 1 | 15 0 |
| Item, more, unto John Poge, for the freight of four puncheons of vinegar, from Rouen to London, with average primage accustomed | - - - - | 0 | 18 8 |

| | £ | s | d |
|--|---|----|---|
| Item, more, unto John Boys, for the freight of one fardle of diaper and damask from Rouen to London - | 0 | 3 | 0 |
| Paid for 82 dozen hoops, for hooping and cupping of ten tons and one hogshead of wine, at London, at 10d. the dozen - - - - - | 3 | 6 | 8 |
| Item, more unto the said cooper for filling of the said wines, being twelve tons and a half, laden at Rouen ; being filled at London, ten tons, one hogshead, and a half, at 4d. per ton | 0 | 3 | 4 |
| Item, unto the porters, for taking in and delivering forth the said wines at London - - - - - | 0 | 11 | 0 |
| Item, more, to John Widgeon, of Lon- don, for wharfage and cranage of the said wine and vinegar - - - - | 0 | 12 | 0 |
| Item, unto him for cellarage of the said wines for ten days - - - - | 0 | 4 | 4 |
| Item, for entering the said wines in the Custom House, with 1s. 6d. towards a cocket for Hull - - - - | 0 | 3 | 8 |
| Item, for my man's charges in the coun- try for two days and one night, that is to say, in country flies, with meat and drink, 6s.; to the Sheriff of Lon- don for blood and frey, 6s 8d.; to a man of law in Guild Hall, 3s. 6d. - | 0 | 16 | 2 |
| Item, more, for two shirts for my man, at 3s. 4d. a piece - - - - | 0 | 6 | 8 |
| Paid for my charges of myself and horse, | | | |

from the 16th of June, that I landed £ s d
 in England, in my return, with 10s.
 for ten days' charges of my man be-
 fore his departing from me at Lon-
 don, until the 19th of July, that I
 came to Sheffield, being 33 days, at
 1s. 8d. the day - - - - - 3 5 0

| | | | |
|--|----|---|----------|
| Sum disbursed in England as appears | 28 | 0 | 2 |
| Sum total disbursed in this voyage, as particularly appears | - | - | 303 18 3 |

No. CX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol F. fol. 93.)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
 TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My Lord,

FOR that this bearer is so well known and trusted
 of you I will leave to trouble you with any long
 letter, and do commit the more to his report, for
 that he is well able to satisfy your Lordship fully
 of all things here. And, touching one part of
 your letter sent lately to me, about the access of
 my Lady your wife to the Queen there, I find
 the Queen's Majesty well pleased that she may
 repair at all times, and not forbear the company of
 that Queen, having not only very good opinion of
 my Lady's wisdom and discretion, but thinks how
 convenient it is for that Queen to be accompanied
 and pass the time rather with my Lady than meaner
 persons. I doubt not but your Lordship shall hear

in like sort also from her Majesty touching the same, and yet I may well signify thus much, as from herself, to your Lordship. 'The rest I commend to this bearer, and your Lordship with my good Lady to the Almighty. In haste, this 1st of May.

Your Lordship's assured kinsman,
R. LEICESTER.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of the
Order, &c.*

No. CXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 153.)

SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,
I HAVE this day received your Lordship's letter of the 23rd of this present and imparted to her Majesty such reasons as you therein allege to show how unfit a place Tutbury is, as well for the safe custody of your charge, as also for necessary provisions; and she, allowing very well of your said reasons and opinion, notwithstanding her former order given you in that behalf, is now resolved that you conduct that Queen from Buxton back again to your house at Sheffield; whereof, for your satisfaction, and answer to your said letter, she commanded me to give you knowledge. And so I humbly commend your Lordship to God.

From the Court, the 27th of June, 1576.

Your Lordship's to command,
FRA. WALSINGHAM.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord, the
Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 157.)

GILBERT TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

MY duty most humbly remembered, right honourable my singular good Lord and father. Since my coming hither to the Court there hath been sundry determinations of her Majesty's progress this summer. Yesterday it was set down that she would go to Grafton,* and Northampton, Leicester, and to Ashby, my Lord Huntingdon's house, and there to have remained 21 days, to the end the water of Buxton might have been daily brought thither for my Lord of Leicester, or any other, to have used; but late yesternight this purpose altered, and now at this present her Majesty thinketh to go no further than Grafton; howbeit there is no certainty, for these two or three days it hath changed every five hours. The physicians have fully resolved that wheresoever my Lord of Leicester be he must drink and use Buxton water twenty days together. My Lady Essex and my Lady Susan will be shortly at Buxton, and my Lady Norris shortly after; I cannot learn of any others that come from hence.

This day Mr. Secretary Walsingham has gotten the Bill signed for the S. Q.'s diet, and to-morrow early it shall be sent to the Exchequer,

* A small town near Towcester in Northamptonshire. Henry VIII. built a palace there on an estate which he had obtained from the family of Grey in exchange for certain lands in Leicestershire. The house was destroyed in the civil wars, and its demesne is possessed by the Duke of Grafton.

that as soon as possible we may receive the money, which shall be disposed, according to your Lordship's commandment in payment of all your debts here.

I have bespoken two pair of little flagons, for there are none ready made, and I fear they will not be finished before my departure hence. I have seen many fair hangings, and your Lordship may have of all prices, either two shillings a stick or seven groats, three, four, five, or six, shillings, the stick, even as your Lordship will bestow; but there is of five shillings the stick that is very fair. But, unless your Lordship send up a measure of what depth and breadth you would have them, surely they will not be to your Lordship's liking; for the most of them are very shallow, and I have yet seen none that I think deep enough for a great chamber, but for lodgings.*

I have had some talk with my Lord of Leicester since my coming, whom I find most assuredly well affected towards your Lordship and yours. I never knew man in my life more joyful for their friend than he at my Lady's noble and wise government of herself at her late being here; saying that he heartily thanked God of so good a friend and kinsman of your Lordship and that you are matched with so noble and good a wife. I saw the Queen's Majesty yesternight in the garden; but, for that she was talking with my Lord Hunsden, she spake nothing to me, but looked

* Not deep enough for a state room, but fit for common apartments.

very earnestly on me. I hear her Majesty conceiveth somewhat better of me than heretofore ; and my Lord of Leicester doubteth not in time to bring all well again.

I can learn no certain news worthy to write to your Lordship's Secretary. William Winter hath not yet sent any resolute answer from the Flushingers, and Prince of Orange, touching our merchant's ships and goods;* for other matters, of France, I know Mr. Secretary Walsingham's wonted manner it to send your Lordship's occurrents that come thence. Mr. Secretary Smith lieth still in hard case at his house in Essex, and, as I hear, this day, or to-morrow, setteth towards the baths in Somersetshire ; the use of his tongue is clean taken from him that he cannot be understood, such is the continuance of the rheum that distilleth from his head downwards.

Thus, not knowing wherewith else to trouble your Lordship, I most humbly beseech your blessing, with my wonted prayer for your Lordship's long continuance in all honour, and most perfect health.

From the Court, this Friday at night, the 6th of July, 1576.

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient loving son,

GILBERT TALBOT.

To my Lord my father.

* Some Dutch privateers had lately pillaged several English merchant ships, under the pretence that they were carrying provisions to Dunkirk, &c. and Sir William Winter, with Beale, Clerk of the Council, was sent to demand restitution.

No. CXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 191.)

GILBERT TALBOT AND HIS WIFE TO
THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY

After a long account of his treaty for the purchase of Wilton, an estate in Herefordshire, belonging to William Lord Grey, for which he offered £6000, the letter concludes thus.—

—ALTHOUGH your Lordship by your last letter offered (I most humbly thank your Lordship) greatly to strain yourself for my preferment in that behalf, yet still I must, in like dutiful manner, beseech your Lordship's great goodness. As for my own ability, which your Lordship warneth me to consider of, my wealth and riches is not unknown to your Lordship but my desire of riches was never so great as at this present, that thereby I might compass such a thing as Wilton* is; and so beside the benefit thereof, might be able to attend on your Lordship with a thousand tall fellows to follow your Lordship's directions, if so you should have need to command me; I rest wholly, therefore, upon your Lordship's last and determinate pleasure, most humbly beseeching pardon for this my bold presumption in desiring to be so chargeable a child to your Lordship as my deserts cannot possibly deserve so great liberality: I am also sorry to be so tedious with the length of my letter, but, the matter requiring it, I trust your Lordship will pardon me. I give

* William Lord Grey of Wilton had been taken prisoner in France, and, having long solicited in vain to be redeemed at the public charge, which he well deserved, was now obliged to sell most of his estates for that purpose.

your Lordship most humble thanks for granting me the presentation of the parsonage of Whitchurch: * *If I can prevail in my suit to deprive the old parson, whom I have now in suit, I shall beseech your Lordship to grant an advowson of that benefice to any whom your Lordship will trust, before sufficient witness, and afterwards to sign the presentation to one Jones; to the end that if the said Jones should debar me of the profits, as in law he might, he may by this means be deprived and by no other way possibly by any device to be invented; whereof Roper can also advertise your Lordship the advice I have taken therein.*

According to my riches, and the country I dwell in, and not to my desire, I send your Lordship a new year's gift; a Monmouth cap, and a rundlet of perry; and I must require pardon to name the other homely thing, a pair of Ross boots; which, if they are fit for your Lordship, you may have as many as please you to appoint. I beseech Almighty God to preserve your Lordship many happy new years' days, that you may live as many and joyful years after them as ever did any creature. Thus my wife and I most humbly beseech your Lordship's daily blessing.

From your Lordship's castle, Goodricke, † this Thursday, the 3rd of January, 1576.

* Whitchurch, in Shropshire. The Talbots formerly had property there, which is now possessed by the Duke of Bridgewater. John the great Earl of Shrewsbury, who was killed in France 31 H. VI. and others of the family are buried there.

† In Herefordshire; modernly called Goodriche. This estate went to Elizabeth, Countess of Kent, one of Gilbert Talbot's co-

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient
loving children,

GILBERT TALBOT.

MARY TALBOT.

To my Lord my father.

No. CXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P., fol. 819.)

THE QUEEN

TO THE EARL AND COUNTESS OF SHREWSBURY.

BY THE QUEEN.

Your most assured loving Cousin and Sovereign,*

ELIZABETH R.

Our very good Cousins,

BEING given to understand from our cousin of Leicester how honourably he was not only lately received by you our cousin the Countess at Chatsworth, and his diet by you both discharged at Buxton, but also presented with a very rare present, we should do him great wrong (holding him in that place of favour we do) in case we should not let you understand in how thankful sort we accept the same at both your hands, not as done unto him but to our own self, reputing him as another ourself; and, therefore, you may assure yourselves that we, taking upon us the debt not as

heiresses, and was erected into an Earldom (Castle Goodricke) and conferred by Queen Anne on Henry Grey, Earl, and afterwards Duke, of Kent. Mr. Gilpin has favoured us with a sketch of the remains of this castle in this observations on the river Wye, and speaks with rapture of the picturesque beauties of its situation.

* Written by the Queen's own hand.

is, but our own, will take care accordingly to discharge the same, in such honourable sort as so well-deserving creditors as ye are shall never have cause to think you have met with an ungrateful debtor.

In this acknowledgment of new debts we may not forget our old debt, the same being as great as sovereign can owe to a subject; when, through our loyal and most careful looking to the charge committed to you, both we and our realm enjoy a peaceable government, the best good hap that any Prince on earth can befall. This good hap ten growing from you, you might think yourselves lost unhappy if you served such a Prince as should not be as ready graciously to consider of it as thankfully to acknowledge the same, whereof ye may make full account, to your comfort, when time shall serve.

Given under our signet, at our manor of Greenwich, the 25th day of June, 1577, and in the 9th year of our reign.

To our right trusty and right well-beloved Cousin and Counsellor the Earl of Shrewsbury, and to our right dear and right well-beloved Cousin the Countess his wife.

No. CXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 893.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO THE QUEEN.

May it please your most excellent Majesty,
The comfortable letters I lately received, of your
own blessed hand writing, made me, by oft looking
on them, think my happiness more than any service

And may it now further please your Majesty
to license my wife and me humbly to acknowledge
ourselves the more bound to your Majesty, as
well for the comfortable message Mr. Julio +

* It should seem from this passage, and indeed by the general tenor of the Earl's answer, that the preceding letter from the Queen was secretly accompanied by another, probably in terms less agreeable.

[†] Julio Borgarucci, an Italian physician then in great estima-

brought us lately from your Majesty, as that it pleased your Majesty to vouchsafe our rude and gross entertainment of our dearest friend, my kinsman, my Lord of Leicester ; which, although in respect of our duties to your Majesty, and the great good will we bear to him, is not so well as it ought to be, yet are we sure it contenteth him, and displeaseth not your Majesty, that he is the welcomest friend to us of all others. My wife also bids me yield her humble thanks to your Majesty for your Majesty's late gracious relief to her deceased kinswoman ; and now (since we can do no more, nor your Highness have no more of us than our true faithful hearts and service, wherein we will spend our lives, and all we have, if your Majesty command it) we pray to God for your most excellent Majesty, as we are most bounden.

Sheffield, 4th of July, 1577.

Your Majesty's most humble faithful servant,

GEORGE SHREWSBURY.

No. CXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 205.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,
My most hearty commendations remembered, both
to yourself and to my good Lady. As I have
cause greatly to thank your Lordship for the good

tion with the people of quality, though infamous for his proficiency in that branch of medical science which hath so long distinguished his country. The Earl of Leicester, who was perhaps indebted to him for services of this kind, was excessively attached to him ; and through that nobleman's interference, Archbishop Grindal, who had condemned the marriage of Julio to another man's wife, lost the Queen's favour for ever. c 2

will I understood meant by your Lordship to me of late, when Mr. Roger Manners advertised you of my intention and desire to have come to Buxton, so now I am to pray the continuance of your good will, for that I am now thoroughly licensed by her Majesty to come thither, with as much speed as my old crazed body will suffer me. And, because I doubt your Lordship is, and shall be, pressed with many other like suits for your favour to have the use of some lodgings there, I am bold at this present to send this my letter by post, meaning to send one of my own servants towards your Lordship to receive your Lordship's commission to such as have the custody of your house; and mean on Monday to set forwards to my house at Burghley, where I will look to have my servant to come, and meet me with your Lordship's good pleasure. I am to have in my company but Mr. Roger Manners and my son, Thomas Cecil, for whom I am also to intreat your Lordship to procure them, by your commandment, some lodging, as your Lordship shall please.

The Queen's Majesty offered to have written her letter to your Lordship for your favour herein, but I thought my own credit with your Lordship sufficient for more than this. And so I take my leave of your good Lordship.

From Westminster, the 19th of July, 1577.

Your Lordship's most assuredly,

W. BURGHLEY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of
England, and one of her Majesty's Privy
Council.*

No. CXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 207.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

THIS morning, the 23rd, I received your Lordship's of the 21st, being here at one Mr. Chamberlaine's, near Caxton ; by which I perceive your Lordship had received my first letter of the 19th, mentioning my purpose of coming towards Buxton ; and I find by your Lordship's letter your abundant affectionate good will, to offer me more pleasure than is meet for me, in that it seemeth you will not regard the displacing of any there to place me ; and, though I am hereby greatly bound to your Lordship, yet I have given my servant in charge (who I think came to your Lordship either yesterday or on Sunday) not to suffer any to be displaced for me, except they were far inferior. And now, my good Lord, I most heartily beseech you, when I shall once have a room, by your goodness, leave me altogether to myself, and spare yourself from any care. I mean to be at my house at Burghley this night, by God's grace ; and, upon the return of my man from Buxton, I will take my journey as I shall see cause.

Mr. Manners is five miles hence, at Royston, for he came from London yesterday, and I from Waltham. And so, with my most hearty commendations, even in dutifnl sort, I end ; praying your Lordship that my Lady may have some remembrance of my coming to her.

From Kingston Wood, in Cambridgeshire,
near Caxton, 23rd of July, 1577.

Your Lordship's most assuredly,

W. BURGHLEY.

To the right honourable the Earl of Shrewsbury.

No. CXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 213.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

I HAVE received nothing of any moment from the Court at this time, otherwise than this of the mortality happened in Oxfordshire; where there are dead Sir Robert Doily, and an uncle of his, Mr. Danvers, of Banbury, Mr. Wainman, and the most part of all the freeholders that were at the assizes in Oxford; fifty scholars and twenty townsmen are dead.*

Sir John Smith is come out of Spain; who reports that the King there has great lack of treasure, whatsoever has been said to the contrary. I wish he had plenty of treasure, so we were sure he had plenty of good will towards us. The Queen's Majesty stays her determination of any

* This fearful sickness seems to have been produced by a pestilential vapour rising suddenly from the very spot on which these unfortunate persons were assembled, for they were all sensible of the attack at the same time, and the particular trial then before the court, though otherwise of no consequence, is recorded by all our historians. Besides the parties named by Lord Burghley, died Bell, Chief Baron of the Exchequer, Sir William Babington, Harcourt, Fettiplace, and Barham, an eminent lawyer; in the whole more than three hundred persons. It is remarkable that women and children were not affected.

progress, doubting lest this sickness might increase further, which I trust God of his mercy will stay. Thus, my good Lord, I have to use my man's hand, being not in good temper this morning with my water. 4th of Aug., 1577.

Your Lordship's at commandment,

W. BURGHLEY.

To the right honourable my very good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of England, and one of the Lords of her Majesty's Privy Council.

No. CXIX.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My very good Lord,

I DESIRE greatly to hear what good success you have had by the bath of Buxton, which I wish with all my heart may be as good as ever any man had, or desired to have there. Of the French actions, and Flemish troubles, your Lordship I am assured is better advertised by Mr. Secretary than you can be by me, and therefore I do forbear to trouble you therewith. The troubles of both places, when they have been carried jointly, have certainly bred our quiet, and so would continue it, if they jointly are continued; but if the hope of the Flemish troubles do so lull us asleep in security as we forget the matters of France, and thereby suffer that King to re-possess at his own will his state and quiet, I should then begin greatly to doubt that these kind of troubles in Flanders may

either do us hurt, or, at the best, bring us no good for our safety towards France. Your Lordship knows it hath been an old received opinion that the French would be loth to see the Flemish put in foot here, and the Flemish would be as loth to see the French put in foot ; not for any love either of them bears to us, but for their own surety, for that either would be loth the other should grow greater ; and, therefore, we have been always assured in such cases to have, if we listed, the help of the one to keep us from the oppression of the other. And, in the same respect, it hath also been always good for us to have them kept in an equal balance, lest any of them should grow over strong ; so as it seems to me to fall out that if both those countries may be kept, that it must needs be the best for us, and therefore we ought to employ all our wits and power to bring that to pass ; and if that may not be, then it is the next to seek to keep them in an equality, whereby we may have the next defence from hurt ; lest, if the one be clearly down, and the other set up over high, we may feel a greater burden than by their equality, either in good or ill, can by likelihood fall unto us : I do therefore, my Lord, wish with all my heart that we hope not so much of the Flemish matters as we neglect the French, and thereby bring ourselves to worse case than otherwise we may be. It were too much to write all is to be said in this matter ; and, therefore, knowing your Lordship by this little can gather further of my meaning than I am well able to express in writing, though I should be very tedious, I will forbear the rest until your Lordship's coming ; and so for this time

take my leave, and wish your Lordship shortly and well here.

From the Court, the 21st of August, 1577.

Your Lordship's most assured,

T. SUSSEX.

No. CXX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 845.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

I CANNOT but continue my thanks for all your liberal courtesies, praying your Lordship to assure yourself of my poor but yet assured friendship whilst I live. At my coming to the Court I found such alarm by news directly written from France, and from the Low Countries, of the Queen of Scots' escape, either already made or very shortly to be attempted, as (surely knowing, as I did, your circumspection in keeping of her, and hearing all things in that country about you very quiet, and free from such dangers) I was bold to make small account of the news, although her Majesty, and the Council here, were therewith perplexed. And though time doth try these news for any thing already done false, yet the noise thereof, and the doubt that her Majesty hath of secret hidden practices, to be wrought rather by corruption of some of yours whom you shall trust than by open force, moveth her Majesty to warn your Lordship, as she said she would write to your Lordship that you continue, or rather increase your vigilancy, if it may be, that you be not circumvented herein; and as I think your Lordship hath carried your charge

to Chatsworth, so think I that house a very meet house for good preservation thereof; having no town of resort where any ambuses of may lie. Surely, in my opinion, although I know many are desirous that your charge should be at liberty, yet I see no reasonable cause to move me to think that she would adventure herself to be conveyed away by stealth ; both for the sundry dangers that might light upon her, but specially for that, being at liberty, if her friends should attempt any thing by force for her against this realm, she should provoke the Queen's Majesty, and the states of the realm, to work matter to bar her of the interest which she supposeth she hath. But yet, my good Lord, even for preservation of the honour that you have gotten by so circumspect looking to her in all this long time of practice, I know you will be as watchful to prevent all attempts as others will be to assail your charge. Thus your Lordship seeth how curious I am, all which proceedeth of good will to your Lordship and to your honour.

My Lord, I have found here a great disposition in her Majesty to have all things in controversy ended betwixt Sir John Zouch, and Sir Thomas Stanhope, and others ; and therein I have imparted my opinion to her Majesty that the fault shall be in Sir John Zouch if he be disliked either of your Lordship or of others ; for I have told her that he doth take upon him more than is meet, namely, in opposing of himself against your Lordship without any cause by you given ; and her Majesty hath required me to advise him to reform himself therein,

and so I think he will do. And as for the report of placing of Sacheverel in commission, indeed it was here moved, but it is stayed ; and I hope neither he nor any other, which shall not behave themselves well towards your Lordship, shall be put in credit there, neither is it meet they should.

I find my Lord of Leicester, and Mr. Secretary also, earnestly inclined to maintain your Lordship's credit in all things that may concern you. And so, praying your Lordship that I may present with your Lordship my most hearty commendations to my Lady, I end.

From the Court at the Lord Admiral's house,
the 7th of September, 1577.

Your Lordship's most assured,

W. BURGHLEY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of
England, and one of the Lords of her
Majesty's Privy Council.*

No. CXXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 197. 1577.)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My dear good Lord,

I CANNOT but by this bearer let you understand how, according to your mind, I have delivered to her Majesty as much as did concern the matter you wrote of; and do find her Majesty no less careful of your causes than you would desire. For the matters of the Low Countries they go hardly ; and truly, my Lord, I look for no good thence. From

Scotland* there is, even this day, some advertisements come, of better hope of the King's good proceeding there, and with her Majesty than of late we looked for ; and it is the greatest care I have that her Majesty may have good amity with that King, for if so it may be, I have no great fear, as the world stands, of all the rest of her

* In the first year of Mary's imprisonment nothing material passed in Scotland. The leaders of the various parties in that country were engaged at Westminster and at York in a judicial investigation of her conduct, and their vassals contemplated that solemn farce at a distance. At length Elizabeth broke up the conference, and dismissed the Regent Murray, who had attended to establish proofs against the Queen of Scots, his half sister. When he returned to Scotland he found the Duke of Chatelherault, who had lately assumed the empty title of Lieutenant-General for the Queen, assembling a party in her behalf. It consisted of the Campbells and the Gordons, and might have performed essential services under a firm or skilful leader ; but the Duke, ever irresolute, consented to a treaty ; evaded the performance of its engagements, and was seized, by the order of Murray, and imprisoned in the Castle of Edinburgh. The Earls of Huntley and Argyle were brought to terms soon after, and thus ended the only warlike enterprise worth mentioning (except the defence of Edinburgh Castle), which Mary's subjects ever undertook for her restoration. England now became in a great measure the scene of Scottish affairs, for the country itself presents little to our view but the wild starts of two contending factions. Such were the assassinations of Murray and of Lennox, who succeeded him in the Regency, and who, having maliciously put to death Hamilton, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, fell a sacrifice in his turn to the resentment of that Prelate's family. Erskine, Earl Mar, the young King's Governor, was now appointed Regent, and some expectations of quiet were founded on the popularity which his fair character had gained ; but he died in the midst of his labours to procure a junction of parties, having held his office little more than one year. At length an accommodation took place under the management of Morton, his successor, and by the treaty of Perth, Mary's dispirited adherents promised submission to the King's government.

While these strange occurrences were passing, Kirkaldy, of Grange, held the Castle of Edinburgh with a firmness which would have done honour to ancient heroism, and his assailants

enemies abroad whatsoever; and I do not see but this King may be had, without any very great charge to her Majesty. We hear that of late he has dealt very well against his chiefest Papists ; God grant that he may so go forwards, for if both these realms, and the Princes, join in maintaining the true religion, it will be safety and preserva-

must have raised the siege, had they not been assisted by Elizabeth, in direct violation of her treaty with France. This fortress was at last forced to capitulate, as hath been before related ; and the unhappy Mary, who had been lately declared guilty of high treason, and excluded from the succession to the Crown of England, by the Parliament, now remained without one useful friend in her own dominions. The progress of the Reformation, to which this letter particularly relates, was not impeded by the death of Knox, in 1572 ; but the Scots, in their eagerness to avoid Popery, fell into Calvinism. The first blow was struck at Episcopacy a few weeks before his departure, and the idea of providing a maintenance for the clergy, which should be independent of government, was suggested by the rapacity of Morton, who had appropriated to himself the revenues of an Archbishopric. Repeated practices of this kind rendered the Regent unpopular. The Earls of Argyle and Athol, armed with the express orders of the King, a child of twelve years old, demanded his resignation. He complied, with seeming unconcern, and retired to his country seat ; but within two months, having gained the family of Erskine to his party, made himself master of the King's person, and resumed his former authority. New disorders now arose ; the two Earls above mentioned appeared in the field, and Morton marched with an army to oppose them. A treaty, however, was concluded, under Elizabeth's direction, and an apparent reconciliation followed, but the sudden death of Athol, after a feast to which he had been invited by the Regent, afforded grounds for fresh suspicions. The barbarous proscription of the illustrious house of Hamilton proved that these jealousies were too well founded, and completed the odium which Morton's government had so justly merited. The people, tired of regencies, turned their eyes towards their youthful monarch, who, on his part, was far from being insensible of the dignity of his situation. At length, Morton seeming to approve of a measure which he could no longer with decency or safety resist, James met his parliament, and assumed the sovereign power in the end of the year 1579.

tion of them both, and of their countries. Your Lordship doth hear, I am sure, that the Ambassadors are departed toward Flanders, on her Majesty's behalf, ten days agone, but the wind doth yet hold them on this side, God send their travel to bring forth good and profitable fruit.*

The best news I can write your Lordship is of her Majesty's good and perfect health, which God long continue ; and, next that, the best news that I will desire to hear of shall be continually of your Lordship's well doing, which I do pray to God for as for my own self; and so, for this time, commit your good Lordship to his blessed protection.

From my house, this 15th of February.

Your Lordship's most assured faithful kinsman,

R. LEICESTER.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
and cousin, the Earl of Shrewsbury, Lord
Marshal of England.*

No. CXXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. O. fol. 66.)

THE COUNTESS OF SHREWSBURY TO THE
EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My dear heart,

I HAVE sent your letters again, and thank you for them ; they require no answer ; but, when you write, remember to thank him for them. If you cannot get my timber carried I must be without

* Lord Cobham and Sir Francis Walsingham were now dispatched into the Netherlands to treat of a peace, in concert with the French and Imperial ministers there, but returned without success. The death of Don John, under whose viceroyalty the provinces had smarted severely, happened soon after this negotiation was concluded.

it, though I greatly want it; but if it would please you to command Hebert, or any other, to move your tenants to bring it, I know they will not deny to do it. I pray you let me know if I shall have the ton of iron. If you cannot spare it, I must make shift to get it elsewhere, for I may not now want it. You promised to send me money afore this time to buy oxen, but I see, out of sight out of mind with you.

My son Gilbert has been very ill in his bed ever since he came from Sheffield: I think it is his old disease: he is now, I thank God, somewhat better, and she very well. I will send you the bill of my wood stuff: I pray you let it be sent to Joseph, that he may be sure to receive all. I thank you for taking order for the carriage of it to Hardwick; if you would command, your wagoner might bring it thither, I think it would be safest carried. Here is neither malt or hops. The malt come last is so very ill and stinking, as Hawkes thinks none of my workmen will drink it. Shew this letter to my friend, and then return it. I think you will take no discharge at Zouch's hands, nor the rest. You may work still in despite of them; the law is on your side. It cannot be but that you shall have the Queen's consent to remove hither; therefore if you would have things in readiness for your provision, you might the sooner come. Come either before Midsummer, or not this year; for any provision you have yet you might have come as well at Easter as at this day. Here is yet no manner of provision more than a

little drink, which makes me to think you mind not to come. God send my jewel health.

Your faithful wife,

Saturday Morning.

E. SHREWSBURY.*

I have sent you lettuce, for that you love them ; and every second day some is sent to your charge and you ; I have nothing else to send. Let me hear how you, your charge *and love*, do, and commend me, I pray you. It were well you sent four or five pieces of the grate hangings, that they might be put up ; and some carpets. I wish you would have things in that readiness that you might come within three or four days after you hear from Court. Write to Baldwin to call on my Lord Treasurer for answer of your letters.

To my Lord my husband, the Earl of Shrewsbury.

No. CXXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 237.)

GILBERT TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My duty most humbly remembered, right honourable my singular good Lord and father. There is of late come from the King of France one Mons. Gondiet, who on May Day had audience in the

* Elizabeth, daughter of John Hardwick, of Hardwick, in Derbyshire, who took to her fourth husband George Earl of Shrewsbury. This letter, though on trifling subjects, will serve somewhat to illustrate her extraordinary character, some account of which is given in the introduction. It was probably written in 1577, when the Earl was engaged in a dispute with Sir John Zouch about his lead mines in Derbyshire; I have therefore placed it at the end of that year.

† Albert de Gondy, Count, and afterwards Duke, de Retz, and Marechal of France. He had been sent to Elizabeth by

Chamber of Presence, and delivered his message to her Majesty, with the King's letter. I hear that the King sendeth him hither to have licence to have access to the Scotch Queen, and from her to go into Scotland, and that the King's letter is only to that end ; howbeit I hear her Majesty as yet hath denied him, but whether he shall obtain leave or not hereafter I cannot tell ; but I wish that your Lordship would have every thing in such order as you would desire, lest he should come of a sudden, as this other did who is now with your Lordship's charge from the Duke of Ayscote,* whereof, I never understood till he was gone : Mr. Secretary Wilson's man, who is gone with him, is his chiefest secretary, and held to be a wise fellow : I was but two days here in town, following the matter of the Burnells, in which time this fellow was dispatched, and so could not give your Lordship notice thereof. For this other, Mons. Gondy, he seemeth to be a man of great account and port, and was very richly apparelled in jewels this other day at the Court ; and, if he should get leave, it would be looked for that his entertainment should be very great ; and I think that there will some other gentleman be sent hence with him down, if he go.

On May Day I saw her Majesty, and it pleased

Charles IX. five years before, to palliate that horrible stroke of policy the massacre of St. Bartholomew, of which himself had been one of the advisers.

* This can mean no other than the Duke of Arschot and Aremberg, a little sovereign of the Austrian Netherlands.

her to speak to me very graciously. In the morning, about eight o'clock, I happened to walk in the Tiltyard, under the gallery where her Majesty useth to stand to see the running at tilt ; where by chance she was, and, looking out of the window, my eye was full towards her, she shewed to be greatly ashamed thereof, for that she was unready, and in her nightstuff ; so when she saw me at after dinner, as she went to walk, she gave me a great fillip on the forehead, and told my Lord Chamberlain, who was the next to her, how I had seen her that morning, and how much ashamed thereof she was. And, after, I presented unto her the remembrance of your Lordship's and my Ladyship's bounden duty and service ; and said that you both thought yourselves most bounden to her for her most gracious dealing towards your daughter, my Lady of Lennox ; and that you assuredly trusted in the continuance of her favourable goodness to her and her daughter. And she answered that she always found you more thankful than she gave cause ; and so without saying anything more thereof, asked of both your healths ; and so went on, and spake to others.

My Lord of Leicester threateneth to come to Buxton this summer. If it would please your Lordship in your next letters to write something thereof to him, I think that he would take it in very good part, and I imagine it would neither much further his coming or tarrying. The parliament is not thought to hold this May. It is thought her Majesty will go in progress to Norfolk this year,

but there is no certain determination thereof as yet. And thus I most humbly beseech your Lordship's daily blessing, with my wonted prayer for your Lordship's long continuance in all honour, and most perfect health.

Charing Cross, this third day of May, 1578.

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient
loving son,

GILBERT TALBOT.

On Monday or Tuesday next her Majesty goeth to my Lord Compton's house at Tottenham; and so to my Lord Treasurer at Theobalds, and there tarrieth three or four days; and thence to Mr. Bashe's house; and so to Wanstead, and there four or five days.*

There are two Friesland horses, of a reasonable price for their goodness: I have promised the fellow for them £33: I think them especial good for my Ladyship's coach: I will send them down, and if your Lordship like them will repay Baldwin the money again.

To my Lord my father.

* Sir Henry Compton, Knight, lately created Lord Compton. Edward Bashe, or Baeshe, Esquire; Surveyor General of the Navy under Henry VIII. and the three succeeding monarchs. This gentleman was seated at Stansted Abbot in Hertfordshire; which parish still retains several memorials of his beneficence, and his hospitality is recorded by Fuller, and others. His family remained at that place till 1676, when Sir Ralph Bashe was driven by necessity to sell the small remnant of an estate which had been almost ruined in the civil wars, to a Mr. Field, whose descendants still possess it — Wansted was at this time a seat of Leicester's, who had purchased it in the preceding year of Lord Rich. After the Earl's death his widow sold it to Sir George Carew.

No. CXXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 245.)

THE BISHOP OF CARLISLE
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable my very good Lord,
My duty most humbly to your good Lordship re-
membered. As, for your Lordship's singular good-
ness divers ways to me shewed, I will ever think
myself so much beholding unto your Lordship that
no part thereof can by me be any ways requited,
so I do account amongst the greatest your Lord-
ship's good turns your Lordship's honourable late
supportation of my credit with my special good
Lord, my Lord of Leicester, (unto whom I am so
singularly beholding, as your Lordship can wit-
ness) against the lewd and shameless malice and
slander of some very evil disposed persons; for
the which I can do no more but give your Lord-
ship's my most humble and hearty thanks; have
your Honour in continual remembrance in mine ear-
nest prayers: and evermore reckon myself to be
your Lordship's most bounden at commandment
for the same. It were too tedious to report unto
your Lordship the manner of my abusing herein,
and I think not so needful at this present,* other
order being taken by me heretofore for delivering
the same unto your Lordship which I doubt not
have, according to my direction, been performed.
In few words, it was a slander devised without
any ground.

The occurrence which I have lately received
out of Scotland is that the parliament is begun,

and, by this, almost finished. It began the 10th of this instant holden in the King's name, in the great hall in the Castle of Sterling, the King present in person. The Earl of Angus bare the crown before him, the Earl of Erroll the sceptre, and the Earl of Mar the sword. The parliament sitting, the Earl of Montrose, and the Lord Lindsey, came from Edinburgh in commission from the Earls of Athol, Argyle, Caithness, and others of the nobility, declaring unto the King, and the rest present in parliament, that if his Grace would hold his parliament in the Towlbuith of Sterling, they would repair thither as dutiful subjects; but they would not enter into the Castle of Sterling, because it was no free place, nor parliaments were accustomed beforetime to be holden there, but either in the town of Sterling, or other the King's free boroughs. This commission, being two several times proposed, it was neither time accepted of the parliament, but refused. Then the Earl of Montrose, and Lord Lindsey stood up, and protested that nothing done at that time should be prejudicial to the rest of the nobility of the realm which were absent, nor to themselves, nor their heirs, because it was no free parliament; for which words they were both committed to ward within their lodgings in the town of Sterling, where they continued without further liberty the 21st of this instant. The King hath chosen in the parliament his secret and privy council; and certain to hear and determine certain articles, which

therefore are called the **Lords of the Articles**:* the names of the Privy Council are the Earls of Morton, Argyle, Lennox, Eglintown, Rothes, Buchan, and Glencairn; the Lords of Ruthven, Boyd, Ochiltree, and Cathcart; the abbots of Driborough and Cambuskenneth.* The Lords of the Articles; the Earls of Morton, Angus, Mar, Lennox, and Buchan; the Lords of Ruthven, Boyd, and Ochiltree; the Bishops of St. Andrew's, Glasgow, Murray, and Orkney; the Abbots of Dryburgh and Cambuskenneth, Culross and Glenbuis; the commissioners of the burroughs of Edinburgh, Aberdeen, St. Johnston, Glasgow and Sterling. The Lords of the Articles have thought it good to restore the Lord Hume to his honour, possession, titles and offices.

It is thought that the variance amongst the nobility there will be compounded, for the most

* The Lords of the Articles composed a council which took cognizance of all matters intended to be brought before Parliament. They were a kind of national grand jury: No motion for a new law could be made without their previous sanction, and they possessed the extraordinary and powerful right of giving a decisive negative in the first instance. The constitution of this remarkable assembly hath been very imperfectly recorded. Even the inquisitive and accurate Dr. Robinson, who took great pains to elucidate it, leaves us in doubt whether the Lords of the Articles were elected by the King or the Parliament; "it is probable," says he, "that the King once had the sole right of nominating them." Another Scottish writer of reputation boldly and erroneously asserts that they were elected by the Parliament. This letter, however, expressly determines that they were, even at this late date, appointed by the King solely, who was under no restriction but the easy one of choosing them from members of the Parliament.

* Dryburgh, in Cambuskenneth.

part, at this parliament, for that the greater part of the nobility are present there ; to wit, the Earls of Morton, Angus, Errol, Mar, Lennox, Eglington, Rothues, Buchan, Glencairn, and Bothwell ; the Lords Ruthven, Boyd, Salton, Jester, Somerville, Borthwick, Ochiltrie and Cathcart ; the Bishops of St. Andrews, Murray, Glasgow, and Orkney, with others of the nobility ; so that they, and their assistants, are able to withstand all resistance which can be made against them, or that which shall be established in Parliament. All great and weighty matters that are in debate in the Parliament are thought wholly to be directed by the advice of the Earl of Morton,* who is, at this present, in good credit with the King, and his secret council. The King hath written to the Wardens of the East, West, and Middle Marches, to appear before him and his council the 26th of this instant, to receive orders for reformation of such attempts as have been committed within their several charges. My Lord Herris is written unto to be at Sterling shortly, whose friends give out that he is crazed, not well able to travel at this present. The Queen's Majesty's ambassador is, at this present, and has been the most part of this Parliament at Sterling ; where he hath daily access unto the King's person, and very good entertainment. These came to my hands this present day ; as any thing else shall come to my knowledge I will not fail to certify

* This Parliament was held soon after the family of Erskine had given up the young King to Morton, who now kept him in a kind of captivity in the Castle of Sterling. It was followed by the rising of Argyle, Athol, &c. (See note on No. CXXI.)

your Lordship with all speed I may. Even so, with my continual hearty prayers unto God for your honour, I most humbly take my leave.

Rose, this 25th day of July, 1578.

Your good Lordship's most assuredly at
your commandment, in Christ Jesu,

JO. CARLISLE.*

To the right honourable my very good Lord, the Earl of Shrewsbury, one of the Lords of her Majesty's most honourable Privy Council, at Sheffield.

No. CXXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 249.)

THE BISHOP OF CARLISLE
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable my very good Lord,
I do not doubt but my letters which I wrote lately unto your Lordship of Scotch affairs are coming unto your Lordship's hands, since which time I have received letters thence confirming the same;

* John Mey. This Prelate was probably of very low extraction, and we have little information of his life or character, except that he was a person of a mean and avaricious disposition, a report which certain passages in his letters seem to justify. He was chosen Master of Catherine Hall in Cambridge in 1560; Vice-chancellor of that University in 1570; and, on the 29th of September, 1577, was consecrated Bishop of Carlisle; which last promotion he appears to have owed entirely to the interest of the Earl of Shrewsbury. He died at the Rose Castle, February 15, 1597, probably of the plague, with which Carlisle and its neighbourhood were then terribly visited, for he was buried within a few hours after his decease. He is said in Vinc. 131, in Bib. Coll. Arm. to have died in April, 1598. He left a son, John, whose daughter Elizabeth married John Sedgewicke of Wisbich in the Isle of Ely in Cambridgeshire, and had by him two sons, Edward and William, who, with their father, were living in 1619.

and, besides, that the Earl Montrose, who was committed to ward, together with the Lord Lindsey, is lately departed from Sterling without licence, which causeth fear of troubles to arise thereby. The Earl of Argyle, being appointed one of the ordinary council, was sent for by the King and his council, but it is doubted he will not make his repair thither. Sundry men of credit have been called to the council, to be dealt with for their advices and aid ; some dissemble not their affections to desire the fire begun to be kindled to break into flame ; some show themselves doubtful, praying to be spared until their service may be needful ; and others refuse directly to deal in that action ; some give good words, and hope is conceived of their good meaning. It is feared that this diversity of affections will breed troublesome attempts. The King hath sent to Edinburgh to raise 200 shot. The Lords Maxwell, Herris, and the Wardens of the Marches, are sent for, that order may be taken with the borderers.

I think by this time the Parliament is finished ; it was certified me, in the time of the sitting, that it would be dissolved about the 26th of this instant. The acts passed, which are come to my hands, are the confirmation of the acceptance of the government in the King's person ; the discharge of the Earl Morton for all things in the office of his late regency, resigned to the King ; for the delivery of the Castle of Edinburgh, the ordnance, munition, jewels, household stuff, by the Earl Morton to the Master of Mar, Alexander Erskine ; the election of

a new council ; the confirmation of the King's grant of the Earldom of Lennox to the Bishop of Catness ; the discharge, and approbation, of the Earl of Mar and his friends in the custody of the King. The names of the King's ordinary council established by Parliament, the Earls Morton, Argyle, Lennox, Rothes, Eglington, Glencairn, Buchan ; Lords Ruthven, Cathcart, Ochiltree, Abbots Driburgh, Cambuskenneth :* Officers of the ordinary council, when they are present ; Athol, Lord Chancellor ; Ruthen, Lord Treasurer ; Tullibarn, Comptroller ; Dunfermling, Secretary ; Mr. George Buchanan, Privy Seal ; Mr. Balandine, Justice Clerk ; Mr. James Magill, Clerk Register. What else I shall hereafter hear I will not keep from your Lordship, but dispatch it with all speed, if it be worthy the certifying. Even so, most humbly commanding my duty and service unto your good Lordship in my hearty and earnest prayers unto God for your Honour, I commend the same unto his mercy in Christ Jesu.

Rose, this 30th day of July, 1578.

Your good Lordship's most assuredly at commandment in Christ,

JO. CARLISLE.

To the right honourable my very good Lord, the Earl of Shrewsbury, one of the Lords of her Majesty's most honourable Privy Council, at Sheffield, with speed.

* The Abbots of Dryburgh and Cambuskenneth, cadets of the house of Erskine, with the famous Buchanan, who is likewise mentioned here, and Peter Young, had the principal charge of James's education, under the Earl of Mar, and his brother, Alexander Erskine.

No. CXXVI.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO THE QUEEN.

It may please your most excellent Majesty,
UPON Tuesday last in the morning, about seven
o'clock, Monsieur de Quissey came hither to me ;
and told me that hearing, as he was to pass through
London, I was come bither from the Court, he
would acquaint me with his negociation ; for that he
doubted that the messenger sent from Mr. Walsing-
ham, since his coming from Monsieur, was not come
to your Majesty before my coming from the Court.
The substance of his speech consisted of two parts ;
the one, that Monsieur dealt with such sincerity in
the matter of the marriage as it rested in your
Majesty to direct of him therein as should please
yourself ; the other, that he would be directed by
your Majesty in his actions in the Low Countries ;
hoping that in both these your Majesty would have
such respect to his honour and state as the great
affection which he bare to your person did deserve.
He made a long discourse of the hard dealings
that had been divers times used towards Monsieur
in France ; and of the jealousies that from time to
time were put into the heads of his mother, and
brother, by personages of great quality, that sought
their own greatness by his hindrance. He also
declared that Monsieur by these occasions was
necessarily detained from shewing himself to be
himself ; but, being now in free place, and at his
full liberty, he would make his value and resolute

mind known to all the world : and so concluded how necessary it was for him to seek greatness abroad, to continue thereby his greatness and surety at home ; and therefore was come into the Low Countries to be directed wholly by your Majesty, where he might receive, and follow your directions, without the stay or let of any other person, which he would do with as great sincerity as could be required. He did not directly say that Monsieur looked to be made great, either by his marriage with you, or by his actions in the Low Countries, but surely his whole discourse was often-times intermingled with such speeches as I might certainly gather that Monsieur's meaning was to be great by the one of these means, or by both ; and that it were a dishonour to him, and a peril, to lack both, and so return home worse than he came forth. This was the substance of his speech to me, which I thought my duty to declare to your Majesty as briefly as I could. And now, remembering your Majesty's pleasure to be that upon all occasions I should be bold to write to you my opinion, I thought it my duty upon this occasion to write somewhat, humbly beseeching your Majesty to accept my plain and true meaning therein.

To enter into this matter I must first lay this foundation, which I think to be as sure as man can lay ; that Monsieur hath determined to seek to make himself great, either by the marriage of your Majesty, or by the possession of the Low Countries, or by both ; and that the French King and Queen Mother, to deliver him out of France, will,

by all the possible means that may, help to further and advance his greatness in this sort, for their own benefit, quiet and surety, and the avoiding of all fires, troubles, and perils, at home. And if Monsieur, by your Majesty be put from his hope in both these, and no sure peace concluded between the King of Spain and the States, then will he turn over all his forces to aid Don John, and seek his greatness and surety by martial actions that way, and by the friendship of the King of Spain, rather than with dishonour and peril to return home in worse case than he came forth ; wherein, also, or in any other action abroad, there is no doubt but his mother and brother will further him what they may, to keep him occupied abroad, and thereby to avoid the perils at home. These foundations being thus laid, it is fit to consider of the commodities and incommodities of every of them ; that is to say, of the marriage ; of the alienation of the Low Countries ; and of the French assisting of Don John.

Touching the marriage (if your Majesty in your own heart can like of it, which I leave to God and you) I find these commodities to follow. Your alliance with the house of France ; whereby (besides all likelihood that the French King will not attempt any thing to the prejudice of you and his brother) you shall be assured, by yourself and your husband, to have such a party in France as the French King shall not be able, nor shall not dare, to attempt directly or indirectly any thing against you. You shall, by yourself, and your husband,

be able to assure the Protestants of France from peril of massacre by the Papists, and the King from any perilous action by them ; and so, by your means, keep the King and his people in unity and Christian peace. You shall take away, and suppress, all practise for competition,* for Popery, or any other seditious cause, at home or abroad ; and so shall, at home and abroad, assure your person, and your state, from all perils that by man's judgment might grow any ways to you by France. You shall, also, by the help of your husband, be able to compel the King of Spain to take reasonable conditions of his subjects in the Low Countries, and the States to take reasonable conditions of their King, so as he may have that which before God and man doth justly belong to him, and they may enjoy their liberties, freedoms, and all other things that are fit for their quiet and surety, in bodies, goods, consciences, and lives ; whereby you shall avoid great effusion of christian blood, and shall have the honour and reward, due in this world and by God, to so gracious, godly, and christian actions. And herewith, for the more surety of all persons and matters, yourself may have in your own hands some maritime port, to be by you kept, at the charge of the King of Spain ; and your husband may have some frontier towns in like sort ; and both to be continued for such a number of years as may bring a settling of surety to all respects ; by which means you shall also be

* Competition for the succession to the Crown of England : alluding to the pretensions of the Queen of Scots.

delivered from perils, at home and abroad, that may grow from the King of Spain. And if you like not of this course in dealing for the Low Countries, you may join with your husband, and so, between you, attempt to possess the whole Low Countries, and draw the same to the Crown of England if you have any child by him; or, if you have none, to divide them between the realms of England and France as shall be meetest for either; but, to be plain with your Majesty, I do not think this course to be so just, so godly, so honourable, nor, when it is looked into the bottom, so sure for you and your State as the other, although at the first sight it doth perhaps carry in shew some plausibility. It is also most likely, and a matter certainly to be expected, that if God will incline your heart to marriage, he will also bless you with children; whereby both you, for your time, shall be settled in the chair of surety, and all matters that might be kindled by mischievous fires shall go away in the smoke, *et erunt cogitationes malorum sicut somnia*; and, by the leaving behind you of a successor of your own body, you shall have surety and quiet to your realm; you shall avoid christian bloodshed, like to grow to civil wars; you shall disburden your conscience; you shall receive at God's hand your just desert for so godly a care; and your fame shall extend upon the earth. So as, to be short, by your marriage you shall give law to France, Spaiu, the Low Countries, England, Scotland, and, in effect, to all Christendom; you shall settle your state surely at home; you shall

be strongly friended abroad ; you shall be in estimation over all the world ; you shall have a husband as a servant, and defender of all your causes present ; you shall be like to have a child that shall be feared to be a revenge hereafter of all your injuries, and to settle your kingdom in your posterity ; you shall be like a serpent in the sight of the evil, and like a dove in the sight of the good ; you shall be the peace-maker to all Christendom ; your fame shall exceed all other Princes that ever were in Europe ; and God will bless you, as his own chosen vessel, both in this world and in the world to come ; which are the commodities that are like to grow by your marriage at this present. The incommodes which may grow for lack of your marriage are fittest to be left to be by your Majesty considered by their contraries ; whereby, and by the knowledge of your own heart, you may better judge of them ; and are such as my heart trembleth to think of them, and I pray God I may never live to see them.

The incommodes, dangers, and difficulties, that have been remembered might grow by your marriage are these.

1. Your own mislike to marriage, which might breed a discontented life hereafter.
2. The difficulty of the choice of a person that might in all respects content you mind.
3. The danger that a foreign Prince might, with time, and by degrees, bring this realm to his own possession, being your husband.
4. The danger that if your husband should

come to be a King of a foreign country, necessity would call him to his own from yours, and keep you in your own from him ; and so, by absence, the comfort expected by marriage, should lack.

5. The danger that if you should have but one son by him, he should be heir to both kingdoms; and then would be himself in the greatest, and rule the other by a Viceroy, which England cannot bear.

6. The difficulty of religion.

The charge that should grow to the realm by the maintenance of your husband.

The general mislike that Englishmen have to be governed by a stranger.

9. The danger of your person if your husband should but fraudulently seek you first, to possess, by treason, another after.

To all which such answers have also been remembered as follows.

The first and second of these receive not the counsel of others, but must be directed by yourself ; whereby you are to follow only the council of your own heart, whereunto all men must leave you ; for it is the judgment of your own heart that may make that ill to you which no other can say to be but good of itself, if your heart can like of it.

The third is a peril that must have a long time of drift ere it can come to pass ; and, indeed, can never take effect if God take not all senses away both from you and all the states of your realm ; and therefore a peril in talk but no peril in matter,

as appeared by the King of Spain married to Queen Mary.

The fourth is not yet in this man, neither doth any know that it ever shall be ; and therefore no peril, but accidental. But, if it did fall out indeed, that he should be a King of himself, and thereby his own country require his presence, and your country require your presence, yet it is not therefore necessary that you should be always absent the one from the other ; for, as by the amity of both kingdoms, both shall remain in the greater surety, so, by that occasion, and the vicinity of them, you may have the better cause to be often together without danger to either of you ; as appeared by King Philip, who came divers times to Queen Mary, and remained with her certain months, even in his greatest times of war with the French King.

The fifth seemeth to bring rather honour than peril, and yet it is but a supposition, and no matter certain ; for it is a hard case to make an assignment that you shall have a child, and but an only child ; and yet, if it should so fall out, an Englishman born in England, and King thereof, (born in his own realm) should also be King of France, as heretofore with great honour hath been ; and it should not be that a Frenchman born in France, King thereof, should also be King of England, which never was before ; and so, reducing this matter to the example that hath been, it will be honour, and not peril, that shall grow thereby.

The sixth has always been answered, that the

exercise of his religion should, so long as he should continue it, be private to himself, and a few of his own nation, without admitting any Englishman to it ; and he should also accompany you to the exercise of your religion, in convenient times ; which can bring no peril to your person, or state ; nor hath been thought so intolerable as it should break the marriage, but only by such as picked quarrel rather to your marriage than to religion, whereof the world has had good proof.

The seventh shall rather bring gain than charge; for he has a great patrimony of his own to spend here. The example appears by King Philip.

The eighth does not carry a truth; for the realm is to be governed as it was before, and so was in the time of King Philip ; and then the people shall have no cause to mislike, but rather a great cause of liking ; when both your person, your realm, and all your people, shall by this means be assured from all dangers.

The ninth inferreth a treasonable dealing, not to be thought of by a Christian Prince, much less to be executed ; and it carries no reasonable sense with it, that a Christian Prince, possessed of your godly, virtuous, wise, beautiful, and peerless person, and of all your kingdoms therewith, should have in his heart to be by treason delivered of you, and that he hath by you, to seek to get the same again by another person so far inferior to you ; and therefore of a Christian Prince I dare not have any such thought, and he that thinketh of this can think of any thing that he thinketh can hinder your

marriage. And so I leave to your Majesty to consider, at your pleasure, of the commodities and incommodities of your marriage, and of the incommodities that are like to come if you marry not.

Touching the alienating of the Low Countries to the French, the incommodities are these:—the untying of the whole into one Prince's hands, which being divided, either party has been able to match the other, and so, by their division, the realm of England has never lacked a friend of the one; which has been a principal stay and surety to England; and by untying of both will be a manifest and present danger and peril. The great forces, both by land and sea, that the French shall have when they shall possess both; whereby the French may attempt what they will, and shall have power to execute their will. The great danger that may grow to all Europe by the greatness of the French. The peril that may grow in particular to your Majesty by the French maintenance of competition, Popery, faction, and other civil divisions within the realm, and by withdrawing of Scotland from your Majesty's devotion. The disturbing of all your traffic; and imposing thereupon of all taxes, at the pleasure of the French. The stop of vent of all your inward commodities, and the maintaining of your people that shall lack work. The bringing of the realm into a perpetual servitude of tribute, or other worse matter. Which discommodities, how they may be encountered with any one commodity I do not see.

By the joining of Monsieur to Don John, and no

sure peace concluded between the King of Spain and the states, I see no commodity to grow, but these incommodities manifestly to ensue. Either the whole suppressing of the Low Countries by the Spanish tyranny, and thereby your Majesty to be subject to many of the perils before repeated in the case of France, both for your person, realm, and traffic, or else your Majesty to make yourself the head of the war, and so to enter into that which my simple head sees no possibility for you to maintain, nor knows no way how to bring you out of it; which two generalities have so many particular perils depending on them, as neither I can think of all, neither is it fit (for tediousness) to trouble you with those I think of, seeing your Majesty doth better know them, and can deeplier judge of them than I can think. What may be done to procure a sure peace between the King and the States I know not; seeing I see such difidence on both sides, and no likelihood that the States will either yield to reasonable conditions, or have any disposition to any reasonable peace. But, if there might be such a peace made as in honour, truth, justice, and conscience, were fit both for the King and the subjects, before God and man, and sufficient assurance of the continuance thereof, then do I surely think that many of the perils before rehearsed might be avoided for the time; but if no such peace be made, then, of necessity, the States, being not able to defend themselves, must cast themselves either into your de-

fence, or into the defence of France ; whereupon depend the perils before written.

Thus have I been bold to touch, at this time, such matters as true and faithful duty do bind me to put your Majesty in remembrance of : most humbly beseeching your Majesty that (seeing it is now time, and more than time, that all men should shake off particular respects, and yield themselves wholly to that which is best for your service, the surety of your person, and the benefit of your realm) you will pardon me at this present for the delivering to you by writing that which in substance I have often before spoken ; and, having by absence the commodity of speech taken from me, am forced, for the faithful discharge of my duty, to deliver it in writing ; with my most humble prayer to God that he may long preserve your Majesty to your own heart's contention, and to put that into your heart to do that which shall be most for his glory, and for your Majesty's honour and surety.

From Bermondsey,* the 28th of Aug., 1578.

Your Majesty's most humble and faithful
subject and servant,

T. SUSSEX.

To the Queen's most excellent Majesty.

* The Earl inhabited a magnificent mansion there, which had been built by Sir Thomas Pope, soon after the Reformation, upon the site of the old conventual church.

No. CXXVII.

(Howard Papers, August 30, 1758, at Stamford.)

RICHARD TOPCLIFFE
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

After my duty, &c.

SINCE I did wait upon your good Lordship and after departed from Mr. Gilbert Talbot at Killingworth, I have been trained by little and little onward this progress thus far now homewards ; and, because I would gladly wait upon your Lordship and my Lady in such convenient place, and at such time, as shall best please you, I thought my duty to trouble your Lordship in mean time with my scribbling some such news as partly you know, and partly not like to know but by such wayfarers ; and somewhat shall keep in store, having in charge from her Majesty to your good Lordship, all tending towards her gracious favour and affiance in your Lordship of whom her Highness saith she hath daily most faithful trial, which the Lord knows I joy at, next some comfort I received of her for myself that must ever lie nearest my own heart.

The principal news is her Majesty's good health, and well liking her journey since my Lord's return ; for whose Lordship's health her Majesty saith she will thank you and my Lady. I never did see her Majesty better received by two countries in one journey than Suffolk and Norfolk now ; Suffolk of gentlemen, and Norfolk of the meaner sort ; with exceeding joy to themselves, and wellliking to her Majesty. Great entertainment at

the Master of the Rolls ;* greater at Kenninghale ;† and exceeding of all sorts at Norwich. The next good news (but in account the highest) her Majesty hath served God with great zeal and comfortable examples; for by her Council two notorious Papists, young Rookwood‡ (the Master of Ewston Hall, where her Majesty did lie upon Sunday now a fortnight) and one Downs a gentleman were both committed, the one to the town prison at Norwich, the other to the country prison there, for obstinate Papistry ; and seven more gentlemen of worship were committed to several houses in Norwich as prisoners ; two of the Lovells, another Downs, one Beningfield, one Parry, and two others not worth memory, for badness of belief.

This Rookwood is a Papist of kind newly crept out of his late wardship. Her Majesty, by some means I know not, was lodged at his house, Ewston, far unmeet for her Highness, but fitter for the blackguard ; nevertheless (the gentleman brought into her Majesty's presence by like device) her excellent Majesty gave to Rookwood ordinary

* Sir William Cordell, then Master of the Rolls, who was seated at Long Melford in Suffolk. His estate there, with its fine old house, belonged not many years since to Sir Cordell Firebrace, Bart. his heir ; whose widow remarried with William Campbell, Esq., who, after her death, in 1780, sold them to Sir Henry Parker, Bart.

† Kenninghale in Norfolk, where Thomas third Duke of Norfolk built a noble palace, which was at this time in the possession of the Duke his grandson. This house was pulled and sold piecemeal, at the beginning of the grand rebellion.

‡ Probably the same Rookwood who suffered death in 1605 for his concern in the Gunpowder Plot, and who was styled in his indictment " Ambrose Rookwood, of Staningfield in Suffolk.

thanks for his bad house, and her fair hand to kiss; after which it was braved at. But my Lord Chamberlain, nobly and gravely understanding that Rookwood was excommunicated for Papistry, called him before him ; demanded of him how he durst presume to attempt her real presence, he, unfit to accompany any Christian person ; forthwith said he was fitter for a pair of stocks ; commanded him out of the Court, and yet to attend her Council's pleasure ; and at Norwich he was committed. And, to decipher the gentleman to the full ; a piece of plate being missed in the Court, and searched for in his hay house, in the hay rick such an image of our Lady was there found, as for greatness, for gayness, and workmanship, I did never see a match ; and, after a sort of country dances ended, in her Majesty's sight the idol was set behind the people, who avoided. She rather seemed a beast raised up on a sudden from hell by conjuring, than the picture for whom it had been so often and long abused. Her Majesty commanded it to the fire, which in her sight by the country folks was quickly done, to her content, and unspeakable joy of every one but some one or two who had sucked of the idol's poisoned milk.

Shortly after, a great sort of good preachers, who had long commanded to silence for a little niceness, were licenced, and again commanded to preach, a greater and more universal joy to the countries, and the most of the Court, than the disgrace of the Papists ; and the gentlemen of those parts, being great and hot Protestants (almost be-

fore by policy discredited and disgraced) were greatly countenanced.

I was so happy lately, among other good graces, that her Majesty did tell me of sundry lewd Popish beasts that have resorted to Buxton from these countries in the south since my Lord did come from thence. Her Highness doubteth not but you regard them well enough; amongst whom there is a detestable Popish priest, one Durham, or Durande, as I remember at the bath, or lurking in those parts after the ladies. Mr. Secretary hath written to your Lordship as he said, in this his letter hereinlosed, to wish your Lordship to apprehend him; to examine him of his coming to the church; and, upon the least or lightest occasion, to commit him, and to certify the Lords thereof; and they mean to send for him, as Mr. Secretary said upon further causes. Hereof he did give me charge to signify your Lordship besides his letter. It had come to your Lordship's hands ere now, but that my best nag by chance did break his leg, wherefore I trust your Lordship will pardon me.

Your Lordship's countenancing me about Morton is well taken of her Majesty; and surely, my good Lord I see well if your Lordship did scale the nest of Papists that this progress time hath thither shrunk out of these quarters it would not offend the Highest, and that can I well ascertain your Lordship by such speech as I heard, and reckons my duty to yourself to tell you. You may find twenty occasions, and none better than if you

can learn that they come not there to God's service ; for unworthy be they to receive any fruit of God's good blessing under your Lordship's rule (as that hath is) who will not serve God ; and shall in that infected place poison others with Papistry, and disobedience of her Majesty's laws. God knows how he and her Majesty would take it.

Of the good and valiant service of your countrymen your Lordship hath heard long since ; whereat there were 500 of the Spanish side slain, with loss of not past 80 English and Scotch ;* who most valiantly did knit together, and did often come to the sword hand to hand in sight of D. John, and received of none more praise than of Don John, and he offereth to them fair wars. It is true that the same morning, before they fought, Don John thought least to meet with the English or Scotch : but he warned his men to determine if they stumbled of the English and Scotch to prepare to fight ; but if not they were assured of victory without blood or stroke. He expected to have taken the Flemish camp tardy, and not to have seen an English face, but he failed. Don John is not able to put above 15,000 in the field, whereof 9000 are footmen and 6000 horse, but these be reckoned good. The States have over many men, and too few angels.

Casimir is come down your Lordship I think doth know ; and so I think you know of Mons. the French King's brother, being at Mons, in

* See a very particular account of this action in Camden.

Hainault, with his army near about him. First did come from him Mons. Bakevile, a Norman, a gallant English courteous, and accompanied with four or five of Monseigneur's youths; (such like they were and be well entertained and regarded) he was, in a sort, recommended from the King. Secondly, is come from the King, as I take it, Monseigneur Rambouillet,* whose brother is said is a lewd Cardinal at Rome, who not long past writ lewdly against her Majesty ; me seems his entertainment is not such as the other. Monseigneur the brother offereth, in speech and shew, himself and all his at her Majesty's devotion. My Lord Cobham hath been with him, and Mr. Secretary, at Mons. Their speed is yet unknown abroad, but like your Lordship may know it, and much more than I can write.

Champanie, who was with the States, and a great dealer here as Ambassador a year past, is found with some treachery meant towards the States, and is shut up. He is of the lewd great house of Granville, and the Cardinal's † brother. By great chance, and great occasion, Mr. H. Candish was at Brussels, to buy tents, and with him

* Nicholas d'Angennes, Marquis of Rambouillet. He waited on the Queen at Norwich on the 19th of this month, as had Bacqueville, from Monsieur, a few days before, at Long Melford.

† Cardinal Granville, a bitter enemy to the English. The Duchess of Parma, formerly Governess of the Netherlands, employed this prelate in the most important affairs, and his intolerable abuse of power under her was one of the first causes of the disaffection of those provinces to the Spanish government.

divers of the best sort of gentlemen, the day of the skirmish ; but his men did nobly. Of account I hear no more slain of our side but Bingham's two brothers, and my Lord Sand's brother. The skirmish endured maintained from eight in the morning till six in the night.

Your Lordship's ever,
RICHARD TOPCLIFFE.*

No. CXXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 267.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,
A FEW lines where the matter is not unpleasant may serve for a long letter. By letters which I received within these three hours at London, I am certainly

* Richard Topcliffe, representative of the ancient family of Topcliffe, of Somerby, in Lincolnshire. A visitation of that county, made in 1592, informs us that he was the eldest son of Robert Topcliffe, of Somerby, by Margaret, one of the daughters of Thomas Lord Borough : that he married Jane, daughter of Sir Edward Willoughby, of Wollaton, in Nottinghamshire ; and had issue Charles, his son and heir ; three sons, successively named John, who probably died infants, and a daughter, Susannah. A certain peculiar cast of character displayed in this gentleman's letters led me to suppose that I might probably collect some particulars of his history from the writers of his time. I can, however, only find that he was distinguished as a most implacable persecutor of the Roman Catholics, of which indeed we have here sufficient proof. Sir Anthony Standen, too, praising the Earl of Essex's agreeable manners, in a letter to Mr. Anthony Bacon, of the 3rd of March, 1593-4, in Dr. Birch's papers, says, "Contrary to our *Topcliffian* customs, he hath won more with words than others could do with racks." It appears likewise, in another letter in that collection, that *Topcliffizare*, in the quaint language of the court, signified to hunt a recusant. It appears by his letter in Vol. M. p. 184, that he got possession of, and lived in, the old family house of the Fitzherberts, at Padley, in Derbyshire.

advertised that Don John de Austria is dead of the plague,* and the Duke of Parma chosen Lieutenant. The report of the death of Sebastian, King of Portugal, and of two Kings of Fez, is true. A Cardinal, named Henry, of the age of 67, is to succeed, but he dare not take possession of the Crown until the Pope shall license him.†

From my house at Theobald's, 8th of October, 1578.

Your Lordship's assuredly,
W. BURGHLEY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of
England, and of her Majesty's Privy Council.*

No. CXXIX.

(Cecil Papers.)

Indorsed by Lord Burghley, "A prooff how the Cardinall HENRY
is rightful KING of Portygall, by the death of KING SE-
BASTIAN."

DON EMANUEL, being Duke of Beza, Lord of
Viseo, Great Constable of Portugal, Governor of

* He died on the 1st of this month, at his camp near Namur, in the 32nd year of his age, and in the height of his glory. Several historians ascribe his death to poison. Lord Burghley, in his notes of this reign (See *Murdin*) imputes it to a venereal infection.

† Sebastian, King of Portugal, who had lately undertaken a romantic expedition into Africa, to re-instate Muley Mahomet, the dethroned Emperor of Morocco, was killed at the battle of Alca-zar, on the 4th of August: Mnley Mahomet, too, was slain, and the usurper, his rival, died of a fever during the engagement. These were the two Kings of Fez to whom Lord Burghley alludes. Sebastian was succeeded by his great uncle, Henry, a Cardinal, who reigned but for two years, amidst continual disputes for the succession, which after his death was easily gained

the Lordship of Criste, brother-in-law to King John II., (because Lady Eleanor, the King's wife, was his own sister) was proclaimed King of Portugal the 25th of October, 1485 ; and married, the first time, with Lady Elizabeth, first wife to Prince Alphonso, his nephew, son to King Alphonso, who died in a town called Santaren, running on horseback ; and the same Lady Elizabeth was daughter unto King Ferdinand and Elizabeth, King and Queen of Spain. Awhile after the Prince John of Spain died without issue, (for Margaret, which went out of Flanders to marry with him, daughter to Philip Duke of Burgundy, went too late ; and after his decease she was Governess of Flanders) and he being dead, the King of Spain and his wife sent for King Emanuel and his wife for to be sworn Princes of Spain ; and, notwithstanding that the Queen was great with child, they went, and were sworn in the city of Toledo Princes of all Spain, with all their due ceremonies, in the year of our Lord, 1498. And so they went further, unto Saragossa, for to be sworn likewise ; and there she was brought abed : and she died in childbed, and the child's name was Don Michael ; and the people gave him a surname, *de las Pazes*; as if one should say that peace and concord should come to those two countries by him, which were in controversy and wars many

by Philip II. of Spain, in right of his wife Isabella, daughter of Emanuel, King of Portugal. See more of these matters in the next paper, which, though not strictly within the limits of my plan, I have ventured to insert because it contains many important points in the history of Spain and Portugal.

years before. This Don Michael, being sworn Prince in Spain and Portugal, died awhile after.

Afterward, the said King Emanuel married with his second wife, Lady Mary, sister to Lady Elizabeth, his first wife, and were married the 20th of March, 1500 ; and of her begat eight children, that is to say, six males and two females.

1. Prince John, who was after King of Portugal, and third of that name, was born the 6th of June, 1502.

2. Lady Elizabeth, who was born the 24th of October, 1503, and afterwards married with Charles, Emperor, the fifth of that name, anno 1526, and begat by her King Philip, now King of Spain, who was born the 1st of May, anno 1527.

3. The Lord Don Louis, who was born the 3rd of March, 1505 ; and he never married, but begot a child by an honest woman,* and was called El Senior Don Antonio, who died on this journey with the King Don Sebastian.

4. Lady Beatrice, who was born in anno 1506, and married with Charles, Duke of Savoy, and begat the Prince of Piedmont that now is.

5. Lord Ferdinand, who was born the 5th of June, 1507, and married with the daughter of the Earl of Marialva, and died without issue.

6. Lord Don Alfonso, who was born the 23rd of April, 1509 ; and in the year 1516 Pope Leo X. did name him a Cardinal, with the title of

* A gentlewoman, according to the French idiom ; from which language this paper was probably translated.

Bishop Zazitario Diacanus, Cardinal of Sancta Lucia, and died.

7. Lord Henrick, which at this present is King of Portugal, and was born the last of January, 1512; who also was created Cardinal; and so by this account he shall be 67 years old the last of January next.

8. Lord Edward, who was born the 7th of September, 1515, and was married with Lady Elizabeth, daughter to James Duke of Braganza, and sister to Lord Theodosius, father to the Duke of Braganza that now is: of her he begat three children, a male and two females. He was called Lord Edward, and was a gentleman of very good qualities, well beloved through all the realm, and died in Lisbon, in anno 1576. And of the two daughters, the eldest married Duke Prince of Palma, and by her he begat the Prince that now is alive; the younger married with the Duke of Braganza that now is, and by her he begat a child, now called Duke of Barcelles, and, being but eleven years old, went with the King Don Sebastian this journey, as a superior to his father's men, because his father was left very sick; and so is captive now in Africa.

So that it doth appear that King Emanuel was great grandfather to King Don Sebastian, now deceased; because King John the Third, being married with Lady Katherine, younger sister to Charles the Fifth, begat by her three sons and a daughter. The one died sworn Prince; the second died before he was sworn; and the third, being sworn Prince,

called Don John, married with Lady Joan, daughter to Charles the Fifth, and sister to King Philip of Spain that now is ; and of her he begat Prince Don Sebastian, now deceased, who was born the 20th of January, anno 1554, four months after his father's decease.

King Emanuel became to be a widower of the said Queen Mary anno 1517, and so married, the third time, the year following with Lady Eleanor sister to Charles the Fifth ; and of her he begat Lady Mary, who was sure by promise to King Philip that now is, before he was married with Lady Mary, Queen of England : and for the same cause she did never yield to marriage afterward. After King Emanuel's decease, which was in December, 1521, the same Lady Eleanor married with Francis, first of that name, King of France.

And it is to be noted that about 200 years ago in the reign of King John, the first of that name there was a law made called *mental** law, of the nature of *salique* law in France ; and by that law it was determined that a woman shall not be an inheritor, but the next kin, being a male. And so in Portugal there are lands and lordships which are sold with an exception of the same mental law ; and so, by this means, the lord of the land when he dieth may leave it to whom it shall please him, having no male issue lawfully begotten.

Notwithstanding this same law, being dead the first sworn Prince that King John begat by Lad

* Derived, no doubt, from the gross term, *menta*.

Katherine, his wife, sister to Charles the Fifth against the will of the best of the Council made a contract of marriage between Lady Mary, her daughter, and Philip, Prince of Spain, who is now King of the same ; and the covenant was, that if King John, her husband, had no male children between them, that the Prince's and her daughter's children, being males, should be inheritors to the Crown of Portugal. And so they were married in 1543, and begat Prince Charles, who died in prison, as all the world knows ; and if he were now alive, he had been King of Portugal at this time by virtue of the same contract ; and now, being dead, the Crown of Spain hath no more title to the Crown of Portugal. And so his death was a good turn to the Portugals, for they will rather be subject to a Moor King than to a Spaniard.

No. CXXX.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My good Lord,

THE Queen's Majesty hath given me licence, for the better furthering of my health, to go into the country till Saturday. I was at Westminster, hoping to have met your Lordship there ; and, missing of you, I am bold to trouble you with these few lines.

Her Majesty hath dealt with me very earnestly, to be contented that the matter between my Lord

North * and me might be ended, to her contentation, and to my honour; and, although I have desired her Majesty to forbear it, yet, finding her so desirous of it, I was in fine contented to refer it to her Majesty, to be ended with such provision for my honour as might be to my satisfaction; which her Majesty hath promised, and said, at your coming, she would deal with your Lordship therein. My request to you is that I may be as well dealt with as others, either of my quality, or my inferiors; and so her Majesty may command of me as far as of any other. It hath been told me he is sent for to come to the Court. If it so be before he be made to know his fault, truly I cannot yield to be bragged with him in that place; because himself has said he will be stronger in the Court, and if I offer any thing to him it should be good for me to come strong; and the open actions of others have given me cause to credit his brags. Therefore, my Lord, to be plain with you, if he come to the Court before he be made to know his fault, I will either forbear to come there, or, if I do come, I will come in such sort as I will not fear partakers against me; which perhaps may offend her Majesty, whereof I would be very sorry, and yet my honour driveth me to it.

* This nobleman was firmly attached to Leicester, and consequently could live on no very friendly terms with the Earl of Sussex; but there was a further cause for their enmity: North had accompanied the latter in his embassy to the Emperor Maximilian, merely to prevent, by various intrigues, Elizabeth's marriage with the Archduke Charles, which was the main purpose of the Earl's errand, and his favourite political object.

My paper is little ; your Lordship is wise ; and therefore I trust this shall suffice to your Lordship, as my good Lord, to understand my meaning ; and so I take my leave of your good Lordship.

From Barking, the 4th of November, 1578.

Your Lordship's most assured,

T. SUSSEX.

The words which my Lord North spake to the Queen, and what she thereupon said to myself, I heard with my own ears, which I must and will credit.

No. CXXXI.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My good Lord,

I do not desire that your Lordship should of yourself move any thing to the Queen's Majesty of my Lord North's matter, for indeed if her Majesty will forget it, I will be glad of it ; but if she doth either speak to your Lordship thereof, as she said she would, or that it come any ways in question before your Lordship, then I beseech your Lordship to consider of me as the cause deserveth. I have heard of great speeches of this matter in my absence, and it is gotten over through the whole realm what party will be made in this matter against me, whereby the world sees how willing some are to have a quarrel for any man's cause against me, the like whereof the best subject of the realm durst not have shewed in former ages. If I

had looked for this I could have been before hand in the beginning ; and, if another Greenwich breakfast be not meant upon a sudden, I neither am nor will be far behind at any time when it shall please the Queen's Majesty to be indifferent, as I trust she will be when she shall know how I have been used. The particulars of the speeches I do forbear until I speak with your Lordship, and hitherto I have forborne to deliver them to any person, but, when occasion shall serve me to utter them, I will bring forth a warrantable author for every tale.

I am sorry to hear your Lordship hath been ill used by lewd speeches ; and, truly, my Lord, whosoever they are, or whensoever it toucheth, I rest at your devotion, with heart and hand to stand by you as by myself, and upon all occasions to stick as near to you as your shirt is to your back ; and so I take my leave of your good Lordship.

From Newhall, the 5th of November, 1578.

Your Lordship's most assured,

T. SUSSEX.

No. CXXXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 279.)

JO. ALEYN TO THE BISHOP OF CARLISLE.

It may please your Lordship,

I HAVE sent two letters, one by one Davidson, (who signified unto me that your Lordship made him to stay all night with you) the other I sent by one Hobby Scot, who lodgeth at Carlisle, at Mr. Register's house, at this present, and will return

shortly ; I beseech your Lordship to write to me by him, for I long to hear from you whether you have received my letters, or not. The Lords here are grown to quietness, laying apart all private quarrels for a time ; and do convene on Monday next, for the establishment of these causes following. First, for the advancement of God's glory, and for better maintenance of the preachers of the Gospel, who now are slenderly provided for. Secondly, for the safe and sure guard and preservation of their chief earthly jewel, which is the goodly young imp * their King. Thirdly, for the increase of some good and godly laws, to be farther established for the commonwealth's cause. These three causes they most earnestly protest, each man to his power, to endeavour himself to advance ; and after the establishment thereof, then they will either agree, and pacify their private quarrels, or else they will do worse ; but there is great hope they have such ardent minds for the three causes first rehearsed that they will least account of those private quarrels.

My Lord of Morton lieth still at Dalkeith, and my Lord of Athol was lately with him, and did

* An obsolete term in gardening. To imp signified to graft, and young shoots or twigs fit to be grafted were called imps. It was afterwards, as in the passage before us, used figuratively, to denote a hopeful stripling, or youth just on the eve of puberty, and we frequently meet with it in that sense in our ancient poets, but it hath for many years past belonged separately to the younger parts of the Satanical family, and seems to have assumed that new acceptation soon after this time, for we shall presently find the Earl of Shrewsbury applying it as a term of reproach. See a letter of the 9th of November, 1585.

lodge there all night. My Lord of Athol, who was a notorious Papist, is now converted ; which grace he confesseth to have accrued unto him especially by hearing the word ; and upon Sunday next I think he meaneth to communicate at the general communion, which beginneth on Sunday next, and so continueth four Sundays together. The Lord Seaton, in open audience before the ecclesiastical senate, and general assembly of the clergy here, being required to make manifest his religion, said that he would subscribe to their articles, and receive the communion at this time ; but it is greatly doubted of him, he is so inconstant ; but the other is the constantest man in all this land.

All matters for the person which I did write of are safe as yet, until the assembly, the convention, and the parliament, shall be finished. I have sent, here inclosed, such occurrences as my Lord Ambassador received lately out of Flanders ; and thus, ceasing farther to trouble your Lordship for this time, my duty humbly remembered, I beseech God preserve your Lordship and all your's, in all your godly affairs.

From Edinburgh, this 5th of November, 1578.

Your Lordship's most humbly at commandment,
Jo. ALEYN.

*To the reverend father in God, my very good
Lord the Lord Bishop of Carlisle, at the
Rose Castle, give these with speed.*

No. CXXXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. P. fol. 915.)

THE BISHOP OF CARLISLE
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable, my very good Lord,
My duty in most humble wise premised ; it may
please your Honour to be advertised that lately I
received these enclosed out of Scotland, whereby
your Lordship may understand the present state of
of the affairs there. I was bold, in my last letters,
to move your Lordship to stand my good Lord
and friend, and, as opportunity should serve your
Honour, to write to my Lord of Leicester in my
behalf, which thing I most humbly beseech your
Honour not to forget. At this present there is
some suit made to her Majesty, by my Lord Admi-
ral, and Mr. Secretary Walsingham, for the re-
mission of my first fruits ; which her Majesty seems
the rather to tender for that her Highness is cre-
dibly informed that I was overcharged the last
year by hospitality, and relieving of the poor in
the time of the great dearth that we sustained in
this country ; and if my Lord of Leicester should
not favour this suit, I were utterly undone, for I
protest unto your Honour, before the living God,
that when my year's account was made at Michael-
mas last my expenses did surmount the year's reve-
nues of my Bishoprick £ 600. Sir Francis Wal-
singham (who earnestly wrote unto me in the be-
half of my Lord Admiral for the reversion of the
lease of Horne Castle to be made over to the

Queen's Majesty, according to her Highness's letters directed unto me, which your Honour saw about this time twelvemonth) hath lately given me good hope that I shall find this favour at her Majesty's hands ; and if my good Lord of Leicester stand my good Lord and friend therein, I make no doubt thereof.

I am further to pray and humbly beseech your Honor, that if the Parliament do hold, I may, the rather by your Honour's good word, be staid from going thither ; as well in respect of my necessary service in this barbarous country, whence I can hardly be spared, as in respect of my poverty, and want of ability to support the charges incident to that journey ; being also unprovided of parliament robes, &c. Good my Lord, pardon my boldness herein ; and so, commanding your Lordship to Almighty God in my daily prayers, I most humbly take my leave.

Rose, 3rd of December, 1578.
Your good Lordship's wholly at commandment,
Jo. CARLISLE.

No. CXXXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 287.)

GILBERT TALBOT AND HIS WIFE
TO THE EARL AND COUNTESS OF SHREWSBURY.

MY duty most humbly remembered, may it please your Honours, according as my Lord of Leicester willeth me so do I advertise him of every convenient messenger that I know passes unto your Honour, and so he promises, as his leisure will per-

mit, to write unto your Honours ; and this morning, telling him of a messenger, he promised to write if he could find any time ; and so he, sitting in the Star Chamber, did rise somewhat before the rest, and wrote this letter unto your Lordship. I have showed him the sundry commendations which your Honours have done unto him in your letters to me ; the which he taketh ever most thankfully and joyously as any man can do. This day, upon the Lord's rising in the Star Chamber, the arbitrators in Burnel's cause have appointed that on Wednesday next they will hear and determine it ; and, in the mean time, I will find means that my Lord of Leicester and my Lord Chief Justice shall be thoroughly acquainted with the Chiefest points on our side, and will travel, with all my endeavour, to bring it to a good end ; yet I am in great doubt that we shall lose all the land, for that they all, and my Lord of Leicester also is, fully resolved that it is so sufficiently assured unto the younger brother as it were directly against the laws of the realm to put it from him, and so my Lord of Leicester said unto me this morning. I cannot guess what end it will come to, but I would I had no greater discomfort in it than my Lord of Rutland's travel, and then I would be in better hope, although I think he labours earnestly for the younger brother. Mr. Solicitor doth promise me all care in the matter, and will be with us on Wednesday. The misery of the elder Burnell is such that, for remorse, I have relieved him two or three times, and must

pay the lawyer's fees of my own purse. God grant us a good end.

I think my Lord of Leicester has written unto your Lordship such news as is stirring; for myself I know none but such as are common. The Duke Casimir* departs hence tomorrow, and has yesterday taken his leave of her Majesty, who, as I hear, will give him, at his departure, two cups of gold, of several fashions, worth £300 apiece; there has been somewhat to do to bring her into it, and Mr. Secretary Walsingham bear the brunt thereof. On Sunday last this Duke was chosen one of the order of the Garter; and my Lord of Leicester gave him for a present a rich collar, and a George at it, and two other Georges besides, whereof one of them was an agate, a curious and rich piece. Also my Lord of Pembroke has sent Casimir from Wilton (where he is somewhat sick), a fair George, at a chain of gold, set with stones, which cost £100. My Lord of Leicester also has given him divers other things, as geldings, hawks and hounds, woodknives, falcons, horns, crossbows, and sundry pieces of broad cloth fit for hunting garments, both for winter and summer, for he delights greatly in hunting and can chase his winter deer very well. He killed a barren doe

* John Casimir, son of Frederick III., Elector Palatine, and brother to the reigning Elector, Lewis VI. This Prince had formerly made some faint proposals of marriage to Elizabeth. He came now to England to apologize for the ill success of a great army of Germans which he had commanded in the Netherlands in the last summer's campaign, at a heavy charge to the Queen. See more of him, and his family in succeeding papers.

with his piece this other day in Hyde Park, from amongst 300 other deer. Her Majesty continues her very good usage of Monsieur Simier,* and all his company, and he has conference with her three or four times a week, and she is the best disposed and pleasantest when she talketh with him (as by her gestures appeareth) that is possible.

The opinion of Monseigneur's coming still holds, and yet it is secretly bruted that he cannot take up so much money as he would, on such a sudden, and therefore will not come so soon. I cannot learn any thing more of Queen mother† her coming into England, yet some do think that she will come very suddenly, but, for my own part, I do not believe it. I had forgotten to write unto your Lordship before I wrote of Simier, that my Lord of Huntingdon goes with Casimir to Gravesend, and Sir Henry Sidney to Dover. The Frenchmen here, and the Spanish Ambassador doth very greatly repine at the entertainment of this Duke. My Lord of Leicester has been almost continually with him since his coming to London.

This day, in the Star Chamber, the Lords examined four messengers, such as are daily sent of errands from the Court, who are found, by counterfeiting of the Lord Chamberlain and the Secretary's hands, to have deceived the Queen above £3000 within these seven years, they and their con-

* M. de Simier, Monseigneur's agent for the marriage.

† Catherine de Medicis.

federates ; whereupon they must stand of the pillory at Westminster, at the Court Gates, and in Cheapside, on certain days appointed, and then have their ears cut off. On Thursday last, as my Lord Rich was riding in the streets, there was one Wyndham that stood in a door, and shot a dagge at him, thinking to have slain him ; but God provided so for my Lord Rich, that this Wyndham appointing his servant that morning to charge his dagge with two bullets, the fellow, doubting he meant to do some mischief with it, charged it only with powder and paper, and no bullet ; and so this Lord's life was thereby saved, for otherwise he had been slain. Wyndham was presently taken by my Lord Rich's men, and, being brought before the Council, confessed his intent, but the cause of his quarrel I know not ; but he is committed to the Tower. The same day, also, as Sir John Conway was going in the streets, Mr. Lodovic Greville came suddenly upon him, and came suddenly upon him, and struck him upon the head with a great cudgel, and felled him ; and, being down, struck at him with a sword, and, but for one of Sir John Conway's men, who warded the blow, he had cut off his legs ; yet he did hurt him somewhat on both his shins. The Council sent for Lodovic Greville, and have committed him to the Marshalsea. I am forced to trouble your Honours with these trifling matters,* for I know no greater.

My wife doth very well, I thank God, and is

* It should seem, by the light manner in which he speaks of these savage attacks, that they were not uncommon at that time.

an obedient patient, and liketh those easy things that are applied to her very well ; for the estate of her body, Mr. Julio told me that he had written it at length to your Ladyship. And thus most humbly we beseech your Honour's daily blessing, praying to Almighty God for your Honour's long continuance in all honour, most perfect health, and long life.

At your Honour's little house, near Charing Cross, this present Friday, late at night, the 13th of Feb., 1578.

Your Honour's most humble and obedient loving children,

GILBERT TALBOT.

MARY TALBOT.

To my Lord. My Lady.

No. CXXXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 291.)

RICHARD TOPCLIFFE
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

May it please your Lordship,
THAT as in haste I am forced to write, so must I shorten the same, and leave my duty much unperformed to your Lordship and my Lady which I omit until a fitter time, only this I thought good to trouble your Lordship with. This afternoon I called upon Mr. Clarentius, and had sight of that work he hath set out for the roof of your chamber besides your gallery ;* which as it shall exceed in

* Probably a ceiling in compartments of fret-work, according to the manner of that time, ornamented at the joints with the

rareness of device and beauty, so it is thought no two of any estate in England can be able, in honour, to reach to perform the like ; and how much more it is to be esteemed of I will not write of, until I may see it laid open to the eyes of the world. The doer oweth you much service, and he will perform it to you and yours.

It is like your Lordship is certified more likely than I can who shall succeed my late Lord Keeper,* but if voices should carry the office to any one, the worthiest of wisdom and conscience should have my voice. The likeliest, in the world's opinion, is Mr. Mildmay, and if not he, Mr. Solicitor ; other be wished, as affection serveth, yet

various quarterings of arms to which the Earl and Countess were entitled. Gilbert Talbot, in a letter to his father of the same date, misplaced in Vol. P. writes—"I received your Lordship's letter on Wednesday last, by the finisher, and according to your pleasure, have taken order that he shall have good glass to work, and a room in Shrewsbury house to lie in, and to work it; and after that he hath finished the glass, he may take in hand the mending of such rooms in that your Lordship's house, by roughcasting them and sealing them, as there shall be need of, and then the season will be better for that purpose than it is now. As for the arms in glass which your Lordship waiteth that Clarentius, the herald, did bespeak, I hear it will be the fairest glass work (that is sightly) any where in England to be found. Clarentius taketh exceeding great pains in the matter, and such as when your Lordship seeth it you will think yourself very much beholden to him, &c." The house which the Earl was thus embellishing, frequently mentioned in these papers by the several names of "Shrewsbury House, Shrewsbury Place," and "my house in Broad Street," appears to have been held by the Earls of Shrewsbury under the heirs of the first Marquis of Winchester. See a letter of September 23, 1602.

* Sir Nicholas Bacon, who had held that office ever since the Queen's accession. He was succeeded by Sir Thomas Bromley, Solicitor General.

God's will and her Majesty's be done. Casimir hath had a long time upon the seas, and could not land for weather. Within this eighteen hours he rode at Blackness, near Boulogne. I write this that your Lordship may remember how much England may boast, to have in this little isle such a Prince, envied of the Pope, the French, and Spain, and his departure known, and he to depart hence in one of her Majesty's royal ships in despite of them all ; and in his way homewards, the weather, as it were, becalls them all to execute their malices. God keep us ever in that state, and so long your Lordship's house in honour ; and therewith I end, in haste as I begun.

At Mr. Talbot's house, February 28th 1578.

Your Lordship's ever,

RVC. TOPCLYFFE

*To the right honourable good Lord the Earl
of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of England.*

No. CXXXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 295.)

GILBERT TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My duty most humbly remembered, right honourable my singular good Lord and father ; Mr. Secretary Walsingham sent me this morning a letter, which in his packet came by post from your Lordship dated on Shrove Sunday. I heartily thank God that your Lordship hath your health so well ; and for such bruits as your Lordship heard should be raised of the contrary, it is a token that the vipers that devise it cannot tell by

VOL. II.

L.

what other means to spit any of their poison against you, and God be therefore thanked that they have no better matter to work upon.

There is no great news stirring here that cometh to my knowledge. It is not yet known who shall be made Lord Keeper; some think one, and some another; for my part I can give no guess. It is but vain to trouble your Lordship with such shows as were showed before her Majesty this Shrovetide at night. The chiefest was a device presented by the persons of the Earl of Oxford, the Earl of Surrey, the Lords Thomas Howard and Windsor. The device was prettier than it happened to be performed, but the best of it, and I think the best liked, was two rich jewels which were presented to her Majesty by the two Earls. Other matter is that the Don Casimir is safely landed at Flushing, after he had tarried a long while on the coast, on this side, for a wind, and was after driven to Blackness. He is far to blame if he speak not great honour of her Majesty and her realm, for there was never any of his cote that was able to brag of the like entertainment that he received here. It is said that his elder brother, the Palsgrave,* is dead; and then as I suppose, the Don Casimir is to hold his room during the nonage

* Lewis VI. who died not till 1583. The little that history affords us concerning him is directly contradicted by this letter, for he is said to have been a mild and peaceable Prince, of a retired and domestic turn, meddling little in political affairs, and even bearing the surname *Facilis*. He was succeeded by Frederick, the infant here spoken of, whose son, the unfortunate King of Bohemia, married Elizabeth, daughter of James I. of England; and from that match our present excellent Sovereign derives his right to the Crown.

of his elder brother's son, who is an infant ; and if the said child miscarry, the whole is his, and then he shall be a very great Prince. It is a good change for her Majesty, and this realm, if it be so ; for then she shall possess a noble, honest, able friend of this Duke, to pleasure her, and lose an evil affected foward Lutheran, if not an obstinate Papist, in part of his elder brother.

My Lord of Leicester is now at Wanstead, and this day Mons. Simier, and his company, do dine there with him. He returneth again to-morrow. My Lord Treasurer was made a little afraid with the gout, but he intreated him so discourteously as he is departed from him till a better opportunity ; belike his Lordship is not at leisure to entertain him now, insomuch as he is now on foot again, and cometh abroad. Mr. Julio hath not yet fully ended with my wife, but he is very near it, and assureth himself, by God's grace, of her perfect recovery and well doing. I know not wherewith to trouble my Lady, at this present, but will, God willing, not forget my duty to her by Temple. And so most humbly I beseech your Honour's blessing and hers, with my wonted prayer for your long continuance in all honour, and most perfect health.

At your Lordship's little house near Charing Cross, this 5th day of March, 1578, being Thursday, at night.

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient

loving son,

GILBERT TALBOT.

My Lord, my brother tarrieth only for her Majesty's letter to my Lady, which she saith she will write in her own hand, so as nobody shall be acquainted with a word therein till my Lady receive it. I have not seen her look better a great while neither better disposed ; the living God continue it.

No. CXXXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 307.)

GILBERT TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

MY duty most humbly remembered, right honourable my singular good Lord and father. Bawde-wine delivered the ten foders of lead * to my Lord Treasurer three days since, the which he took very thankfully ; and, as I willed him, he did give it very secretly, and I did take no knowledge there-

* Foder, or fother, a term of uncertain derivation, was a customary weight, of 2000 lb., used by the dealers in lead, immediately after the smelting, when it is cast into what are called pigs. The sending such a quantity of lead, and in this rough state, to Lord Burghley, may seem a strange circumstance, and requires some explanation, especially as it appears by another letter in the Talbot MSS. (from Thomas Pullyson, an Alderman of London) that his Lordship received ten fother more within six days afterwards. The truth is, that the prospect of that vast foreign commerce which hath since been so wonderfully, and perhaps unreasonably extended, was but then dawning. Till the reign of this Queen, the merchants of the staple had the only monopoly, and, after wool, lead was the most considerable article of our export trade. Money was scarce, and the persons called merchants were generally rather factors of the men of landed property, who owned the great mass of wealth. The most prudent of the nobility and gentry were engaged in trade ; and thus the Earl of Shrewsbury, who possessed valuable mines, and Lord Burghley, exported lead ; and the Earl of Leicester, as we have seen in a preceding letter, was deeply engaged with the Muscovy Company, then newly incorporated. Other instances of this kind will appear in subsequent papers.

of; but, yesterday, being Friday, as my Lord Treasurer went to the sermon I delivered him your Lordship's letter, (the which I presumed before to open, and made the date thereof the 27th of March, whereas before, by your Lordship's date, it was but the 24th) and in the afternoon, as he went to council, he told me that he had read your Lordship's letter, and that he would talk with my Lord of Leicester thereof, and then tell me more; so until they have had time to confer, I shall not be able to advertise your Lordship any thing; and their leisures are very little, for these five days last past they have sitten in privy council from eight o'clock in the morning until dinner time; and presently after dinner, and an hour's conference with her Majesty, to council again, and so till supper time. And all this, as far as I can learn, is about the matter of Monseigneur's coming here, his entertainment here, and what demands are to be made unto him in the treaty of marriage, and such like concerning this; and I can assure your Lordship it is verily thought this marriage will come to pass of a great sort of wise men; yet, nevertheless, there are divers others like St. Thomas of Jude, who would not believe till he had both seen and felt. It is said that Monsiegnur will certainly be here in May next; and that he was with the King, his brother, in the beginning of the last week, and concluded with him of all his determinations in this matter, with his good consent, and great commendations to her Majesty on his brother's part. It is said that he will be accompanied with two or three dukes, ten earls, and 100 other gentlemen,

besides, of great and honourable account. As for the bruit that went here this other day, that the Duke of Guise should be in arms against the King, it is not so, but utterly untrue ; and he was lately with the King at Paris, and was attended on with above 500 gallant gentlemen, and the King received him very honourably and lovingly, and he departed again to his own house a very well contented man. Besides these French matters there is nothing at all stirring here. The preachers have been somewhat too busy to apply their sermons to tend covertly against this marriage, many of them inveighing greatly thereat, till the last week her Majesty gave express commandment that none of them should hereafter preach upon any such text as the like might be inferred.*

Thus, forced to end, for lack of any other matter worthy your Lordship's reading, I cease ; most humbly desiring your Lordship's daily blessing to my wife and me, with our wonted prayer for your Lordship's long continuance in all honour, and most perfect health.

At your Lordship's house near Charing Cross,
this present Saturday morning, the 4th of April,
1579.

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient
loving children,

GILBERT TALBOT.
MARY TALBOT.

To my Lord my father.

* The clergy were, at this time, the great oracles of popular prejudice. After the Restoration, the liberty of the pulpit was transferred to the press ; which, though possessing it under weaker pretensions, exercises it with less moderation.

No. CXXXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 321.)

THE BISHOP OF CARLISLE
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

WITH all humble remembrance of my duty unto your Honour ; I do not doubt but you have heard of the death of the Earl of Athol, and the circumstances thereof, by more certain and constant report than I can hear of yet. It is said that the common speech in Scotland is that his death was compassed by poisoning ; and the like attempt was given unto Montrose, but it took not like effect, by the skill of a physician whom he had about him ; and some will say there that it was procured by the Earl of Morton ; but envy useth not to speak well, and I think it is but the speech of those who are of least credit ; and, for my part, I do not believe it more than that which some there will give out, that he beareth but an hollow heart unto us, and that he will flit to the French : it is untrue ; I do not fear it ; and yet it is so given out in many mouths, as I am informed.

Of late, in the beginning of the last week, the King gave commission unto the Earls of Morton, Angus, Ruthen, and others, to apprehend the Lord Arbroth, and his brother, the Lord of Paisley,*

* Younger sons of the Duke of Chatelherault : John, called here Lord Arbroth, was the second, and possessed the family estates in consequence of the insanity of the Earl of Arran, his elder brother : Claud, the youngest, was styled the Commendator of Paisley. The jealousy of Morton, who became more tyrannical as his power declined, produced these unwarrantable proceedings ; and a general act of attainder, passed several years before, in

both sons of Duke Hamilton, and to bring them unto his presence ; for what cause I do not yet understand. The commission understanding that the same Lords had fortified themselves in the Castle of Hamilton, went thither, strongly accompanied with divers of their friends, and the number of 900 or 1000 horsemen, and besieged the castle. They within issued out, and skirmishing, some were slain, and very many hurt ; I do hear of none of name hurt but only Captain Crawford, who was not slain but maimed ; and that since that time the said two Lords have conveyed themselves out of the castle, and are fled the country into France, and the castle taken by those who were sent by the King. As I do understand further of that state your Lordship shall be certified. It is much to be feared it will grow troublesome ; which I beseech God to appease, if it pleaseth him, or that their may be kept within the borders of their own country, not to annoy their neighbour. Even so, devoting myself unto your Lordship's good pleasure, I most humbly take my leave.

Rose Castle, this 9th of May, 1579.
Your Lordship's most assuredly at commandment
in the Lord.

which the names of these noblemen appeared as parties in the murders of Murray and Lennox, was now set up against them, as being of equal effect with a positive sentence of the law, notwithstanding they had been included in an article of indemnity in the treaty of Perth. This persecution ended in the confiscation of their estates, and they saved their lives by a timely flight.

No. CXXXIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 331.)

GILBERT TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My duty most humbly remembered, right honourable my singular good Lord and father. Your letters, sent by my lackey, of the 10th of this May, I received the 13th, at which time my Lord of Leicester was at Wanstead, where he yet remains, and therefore I presently delivered your Lordship's to the Queen's Majesty to Mr. Secretary Walsingham, to be delivered by him, the weather being wet and rainy, and therefore no hope that her Majesty would walk, or come abroad, so as I might deliver it myself. But whilst I stood by he read your Lordship's letter to himself, the which he liked very well ; and said that he perceived thereby that your Lordship meant to deal well with your tenants,* whereof he was very glad, for that he knew also that it would very well content her Majesty ; but very little more speech he had with me at that time, and, since, I hear that he has delivered your Lordship's letter to her Majesty, the which she also has taken in very good part. The other letter, to my Lord Leicester, I sent forthwith to him to Wanstead, but he returns not till to-morrow, having been there all this week; and I hear nothing from him thereof. I likewise delivered your Lordship's letter to my Lord Treasurer, who liked it very well : and said that he was very glad that your Lordship took his plain dealing with you in his letter in so good part. And

* See the next letter.

thus this tragedy I hope is at an end, until the coming up of Higgenbotham, with such proofs as your Lordship shall send against him.

We have had no little ado with those unreasonable people of Ashford, whereof this bearer can inform your Lordship at length; but now they are all returned back again, and none of those letters that were sent up to the Council, or any other concerning that matter, were delivered, but sent down to my Lady again; yet it was thought good that I should make my Lord of Leicester privy to the coming of these persons; the which I did the same day that they came to town; and, when I had told him at length how the case stood, he agreed with me that it was a plain practice; yet, nevertheless, wished that (if by any means possible) we should stay them from complaining; saying, in general words, that if they were not stayed, there w^{ld} fall out greater inconvenience both to your Lordship and my Lady than you were aware of, how false and untrue soever their complaints were. But, before that, he enquired of the town where they dwelt; which, when I had described to him, he well remembered, and that he had angled and fished at the end of that town; and said he thought it belonged wholly to my Lady; and asked whether your Lordship did meddle therewith or not. I answered him that your Lordship had wholly left it to my Lady, to use at her pleasure, and was not privy how her Ladyship dealt therewith. "Well," quoth he, "but, for all that, assure yourself that whosoever set these varlets and the others on, had

no less evil meaning towards my Lord than my Lady ; for here is no difference made, neither in the Queen's opinion nor any other, but whatsoever concerns one of them, touches them both alike ; and yet," quoth he, " I never heard of any practice for the removing of my Lordship's charge, but, amongst other things, this was ever one : that there was no good agreement betwixt my Lord and my Lady ; and that it was informed, both to the Queen and others, that there was a secret division betwixt your doings ; and," quoth he, " if it were known, I verily believe the same has now been informed, and it is not long since I heard it, when I am assured that there was never any such thing ; but," quoth he, " by the eternal God, if they could ever bring the Queen to believe it that there were jars betwixt them, she would be in such a fear as it would sooner be the cause of the removing of my Lordship's charge than any other thing ; for I think verily," quoth he, " she would never sleep quietly after, as long as that Queen remained with them ;" and, next to this, it troubles the Queen most when she hears that you are not so well beloved of your tenants as she would wish, which was the cause of her late earnest letter, " the which," quoth he, " I could not stay if my life had lain thereon. Well," quoth he, " I am glad all these former matters are so well satisfied ; and, to conclude," quoth he, " I pray God that my Lord and Lady have none but faithful and true servants about them, and that none of them do, by indirect means, cause it to be informed some-

times hither that there are mislikes or disagreements betwixt them when there are none at all." I leave to write unto your Lordship my answers to many of these his Lordship's speeches, for they would be too long ; and your Lordship may think that either I answered according to my duty, and to the truth, or else I forgot myself over much. All this speech I had with him before he went to Wanstead, which is five days since.*

The secret opinion is now that that the matter of Monseigneur's coming, and especially the marriage, is grown very cold, and Simier like shortly to go over; and yet I know a man may take £1000 in this town, to be bound to pay double so much when Monseigneur comes into England, and treble so much when he marries the Queen's Majesty, and if he neither do the one nor the other, to gain the £1000 clear.† This is all the news that I hear. And thus, my wife and I, most humbly beseeching your Lordship's daily blessing, with our wonted prayer, upon our knees, for your long continuance in all honour, most perfect health, and long long life, I cease.

At your Lordship's little house near Charing Cross, this present Friday, late at night, 15th of May, 1579.

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient
loving son,

GILBERT TALBOT.

* This remarkable conference gives us a tolerably correct idea of the state of Elizabeth's mind during the long captivity of her wretched rival. The trite adage, that guilt carries with it its own punishment, was never better exemplified.

† That this species of gambling was used at so early a date

I wish it would please your Lordship to remember my Lord Chancellor with some gift. It would be very well bestowed.

To my Lord, my Father.

No. CXL.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 303.)

LORDS OF THE COUNCIL
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

AFTER our right hearty commendations to your good Lordship, your Lordship shall understand that the Sheriff of Chester having sent Otwall Higginbotham up unto us, we have charged him both with the words contained in your Lordship's former letters, touching his speeches for the assistance of your Lordship's tenants in Glossopdale,* and also with the deposition of Robert

is a curious piece of intelligence. This passage informs us that the odds were at that time three to one against the French marriage.

* Volume F. of the Talbot MSS. contains a great number of papers relative to the dispute between the Earl and his tenants which is here alluded to. It appears that four of these persons had rendered themselves particularly obnoxious to him; that he had, in consequence, dismissed them from certain farms which they alleged had been leased to them; and that, under this pretence, they had the address to prevail on several of the country people to join with them in an application to the Lords of the Council, who wrote to the Earl, recommending the tenants in a general way to his favour. The Earl, in answer, denies that he had granted leases to them; recapitulates their ill usage of him; and concludes with declaring, that if they will make due submission to him he will again receive them into his good graces. At length, after long disputes, in the course of which the partiality of the Council to the tenants is very evident, they are finally called up, slightly reprimanded, and ordered to depart; but immediately after, Walsingham writes to the Earl, that "the Queen hath altered her resolution with regard to their sentence,

Booth, *viva voce* taken here ; and, thereupon, assure your Lordship that we were so careful of the maintenance of your Lordship's credit and honour in that matter, that in case the fault could have been proved in such sort as that the law might have taken hold upon him, we would have caused such an example to be made, as both he himself, and others, should thereby have learned to take better heed what speeches they use of a nobleman of your Lordship's calling. But, seeing it falls out that he is charged by Booth, not that he should say that he had the persons in readiness, but to have spoken that 200 would assist the tenants (and this, also, stands upon the affirmation of the one, and the denial of the other, which is no sufficient proof;) and, further, the said Otwall is by Booth himself reported to be an honest poor man, and one that lives quietly in the country ; we, presuming upon your Lordship's good nature, and being given to understand that your Lordship would have been contented to have shewn him favour if the matter had not been brought before us, have thought good to command him to repair unto

because *she is determined to have all causes of grief in her subjects removed.*" The last letter on the subject is from the Lords of the Council to the Earl, in which they thank him for his condescension to the tenants, particularly for his promise to place Jackson, the man who was most odious to him, in a farm adjoining to that from which he had been removed ; and thus the tenants fairly gained the victory. The apparent benignity of these proceedings towards an order of persons which Elizabeth's established system of policy generally tended to oppress, arose entirely from her dread of the Earl's becoming unpopular among his tenants, and the contingent possibility of their being gained over to the interest of the Queen of Scots.

your Lordship, and there submit himself unto you, and to crave your favour ; and in case your Lordship shall see more cause than we do to bind him to the good behaviour, we leave it to your Lordship's discretion to do as your Lordship shall see cause. And so, trusting that this will satisfy your Lordship, and praying your Lordship to conceive no otherwise thereof than is friendly and honourably by us meant towards you, we bid your good Lordship right heartily farewell.

From Westminster, the 29th of May, 1579.

Your Lordship's assured loving friends,

| | |
|--------------------------|-------------------|
| T. BROMLEY,* Can. | T. SUSSEX. |
|--------------------------|-------------------|

| | |
|--------------------|---------------------|
| F. KNOLLYS. | W. BURGHLEY. |
|--------------------|---------------------|

| | |
|--------------------|---------------------|
| F. BEDFORD. | JAMES CROFT. |
|--------------------|---------------------|

| | |
|---------------------|--------------------|
| W. MILDWAY.† | E. LINCOLN. |
|---------------------|--------------------|

| | |
|----------------------|-----------------------|
| CHR. HATTON.‡ | F. WALSINGHAM. |
|----------------------|-----------------------|

*To our very good the Earl of Shrewsbury,
Earl Marshal of England.*

* Sir Thomas Bromley, Knight, appointed Lord Chancellor on the 25th of April preceding the date of this letter. He died April 12th, 1587, and his line, after four generations, ended in a female, who married William Bromley, of Horseheath in Cambridgeshire, grandfather of the late Lord Montfort. The peerages give a pretty correct account of this gentleman.

† Sir Walter Mildmay, Knight, second son of Thomas Mildmay, an Auditor of the Court of Augmentations, by Anne, daughter of —— Read. He was educated in Christ's College, Cambridge, and came early into his father's office, in which he was appointed Surveyor. In the reign of Edward VI. he had the chief direction of the mint, and the management, under several commissions, of the King's revenues, particularly of those which arose from the Crown lands, the nature and value of which he had made his chief study. Thus qualified, Elizabeth gave him the office of Chancellor of the Exchequer, upon the death of Sir Richard Sackville, and he became a most useful, but not a favoured servant, for his integrity was too stiff to bend to the dark politics

of that reign, and his consequent popularity excited the continual jealousy of his mistress : he was therefore never advanced to any higher post, though he is mentioned in a late letter, No. CXXXIV, as a candidate for the Seals. He was a very learned man, and an eminent encourager of literature, witness his donations to the College in which he was bred, and his foundation of Emanuel, in the same university ; which latter having barely finished, he died, on the 31st of May, 1589. Sir Walter Mildmay married Mary, sister of Sir Francis Walsingham, by whom he had two sons, Anthony and Humphrey; and three daughters ; Winifred, married to William Fitzwilliam, of Gainspark, in Essex, an ancestor of the present Earl ; Christian, to Charles Barret, of Avely, in the same county ; and Martha, to William Brounker.

† Sir Christopher Hatton, at this time Vice-Chamberlain, was the third and youngest son of William Hatton, of Holdenby in Northamptonshire, by Alice, daughter of Laurence Saunders, of Horringworth, in the same county. This gentleman, who is said to have first attracted Elizabeth's notice by the elegance of his person, and his graceful dancing at a court ball, was placed, when a very young man, in the Society of the Inner Temple, not to study the law, but that his mind might be enlarged by an intercourse with those who were at once men of business and of the world, for such was the character of the lawyers of that day. From one of the Queen's pensioners, he became successively a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber, Captain of the Guard, Vice-chamberlain, and Privy Counsellor ; and by these unusual gradations rose to the Chancellorship in 1587, when he was likewise elected a Knight of the Garter. Elizabeth's court was divided into two orders of men, statesmen and favourites. It hath been the common misfortune of absolute Princes to blend these characters in the same persons, but her sagacity generally kept them separate. It was not the public station, but her confidence, that made the statesman ; and thus Sussex, perhaps the deepest politician of this reign, appeared in the courtly place of Lord Chamberlain, while Hatton, for his good looks and gallantry, held the grave and dignified office of Chancellor. His insufficiency was at first so glaring, that the advocates refused to plead before him, but his modesty and natural sweetness of temper soon endeared him to them ; his rigid application enabled him to gain a tolerable knowledge of laws which were not yet perplexed by numerous comments ; and the extreme caution with which he proceeded, always founding his decrees upon the private advice of the most eminent of his brethren, at length procured him a degree of confidence from the public which well experienced judges have often wanted. He survived this remarkable elevation only four years ; and died unmarried, Sep. 20, 1591, of a broken heart, as has been said, owing to the stern perseverance with which Elizabeth had demanded an old debt which he was unable to pay.

No. CXLI.

(Howard Papers.)

THE ARCHBISHOP OF YORK
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My honourable good Lord,

THIS day in the morning I received a letter from London, signifying that the Parliament was prorogued until the 24th of November next, as also that the French matter was dashed ; for Simier, with that crew, was departing out of the realm. This evening I received another letter, confirming the former, touching the prorogation of the Parliament, and, further, saying that the French knot was loosed, for that Monseigneur required pledges for the safety of his person, or else he would not come in ; the pledges were the Earl of Oxford, the Earl of Shrewsbury, the Earl of Leicester, with sundry others of greatest calling. These conditions were too hard, so that I verily think that that matter hath an end. I thought good thus much to signify unto your Lordship, although I think you are more fully advertised of these things ere this.

The prorogation of the Parliament notwithstanding, yet I mind to take my journey towards London the 23rd of this October. If your Lordship will use my service in any thing there you shall command it. And thus, remaining your Lordship's even to the uttermost, I commend the same to the good direction of God's Holy Spirit.

Southwell, at eight o'clock at night, this 14th
of October, 1579.

Your Lordship's most assured,
E. YORK.*

*To the right honourable my very good Lord the
Earl of Shrewsbury, one of her Majesty's
most honourable Privy Council, with speed.*

No. CXLII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 373.)

THE ARCHBISHOP OF YORK
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

As your sickness was my great grief, so your recovery is my great comfort; God should plague me too much to bereave me of so honourable and faithful a friend. I would have written unto your Lordship ere this, but that these uncertain times bring forth no certainties. The French matter hath been long asleep, and seemed as dead, but now is revived again. Monseigneur, of late, wrote most kind letters, claiming promise, and yielding to all conditions. The King sent a threatening message by his Ledger Ambassador here. The Earl of Leicester, Mr. Hatton, and Mr. Walsingham,† have

* Edwin Sandys, Archbishop of York; an ancestor of the late Lord Sandys. This Prelate's conduct happily united the easy elegance of a courtier with as much piety, meekness, and benevolence, as ever ornamented the clerical character. He had suffered imprisonment in the late reign on account of a sermon preached by him at Cambridge in favour of Lady Jane Grey's title to the Crown, and after his liberation, retired to Strasburgh, where he lived till the accession of Elizabeth, who promoted him upon his return to the see of Worcester, and afterwards to that of York. He died July 10, 1588.

† It is remarkable that these three ministers should be usually mentioned together in history as the most vehement opposers of the marriage.

earnestly moved her Majesty to go forward with the marriage, as her most safety. Here, upon Tuesday last, letters were sent by post, as well to Monseigneur as to Simier ; and answer was given to the Ambassador here, to his satisfaction ; so that it is looked for that both Simier, and other French commissioners, will be here before Easter to make up a conclusion ; but what will be the end, or to what effect this will come, God knoweth, and not man ; yet on Wednesday last ber Majesty did cast out speeches unto me tending that way. If these commissioners come, the Parliament will hold ; if they come not, it is like to be prorogued until Michaelmas.

The Earl of Arundel * is dead, and the Duke's son, commonly called the Earl of Surrey, is now named the Earl of Arundel ; it falleth unto him by inheritance. Mr. Monson hath gotten leave to be at his own house in Lincolnshire, but not restored to his place. Men stand here in grace or disgrace as before, nothing bettered in mine opinion. The Lord Sandys is looked for here in May next ; if he come, I will persuade him to accompany me into Yorkshire. And thus, with my most hearty commendations to your good Lordship and to the good Countess your wife, I commend you both to God.

London, Martii 5, 1579.

Your Lordship's most assured,

E. YORK.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord the
the Earl of Shrewsbury, one of her Ma-
jesty's Privy Council.*

† Henry Fitz Alen. He was succeeded by his grandson, Philip, son to the Duke of Norfolk. See No. IV. in the last reign.

No. CXLIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 377.)

RICHARD TOPCLYFFE
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

May it please your Lordship,

YESTERDAY, the 15th of March, the Portugal lying here for the Ambassador to the late King hath at last received letters from his country (as one Doctor Lopez,* now chief physician to my Lord of Leicester, did tell me, which Lopez is a very honest person, and zealous) the effect of which letters of advertisement is the government of the state of Portugal being directed by the King, for the time, and four principal counsellors, with eleven others, continually exercised in matters of state. The King there lately dead, these fifteen have continued devising of some resolution how, or which way, to yield their obedience, whether to King Philip, or to the Duchess of Braganza † who is

* Rodrigo Lopez, a Portuguese Jew. He was afterwards appointed domestic physician to the Queen, and in that situation, so convenient for the purpose, undertook to poison her, for which intended service he received from the King of Spain a rich jewel, and the promise of 50,000 ducats. This hopeful project was discovered by the means of some intercepted letters, and Dr. Lopez suffered death at Tyburn in 1594.

† Philip claimed the succession under his mother, Isabella, daughter of Emanuel King of Portugal; the Duchess, with undoubted right, as being grand-daughter to that prince, through Edward, his second son: Philip, however, having a powerful army to back his pretensions, ascended the throne with very little opposition. Claims were likewise made by the Dukes of Savoy and Parma, by Catherine de Medicis, Lewis Duke of Beja, Antonio, Grand Prior of Crato, and Maud Countess of Bologna. Even the Pope set up a pretended title, under the ridiculous idea that the kingdom, to speak in clerical language, had lapsed to him because its last monarch was a Cardinal.

next heir. And the likelihood that they intend not so slightly to yield unto the Spaniard, is that the Portugals have already armed 20,000 soldiers, and gather daily all the force they can ; have also provided seventeen very strong ships ; fortified a place of account ; driven and disvictualled all that part of the country where the Spaniards must arrive ; and keep secret all the rest of their determinations. The late Ambassador, not taking openly any charges upon him, is like enough to solicit the intents and direction of the counsellors aforesaid with our Sovereign ; and thought it is that if that Duchess can have assistance of other Princes to maintain her cause, she will not yield over her right so slightly ; and that the garland is so sweet that it will be worth wrestling for; for if King Philip had Portugal in quiet, and their East Indies with his West Indies, he might (as with his arms) embrace and crush the world ; therefore it behoveth his equals to lame him of one of those arms. It was lately given out, by them Spanished,* that King Philip was proclaimed King in Lisbon, but it is contrary ; neither is it known for truth that the Duchess of Braganza is proclaimed Queen but the matter is over for a while.

Your bad tenants of Glossop want coals to their irons. Your Lordship's servant, Mr. Baldwin, travelleth honestly in those causes ; whom I have wished to hearken to those varlets' slanderous speech in prison, to heap coals upon their heads

* Or of the Spanish faction.

now they be there ; and therewith I end, the 16th
of March, 1579.

Your Lordship's ever,
Ryc. TOPCLIFFE.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of
England, and of her Majesty's most ho-
nourable Privy Council, and Knight of the
Order.*

No. CXLIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 383.)

LORD TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My humble duty remembered, right honourable my singular good Lord and father. May it please your Lordship, upon my first coming to Court, in speech with her Majesty, she asked for your Lordship, and after I had done your duty to her, she asked me where I saw your Lordship, and your charge. For your Lordship I told her I attended of you at Sheffield, to know your pleasure ; and your Lordship came to a house which you were building, and there I took my leave of your Lordship, and you returned to your charge ; but as for the Queen of Scots, I had not seen many years. I find your Lordship's charge is great, in respect there is here so many contrarieties. I find the Queen's Majesty greatly troubled, and the matter of Monseigneur in great suspense. It is daily looked that Mr. Edward Stafford shall go into France. Her Majesty removed to Nonsuch ; all the household put to board wages, Mr. Comptroller only excepted, and one clerk of the kitchen, who



does attend the Court. The French Ambassador followeth the Court, and has daily great audience of her Majesty. My Lord of Leicester, as I hear, makes great preparation at Kenelworth, and would gladly have leave to go thither, but as yet her Majesty will not grant it to him. My Lord Treasurer is well, but something troubled with the gout in his hand. My Lord Chamberlain very well ; my Lady well recovered who was very sick, and has escaped very hardly. This is all at this time I can learn worthy your Lordship's reading ; but, as I shall understand, I will according to my duty advertise your Lordship, in the mean time I crave pardon, and so I most humbly take my leave, craving your Lordship's daily blessing.

Savoy, this 29th of May, 1580.

Your Lordship's loving and most obedient son,
FRANCIS TALBOT.

No. CXLV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 385.)

LORD TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My humble duty remembered. May it please your Lordship since my last letter Mr. Stafford is sent into France, and departed from London the 22nd of this instant. His commission is to deal either for conclusion of marriage, or perfect amity and peace ; whether is likelier I leave to your Lordship's judgment. Out of France it is certainly delivered that there hath been a slaughter of some of the religious, but in what sort or order I cannot get the knowledge. Out of Flanders I hear little,

only this ; that Mr. John Norris,* in Antwerp going in a coach to the Prince, certain set of him, and discharged certain calivers, and shot through the coach in three or four placss ; he leaped out, and one struck him over the face with a halbert, but no great hurt ; he recovered a house and so was saved. Her Majesty remaineth here at Non-such as yet, but mindeth to remove to Oatlands about a se'ennight hence. Her Grace liketh well of this place, but yet these causes of France trouble her so as she is no ways well disposed. The French Ambassador, Monsieur Malvoisier,† riding to take the air, in his return came through Smithfield ; and there, at the bars, was stayed by those officers that sit to cut swords, by reason his rapier was longer than the statute.‡ He was in a great fury, and drew his rapier ; in the mean season my Lord Henry Seymour came, and so stayed the matter. Her Majesty is greatly offended with the officers, in that they wanted judgment.

'Thus, with my wonted prayer to Almighty God

* Sir John Norris, second son of Henry Lord Norris, and at this time general of the English forces in the Netherlands.

† Malvoisier, the French Ambassador in ordinary. Michael de Castlenau, Sieur de Malvoicier, or Mauvissiere, and Concressau, Baron de Joinville, &c. His memoirs of what passed in England and France in the reigns of Francis II. and Charles IX. were first printed in quarto anno 1620.

‡ In the beginning of this year certain sumptuary laws were published by proclamation, and enforced with great exactness. The ruffs which had increased to an enormous and ridiculous size, were reduced to legal dimensions, and swords were restrained to the length of three feet. It appears by this passage that persons were placed at the principal avenues to the city, with orders to shorten such as might be beyond the prescribed measure.

for your Lordship's long life, with much health, I most humbly take my leave, craving your Lordship's daily blessing.

From the Court at Nonesuch, this 23rd of June, 1580.

Your Lordship's loving and most obedient son,
FRANCIS TALBOT.

*To the right honourable my singular good
Lord and father the Earl of Shrewsbury,
at Sheffield, his Lordship's house.*

No. CXLVI.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My good Lord,

I HAVE seen a letter which it pleased your Lordship most honourably and kindly to write to my wife, greatly to her comfort when she was grieved, for the which I do think myself more bound to your Lordship than I can write, and so I beseech you to conceive; and therewith, to make certain account that both she and I do love, honour and reverence you as a father, and will do you all service we can, as far as any child you have, with heart and hand, and so pray you to dispose of us both.

The true fear of God which your actions have always shewed to be in your heart; the great and deep care which you have always had for the honour and safety of the Queen's Majesty's most worthy person; the continual trouble which you have of long time taken for the benefitting of the

commonwealth ; and the upright course which you have always taken, respecting the matter and not the person, in all causes ; (which are the necessary fruits of him who feareth God truly, serveth his Sovereign faithfully, and loveth his country dearly) have tied me to your Lordship in that knot which no worldly frailty can break ; and, therefore, I will never forbear to run any fortune that may serve you, and further your honourable dealings in these your godly actions. And so my good Lord, forbearing to trouble you with words, I end ; and wish unto you as to myself, and better if I may.

At Newhall, June 28, 1580.

Your Lordship's most assured,

T. SUSSEX.

No. CXLVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 26.)

THOMAS BAWDEWIN
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

THE Prince of Condé* is arrived here in England, as I am assured your Lordship doth understand by my Lord Talbot his letter sent by the post. He doth lie very secretly in Kent, at Mr. Randolph's house. As I am informed, he hath stored great troubles in France, and doth intend to prosecute the same. His coming hither is to have her Majesty's aid, which the Ambassador Ledger doth impugn in so much as he can. Condé was with the Earl of Leicester at dinner on Wednesday, and

* His coming into England this year hath passed unobserved by historians.

did speak with her Majesty as we do hear, the same day. Casimir is looked for to aid Condé and Navarre* and, for that her Majesty shall be in such sums, which they hope unto by their humble suites. Casimir proffered by his chiefest friends in Court to take Calais for her Majesty, and to deliver the same to our hands otherwise to repay the sum again, being £20,000; which proffer is here accepted as the late marriage was, some reputing it most honourable and beneficial, others esteeming both Calais and Ireland rather a burden and charge;† and therefore do think it fit to leave them both, but for this only respect; that where Ireland hath very good timber, and convenient havens, if the Spaniard might be master of them he would in a short space be master of the seas, which is our chiefest force, as I pray God it may continue. The bill for the diet money‡ is not assigned; therefore I pray you to write, for great are my wants.

I do hear that Monseigneur hath this flat answer, sent by Mr. Stafford; that her Majesty

* Casimir, who has been lately mentioned, had joined these Princes, with a body of German mercenaries, about four years before; betrayed them soon after to Catherine de Medicis; and now attached himself again to the Huguenots.

† The Pope had lately made a formal gift of Ireland to the King of Spain, and some Spanish troops which arrived there in the course of this year declared that they came to take possession. That island was then a constant source of danger and expence to England, insomuch that Walsingham frequently wished it to sink into the sea.

‡ The Earl's allowance for the maintenance of the Queen of Scots is commonly so termed in these papers.

may not in any sort marry until she hear the French troubles will be pacified.

This bringer hath all things in readiness I have upon his bill lent him.

Your Honour's most bounden servant,

Tho. BAWDEWYN.

To my Lord.

No. XLVIII.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My good Lord,

SENDING this bearer to see how her Majesty doth, I would not omit to write these few lines to you. I have heard word from my Lord of Leicester, Mr. Vicechamberlain, or Mr. Secretary Walsingham, of the Prince of Condé or his expectation, or to seek to know my opinion what I thought fit to do in his causes ; whereby I see either they seek to keep the whole from me, or else care little for my opinion, or will wrest the Prince, and the rest of that sort, to think I am no friend to their cause. Which of these soever it be I do not weigh, any more than they weigh the making of me a stranger to the matter ; and, therefore, if your Lordship have not already acquainted any of them with your writing to me in that matter, I pray your Lordship let them not know of it ; and, perhaps, at my coming, some of them will mislike I am made such a stranger, though not in respect of myself yet in respect of her Majesty's service ; wherein I do not doubt but both her Majesty and

the world do conceive I can give as sound an opinion as the better of them, and so have done in all cases hitherto.

By such little knowledge as I gather from some of my friends, I do find there is a hope gathered to bring the Queen to yield to the Prince's requests hastily ; that, having accorded with him before any answer be returned of Mr. Stafford's negociation, it might be a hinderance to any thing that might fall out good by that answer. It were therefore, my good Lord, not amiss, in my opinion, for her Majesty to stay her resolute answer to the Prince, not only until she had received answer from Mr. Stafford, but also until she had advertised the King of the Prince's being here, and had received answer whether she might have any hope of peace by his means ; otherwise, if (before she see the end of Stafford's dealings, and be informed from the King what he will do for the peace) she should enter into the giving of any aid that might assist the wars, it should not only overthrow all Monseigneurs intentions, but also shut up wholly all means for peace, and lay the wars fully open ; whereof she must be the head, and in the end is not able to bear the charge ; unto which I would not wish her Majesty to enter, until she were driven unto it by Monseigneur's refusing of the marriage, and the King refusing of the peace ; which, if the matter be well handled, I think they never will do.

Thus am I bold to scribble my mind to your Lordship, being very loath to see my Sovereign

Lady to be violently drawn into a war which I know is naturally against her heart, and all the world doth see is more than she shall be able to maintain, and therefore must of necessity, be perilous to her. And so my good Lord I end, and commit you to God.

From Newhall, this first of July 1580.

Your Lordship's most assured,

T. SUSSEX.

No. CXLIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 20.)

FRAGMENT.

THOMAS BAWDEWIN
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

—THE Queen our Sovereign, being persuaded by her physicians, did enter into a bath on Sunday last ; and, either by taking cold, or by some other accident, did presently fall sick, and so did continue two days together, but now is very well recovered again. Mr. Walsingham is at this instant from the Court. God has taken to his mercy the daughter of the said Mr. Walsingham.

We have here in London, and at the Court, a new strange sickness. It does grieve men in the head, and with a stitch over the stomach. Few do die thereof, and yet many are infected. I do hear it credibly reported that forty students of Lincoln's Inn were taken with the said malady within the space of 24 hours. At the Court, the Lady Lincoln, the Lady Howard, the Lady Stafford, the Lady Leighton, are at this instant trou-

bled therewithal. The Lord Lumley is sick there, and many of the inferior sort. Some say the Lord Chamberlain is sick, at Newhall. Condé does remain at the Court, in a banqueting house. Speeches we had raised here that the Prince of Orange was likewise arrived at Dover, and some have reported that the King of Navarre was in Guernsey; but I am resolved that Orange and Navarre remain in their countries. It is certainly given out that Mousieur Daubeuy* hath professed himself one of the reformed religion in Scotland, and hath renounced all Papistry. The Lord Gray of Wilton† shall go into Ireland with a convenient number of soldiers. At the first it was reported that he should have seven thousand, now the number is much decreased.

I have delivered my Lady's letter unto the Lady Burghley; who doth yield so good speeches as she did heretofore, which in my late letter I did humbly signify unto you. And, since that time,

* Esme Stuart, afterwards in great favour with James I. who created him Earl, and then Duke of Lennox. He was son to a brother of that Prince's grandfather, Matthew Earl of Lennox. The surname d'Aubigny had been used by the younger brothers of this family ever since 1422, when Charles VII. of France granted to John Stuart the territory of Aubigny in Berry, which reverted to the French Crown upon the death of Charles, the last Duke of Richmond and Lennox of that family. Louis XIV. at the request of our Charles II. erected this estate into a Duchy and Peerage of France, and granted it to Madame de Querouaille, Duchess of Portsmouth, with remainder to her natural male issue by Charles, and their heirs; and at her death it devolved on the last Duke of Richmond, her grandson, in whose father all the ancient English and Scottish honours of the late house of Lennox Stuart had been previously revived.

† Arthur Lord Grey, lately appointed Deputy of Ireland.

deal with my Lord her husband for that cause, who did declare unto her that the Queen's Majesty was unwilling of that journey, and that his Lordship had so advertised you by his own letter ; and, for my better satisfaction, she procured my Lord to utter his mind therein, which was in substance following. That he had moved her Majesty, whom he found resolutely bent against the going to Chatsworth ; and, by reason of the busy affairs wherewith she is troubled, as also by her sickness, the opportunity doth not serve thitherto to proceed any further on that behalf, which he would very willingly do ; howbeit he gave me this advertisement, that if her Majesty should perceive that either your Honour or my Lady were earnest suitors to obtain licence, she would conceive a mislike of you for the same, and so did wish me to let you understand. The Lady Burghley would write unto my Lady, but she commanded me to signify that her eyes do somewhat fail her.* She doth send her most hearty commendations, and doth desire her Ladyship to use her service in what she shall need ; and doth affirm that she will be pain-

* The fact probably was that she durst not write. The temper of the times, and of the monarch, required an extreme nicety of conduct. It is remarkable how few answers appear to the abundance of letters which the Earl wrote to Elizabeth's ministers, the rough copies of which are preserved in the Talbot papers. When his heavy complaints obliged them to break silence, they addressed themselves verbally to his agent, Bawdewyn, who transmitted the particulars of their conversation to his Lord ; and thus they were left at liberty to explain away, or deny entirely, all that they had said. The only material exception is in a letter from Secretary Wilson of January 31, this year.

ful and careful to accomplish her request, and that there shall be nothing defective on her part; and so did desire my Lady to think both of her, and of my Lord her husband.

I have, hereinclosed, sent unto you a note of the answer which Blitheman has made unto such objections as I did lay before Mr. Midlemoor, at our late conference for Burton Abbey.* It may please you to send them to Mr. Serjeant Roods to be considered of. Mr. Midlemoor and I have debated of the cause, before my Lord Talbot and Mr. Manners. He doth desire that your Honour would take it at that price, viz. £2200, with that security as he hath for it or that otherwise it may please you to license him to proceed, for the which I have obtained ten days to give him an answer, which may now be as shall best like your Honour; and thus do most humbly take my leave.

From your house, Cold Harbour in London,
July 1st, 1580.

Your Honour's most bounden servant
THOMAS BAWDEWYN.

No. CL.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 33.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My noble good Lord,
I AM sorry that I have troubled your Lordship to move her Majesty for this Lady's going to Buxton

* Burton, or Monk Britton, Priory, near Barnesley in Yorkshire. This very estate was sold a few years since to the guardians of Sir George Wombwell, Bart. for upwards of £30,000.

and Chatsworth, being so greatly disliked of her Majesty ; wherein your Lordship hath fully answered me her Majesty's pleasure which I shall willingly obey.

Now my good Lord, where it pleased her Majesty to think much at the allowance this last year for this Lady's diet, yet, when I made relation of my great charges, many ways, which I sustained besides the cark and care I had, which for no earthly good I would endure but that I thought my service was acceptable to her Highness) then it pleased her Majesty, as Mr. Secretary Wilson wrote unto me, that the allowance should be continued ; and he promised me to be a mean to her Majesty, that, for avoiding of further troubling her Majesty in this matter, I might be paid in some of her Majesty's receipts ; but now I understand by Mr. Walsingham, whose means I used to her Majesty for this half year's payment, that she makes some stay thereat ; which grieveth me not a little, that I must thus twice in the year trouble her Majesty and your Lordship with other my good friends, in this matter, whom I had thought to have troubled otherwise in some suit to her Highness for a further consideration of my faithful and careful services this twelve years ; wherein I am the rather encouraged, seeing her Majesty's bountifulness to all others her faithful servants, of which number I account myself one. I shall stand in doubt, since this matter is come again in question, that her Majesty has conceived some misliking of my services, until I may be

therein resolved by your Lordship's letters ; which I heartily desire your Lordship may be so soon as your leisure will permit, for it would grieve me any ways to be had in suspicion, deserving so well as I hope I have done, and intend to do and to die as faithful a servant as ever she had or shall have. And so, accounting myself greatly bound to your Lordship I end.

Sheffield, this 9th of July, 1580.

Your Lordship's faithful friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
my Lord Burghley, Treasurer of Eng-
land.*

No. CLI.

(Howard Papers.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My very good Lord,
I do think myself very much beholden unto you for your honourable dealing with her Majesty for the allowance of the diet of this Queen, my charge. Assuredly I do think it very strange that there should be any motion made to abridge the same, for that, when I did first receive my said charge, it is most true I yielded thereunto to show the desire I had, without respect of peril to myself, or poor estate, to do her Majesty service ; and not for the hope of gain or profit that I might expect by her Majesty's allowance, being diminished, and brought to half that rate which before was allowed at Bolton, as her Majesty's officers sent thither can well declare. I do not know what account

is made of my charges sustained in the keeping of this woman, but assuredly the very charge of victual of my whole household, with the entertainment I do give to my household servants, is not defrayed with the allowance I have from her Majesty ; besides the which I dare be bold to say the wine, the spice, and the fuel, that are spent in my house yearly, being valued, come not under £1000 by the year. Also the loss of plate, the buying of pewter, and all manner of household stuff, which by them is exceedingly spoiled, and wilfully wasted, stand me in £1000 by the year. Moreover, the annuities I have given to my servants, to the end to be more faithfully served by them, and to prevent any corruption, that by want they might be provoked unto, come to above £400 by the year ; yet do I not reckon the charges to all those soldiers I keep, over that which her Majesty doth allow for them, which being but 6d. per day, may be well considered that men in household, being employed in such painful and careful service, will not be so entertained.

I do leave out an infinite number of other hidden charges, which I am driven unto by keeping this woman, for troubling you over long ; but I do trust that her Majesty, of her own consideration, will so well think of these things, that she will not abridge any thing of that which she hath hitherto allowed. I have, in these eleven years service in this charge, not pestered her Majesty with any suits, neither have I lamented the heavy burden my mind has borne in providing for her safety, and that my

body has sustained (being thereby weakened) only for that I do reckon myself happy and fortunate in living to do her Majesty true and loyal service. Her Majesty, of her gracious goodness, did grant unto my Lord Scroope in fee farm, for his half-year's service, £80 per year; and that her Majesty should now, after my eleven year's service (in which time she has been kept with no less safety than before, although there have been many and dangerous attempts) no otherwise recompense me but by abating the allowance that hitherto I have had, the world must needs think that either my deserts have been very small, or else her Majesty doth make very small account of me, the which she, in her princely nature, I assuredly hope will never do. Thus, having troubled your good Lordship over long, with my most hearty commendations unto your Lordship, do take my leave.

At Sheffield, the 26th of July, 1580.
Your Lordship's most faithful and assured friend,
G. SHREWSBURY.

This day I go with my charge to Buxton's Well.

No. CLII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 37.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My very good Lord,
I CAME hither to Buxton, with my charge, the 28th of July. She had a hard beginning of her journey; for when she should have taken her horse, he started aside, and therewith she fell, and hurt her back, which she still complains of, not-

withstanding she applies the bath once or twice a day. I do strictly observe her Majesty's commandment, written to me by your Lordship, in restraining all resort to this place ; neither does she see, nor is seen to any more than to her own people, and such as I appoint to attend. She has not come forth of the house since her coming, nor shall not before her parting. Most of her folks have been sick, since her coming hither, of the new disease ; herself has yet escaped. My care to discharge the trust it has pleased her Majesty to repose in me is, and shall be, no less than it has been heretofore ; but, my Lord, I must lament my griefs to your Lordship, whose wisdom I know to be great, and can every way consider. I think myself very hardly dealt withal, that, after twelve years' faithful services, it shall lie in any practising enemy's power to persuade her Majesty so much against me, as to think me unworthy of this small portion, the allowance for this Lady's diet, &c. It is double that money hath served me yearly which I am driven to spend by the occasion of this charge ; besides the loss of liberty, dangering of my life, and many other discomforts which no money could have hired me to ; but the desire I have to serve my Sovereign makes peril and pain a pleasure to me.

I will not trouble your Lordship particularly with my charges, because I have of late written them at more length. Good my Lord, as my special trust is in your Lordship, deal so with her Majesty for me as I am not offered so great a

disgrace as to abate any part of the allowance ; it touches me nearer than a much greater matter in value could do. My assured trust has been, and is, that her Majesty, of her gracious goodness, would reward me with more than all I have received for this charge, whereby it might be a testimony to the world of her good acceptance of my true and faithful services. I have presumed to write to her Majesty touching this allowance, by your Lordship's good means. I doubt not her Majesty will think it well bestowed of me, if it were more. So wishing to your Lordship all honour and health, I end, with my wife's most hearty commendations.

Buxton, 9th of August, 1580.

Your Lordship's most faithful friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. CLIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 51.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
THOMAS BAWDEWYN.

Bawdewyn,

I HAVE received your several letters, and drap, and some torches, by the carrier : which was delivered to the Bailiff of Sheffield. I have little to say for this time, but wish that as good order may be taken for my ship as may be ; and for my Lord Monteagle, I am sorry for his death, and shall

give order for the looking to Brierly * as well as I can. I would have you to buy me a yard of scarlet, of four nobles a yard ; I care not so much for the fineness thereof, so that it is of a good dye ; (your other scarlet was too dear) and send the same down as soon as you can ; and if you can get any fine oil of roses that is very pure and good, send me some down, or any other fine cooling oil for my feet, to have in store.

I am glad to hear that her Majesty has such gracious liking of my sons Edward and Harry, which is my great comfort ; God bless them. And if the parliament now continue, as I perceive by Mr. Secretary it does, I think it were good they stay their journey until it be towards New Year's tide, or afterwards ; so you may dispatch all things the better in the mean time, and go with them the better yourself ; but I would have you to come to me before, to perfect all things, and in the mean while, take such order that they are not idle, nor lose their learning in any wise. And so for this time I end.

Sheffield, this 20th of November, 1580.

Your Lord and Master,

G. SHREWSBURY.

To my servant, Thomas Bawdewyn, at Shrewsbury House, London.

* The manor of Brierly, or Brearley, near Barnsley, was formerly a part of the Harrington estate in Yorkshire, which went to Lord Monteagle. How the Earl of Shrewsbury obtained it is not known. It passed, however, from his family to the Saviles, whose heir now possesses it.

No. CLIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 53.)

THOMAS BAWDEWYN
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

It may please your Honour,
I HAVE been put in good hope by Mr. Secretary
to receive some part of your money, due for the
charge of the Scottish Queen, before Christmas.
Upon the last motion, her Majesty bade me to
present the bill ; which he will not fail to do, as
he has told me three several times. The Lord
Treasurer is very well recovered ; both of his new
sickness, and also of the gout. Sir George Peck-
ham* was called before the Lords on Sunday last,
and since (this Wednesday) they did meet in coun-
cil at the Lord Chancellor's, whence he was sent
to the Tower.

I have here enclosed sent unto your Honour
the names of such strangers who were taken in
Ireland.+ The principal doth offer 6000 ducats
for his ransom ; the other, some more, some less,
under that sum, to 1000 ducats. It was my fortune

* He was a prisoner for debts to the Queen, probably contracted by his father and brother, Sir Edmund and Sir Robert, who had served the Crown in the late unpopular reign. (See preceding papers.) The family estates in Buckinghamshire, Bitleyden Abbey and the manor of Denham, were now seized by Elizabeth, who gave the former to Arthur Lord Grey of Wilton, and the latter to John Norris and William Bowyer.

+ Italians and Spaniards, who were sent to assist the Earl of Desmond, then in rebellion. They had erected a fort at the mouth of Smerwick harbour, in the county of Kerry, which was reduced by the English, after a very short siege, and most of the garrison, consisting of seven hundred Irish, and as many foreigners, were cruelly massacred.

to see the chiefest banner displayed in the fort, being of three several colours, green, yellow, and red. The cross, with a serpent crawled in scutcheon, had these words of Italian written, “For Christ and the Church give me victory;” above that was the cross keys, and a certain posey which was blotted out, not to be read, and above the same were the three crowns. Much munition and armour was taken, as heretofore I have written ; and, in rifling up the baggage, Captain Rawly has found a great number of letters, which have discovered some matters of secrecy. The same came unto the Court on Saturday last, as I am informed. The Bishops of Spain and Italy are detected by the same. Some do suppose that d’Alva, the King of Spain’s Lieutenant, in Portugal, is found faulty.

I did send your Honour, by Timperley’s servant, a great double bowl, a cup with a cover, a dial, two casting bottles, two salts, two acorns, two bodkins for gentlewomen’s hair, a flying hart, and four rings in the trunk, and also a cloak for your Honour ; besides a box, in the which is a commission to enquire after the death of Jessop, which I do trust you have received. I did trust to have met Timperley, but, upon my leave taking, was drawn on to remain, in manner as before I have written. Thus, desiring God to bless and keep your Honour, do most humbly take my leave.

London, the 22nd of Dec., 1580.

Mr. Tyrrel’s money I have not received. I cannot send process for Purfrey nor for Tunstall,

because I do not know their names. Sir Rowland Hayward * has married Customer Smith's daughter, a grave matron of sixteen years.

Your Honour's most humble servant,

THO. BAWDEWYN.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CLV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 399.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO THE QUEEN.

May it please your most excellent Majesty,
THAT where it pleased your Highness to commit
this Lady unto my charge, and to give me allow-
ance these twelve years for the same, and now,
stay being made of it, I am humbly to beseech
your Majesty to stand my gracious Sovereign, that,
in respect of my true and faithful services, I am
not blemished with abatement of my allowance.†

* Sir Rowland Hayward, Knight, an Alderman of London, and Lord Mayor in 1570. He was descended from an ancient family in Shropshire, in a visitation of which county his second wife is described—Katherina, filia Thomæ Smithe, custumarius;” and it appears, notwithstanding the disparity of years which this passage glances at, that he had eight children by her. He died December 5th, 1592. O.S. Sir Rowland Hayward was buried in the church of St. Alphege in London, under a magnificent monument, on which he is represented, in his scarlet robe and collar of SS kneeling between his two wives, by each of whom he had eight children, whose figures attend those of their respec-tive mothers. His first wife was Joan, daughter of William Tils-worth, Esq., of London. The inscription on his tomb states him to have been thirty years an Alderman, at his death the oldest Alderman, and twice Lord Mayor. His issue is spoken of more at large in Vincent, No. 49, fol. 489, in Bib. Coll. Arm. Anstis ad librum cui titulus, the case of Founder's kin, &c. Latini Re-sponsis, fol. 31.

† Volume G. of the Talbot MSS. contains a great number of

So, (fearing to be tedious to your Majesty) as I am most bound, do daily pray for the long continuance of your Highness' reign over us, in long life and perfect health.

Sheffield Castle, 26th of January, 1580.

Your Highness' humble, faithful servant,

G. SHREWSBURY.

To the Queen's most excellent Majesty.

No. CLVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 6.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO THE QUEEN.

May it please your most excellent Majesty,
I HAVE received your gracious letter, written on
the behalf of my evil tenants of Glossopdale, who

these expostulatory letters, the most remarkable of which are inserted in this collection. They are rendered particularly interesting by the intelligence which they convey of Elizabeth's behaviour to the Earl while the Queen of Scots was in his custody. Anxious for his fidelity, and dreading the escape of his wretched prisoner as the greatest misfortune that could befal her, we might reasonably suppose that she would have loaded him with her bounty; that his very wishes would have been anticipated, and no means neglected to attach him more firmly to her interests. But he experienced a treatment directly contrary. The Queen not only suspected him, but was continually imparting her suspicions to himself; refused him the comfort of seeing his own children; made herself a party against him in a dispute between him and his Countess, which had given him great uneasiness; espoused the cause of his factious tenants at the Council-board; denied him access to her presence; and, to complete his inconvenience, at last diminished an allowance granted to defray the necessary charges attending his trust, though the sum was originally so scanty as to require an annual addition from his own purse. This little narrative would appear absolutely incredible, were it not supported in every circumstance by the evidence of these papers. What Elizabeth's motives were for so strange, and apparently so impolitic, a conduct is a question that defies all conjecture; Shrewsbury's obedience, however, could have been dictated only by those enthusiastic sentiments of loyalty which were not unfrequent in the days of absolute monarchy.

have troubled your Majesty, and the Lords of your Majesty's Council, without any just cause proceeding from me, as I do trust the Lords of your Majesty's Council will inform your Highness. And, whereas it hath pleased your Highness to write in the same letter that it doth become the keeper of so great a charge not to progress far from the care thereof; I do trust your Highness will pardon me humbly to deliver that the journey which I did make was not far from my house, and that the same voyage was begun and ended in three days; in which mean time my charge was safely guarded, and I did hear thence daily. I do trust my former service, in the guarding of my charge, is sufficient to countervail any information my enemies do make; whom I am assured are very busy to bring me into disgrace which your Highness, whereas I do trust they shall not prevail. And I am verily persuaded that they would not make any such attempt, if I might have access unto your royal presence, which is the thing I have long thirsted after, and do earnestly sue for at your Majesty's hands. And so, praying for the preservation of your Highness, long to reign over us, do most humbly take my leave.

Sheffield,

1580.*

Your Majesty's most faithful subject.

* This, and some following letters with imperfect dates, are placed together at the end of the year, in preference to an uncertain arrangement.

No. CLVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 10.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My very good Lord,

I HAVE received your letter ; and albeit it appears the care your Lordship had in mentioning to her Majesty my desire to remove presently with my charge to Chatsworth, yet it greatly grieves me that her Majesty is not pleased to repose that trust in me for the access of my children unto me, in any place where I shall think convenient ; whereby the world may gather that either my children are not so obedient as they ought to be, or else I more unable to direct and govern them than any my servants, at whose hands I cannot in reason look for such a readiness to obey my commandments and directions as at their's ; besides the discomfort this prohibition breedeth in me. And touching the doubtfulness her Majesty should have of me, in giving the Scots' Queen liberty to be seen, and saluted ; surely, my Lord, the reporters there-of to her Majesty have done me great wrong. Indeed, at her first being there, there happened a poor lame cripple to be in the lower unknown to all my people who guarded the place ; and when she heard that there were women in the , she desired some good gentlewoman to give her a smock ; whereupon they put one of their smocks out of a hole in the wall to her ; and so soon as it came to my knowledge, I was both offended with her, and my people for taking any

letters unto her; and, after that time, I took such order as no poor people came into the house during that time; neither, at the second time, was there any stranger at Buxton (but my own people) that saw her, for that I gave such charge, to the country about, none should come in to behold her.

And, where this Lady may be thought both to deliver and receive intelligence (to the comforts of sundry her Highness's lewd solicitors); for my part I assure myself that none but such letters as pass to and from the French Ambassador she can not get conveyed. And, no doubt, God will that her devices be discovered, and all her practices to return to her own harm, and to the safety of our gracious Sovereign; whom I beseech the living God ever to defend by his divine providence against all the wicked inventions of her foes.

And although I could be very well contented to desire your Lordship once again to move her Majesty for liberty to go with my charge to Chatsworth, by reason of the sickness that hath been in my house, yet, considering how honourably you have dealt herein, I will no further press you than you think fit for me to desire; but remain at Sheffield with my charge, unless I may obtain more liberty by your Lordship's good means, which I heartily require your Lordship's answer thereto, so soon as conveniently you may. So, with my most hearty commendations, and my wife's, to your Lordship, commit you to the Almighty.

No. CLVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 10.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO _____

SINCE the writing of my last letter to my good Mr. Secretary I have received answer from my Lord Treasurer touching the remove of my charge to Chatsworth ; which I perceive her Majesty has no liking of she should be there, my daughter Talbot being so near her, lying in childbed. Besides, it seems her Majesty has no liking our children should be with us (where this Queen is) that should be our most comfort to direct them for our causes, which is a great grief unto us. Therefore I pray you, if you shall not think it will be offence to her Majesty, at your good leisure to move her Highness that I may have liberty to go to Chatsworth, to sweeten my house ; and that my children may come to me, with her Majesty's favour, without offence or misliking of her Majesty, when I think good, else shall they not enter within my doors. So, praying your answer, and advice herein, which I will follow, I, &c.

No. CLIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 14.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM.

Good Mr. Secretary,

I HAVE received your letter, and according to the contents, have apprehended the man you writ to me for ; whom I have sent unto you, with all such

letters and papers as can be found in his house. And whereas you do signify in your letter that in respect of my present disease, and weak state of body, as of the unseasonableness of the time of the year for so long a journey, her Majesty doth think meet to dispense with my coming until the next spring ; for my own part, if it may stand with her Majesty's pleasure to give me leave to come up, I neither regard health, travel, time of the year or any other thing, in respect of the sight of her Majesty, my greatest comfort ; and until her good pleasure shall be such I shall long as one with child, and think every absent hour a year. And therefore good Mr. Secretary, I do earnestly request you to continue my former humble suit unto her Majesty, that somebody may be sent hither to receive this charge in my absence, within this fortnight, or three weeks, or sooner if it may be.

No. CLX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 57.)

DOCTOR WILSON TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,
I HAVE deferred hitherto to write to your Lordship until I had presented your letter to our Sovereign, which I did this day, finding her Highness at good leisure. For answer, I cannot put your Honour in any comfort to receive your whole demanded sum ; therefore my advice is, and so is Mr. Secretary's also, who hath travailed earnestly for you, that your Lordship would devise some good suit,

either in fee farm or otherwise, for your better allowance. I have spoken with my Lord Treasurer, who told me how earnest your Lordship hath been with him by your letters ; promising to deal effectually for you. I am sorry I can do no better service for your Lordship.

Our Parliament I trust will grow to an end after the book of subsidy hath been read, which I trust will be ready the next week. The French Ambassador has sent unto me a packet for your charge, wherein I think is no matter of moment as he hath told me ; and I think he would hardly trust me with any dangerous matter. There is no dealing for succession, being expressly forbidden.^{*} I cannot write any news, for that I do not hear any thing from any place at this time. Thus humbly I take my leave.

At the Court, this last of January, 1580.

Your Lordship's most assured to command,

Tho. Wilson.[†]

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

* Meaning that the French Ambassador was forbid to speak of Mary's right to the succession.

† Thomas Wilson, L.L.D. afterwards knighted, was the son of Thomas Wilson of Stroby, in Lincolnshire, by Anne, daughter and heir of Roger Comberworth, of Comberworth in the same county. He was educated in King's College, Cambridge. He was admitted a scholar of King's College, with twelve others from the foundation of Eton, in 1541, 33d Hen. VIII., for the profession of the civil law, and went thence into the family of Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, who intrusted him with the education of his two sons. During the reign of Mary, to whose persecution many fugitives owed their qualifications for future honours, he lived abroad, and was for some time imprisoned by the inquisition at Rome, on account of two treatises on rhetoric.

No. CLXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 63.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
THOMAS BAWDEWYN.

Bawdewyn,

I THINK it long now to understand the full resolution for this Queen's diet, and too heavy a burden for myself to sustain the charge, in this wise, of myself, and therefore will you make what means you can to let me know what I may trust to therein before you come down, whereby you may the better answer some of my creditors in London. But for my answer in this matter, I cannot be satisfied to receive the same by your report, but by letters from Mr. Secretary, and so I would have you let them understand. Fare you well.

Sheffield, the 23rd of February, 1580.

Your Lord and Master,

G. SHREWSBURY.

and logic which he had published in England, and in the English language, several years before; but was released soon after the death of that Princess, and returned to his own country, where he was appointed one of the Masters of Requests, and Master of St. Catherine's Hospital, near the Tower. In 1576 he was sent on an embassy to the Low Countries, where he acquitted himself so well, that in the following year he was named to succeed Sir Thomas Smith as Secretary of State, and soon after obtained the Deanery of Durham. He died in 1581, more distinguished as a scholar than as a minister, and perhaps unfortunate in having served jointly with the illustrious Walsingham, whose admirable conduct in his office admitted of no competition. Sir Thomas Wilson married Anne, daughter of Sir William Winter, of Lidney in Gloucestershire, and left three children; Nicholas who settled at Sheepwash in Lincolnshire; Mary, married, first, to Robert Burdett, of Bramcote in Warwickshire, secondly, to Sir Christopher Lowther, of Lowther in Westmoreland; and Lucretia, wife of George Belgrave, of Belgrave in Leicestershire.

I would have you buy me glasses to drink in.
Send me word what old plate yields the ounce,
for I will not leave me a cup of silver to drink in,
but I will see the next term my creditors paid.*

No. CLXII.

(Howard Papers. 1581.)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My Lord,

BEFORE the receipt of your letters your tenants were discharged from us, with a good lesson, only to seek your Lordship, and not to trust to any further exclamation or complaints here, except they had just matter to show that they had been injured contrary to the laws of this realm; so that I think they will altogether submit themselves to your Lordship's goodness, which I doubt not but shall be showed above their deserts; and so shall it be a meritorious deed in your Lordship to do good against evil, and where the power is in your hand not to execute the hardest. They are gone from us without any comfort or encouragement at all, but only that they do trust to their humble submission to yourself hereafter, so that your goodness must be now the greater to them when you show it.

Now, my Lord, touching the other matter, of

* This curious postscript induced me to insert the letter-Query. Was it the Earl's serious intention to sell his plate, or did he mean that Bawdewyn should communicate this intimation to the ministers, in hopes of moving Elizabeth's compassion?

your great purchasing and riches. This world is wholly given to reports and bruits of all sorts, and this matter has been long spread toward your Lordship, and, albeit, perhaps some speak it not with the best mind, or to the best intent, yet so long as they cannot justly charge you with ill getting it, or by ill means to come by it, it is a very good slander. A better bruit is it, my Lord, to hear of a nobleman to increase his patrimony, honourably and lawfully, than, otherwise, to sell.— How many destroy and overthrow their houses for want of good government of their own—I wish alway to hear rather of the former, for my part, of my friends, than the latter, so that it be not with any dishonourable report; for the Lord forbid in any, but especially in noble persons, to get any thing either in wealth or riches, but that which both in honour and conscience they and theirs may well enjoy. Therefore, my Lord, if that report of purchase be true, let it not trouble you; if it be not true, it is no slander; only it may be spoken to harm you some way in her Majesty's liberal consideration to you, which I hope shall not; neither have I, nor will I spare in this to answer for you, as I know and think, as likewise in all other that concerns you.

My Lord, there is another report, which I understand is come from the Ambassador here, by way of complaint against your Lordship, which I know will much mislike her Majesty; that is your Lordship doth of late keep the Scotch Queen there very barely of her diet, insomuch as on

Easter day last she had both so few dishes, and so bad meat in them, as it was too bad to see it; and that she, finding fault thereat, your Lordship should answer that you were cut off of your allowance, and therefore could yield her no better. Assuredly, my Lord, the Ambassador has spoken this, and says he is written to of her to complain to her Majesty. Your Lordship shall do well to understand if any such cause doth grow thence, and to advertise with speed, for this is most true, I write to you. And so, my Lord, I must leave you for this time, being greatly troubled against these great Lords' coming, who are now landed, and will be here on Friday next. The number of commissioners are these—The Prince Dauphin, the Marshal de Cossé, Monseigneur Lansac, Monseigneur Caruges, Monseigneur le Moth, Secretary Pinart, President Bosiney, du Vray.*—The whole train belonging to these are 400 and cdd. In haste, this 19th of April.

* Francis de Bourbon, then styled the Prince Dauphin, or Prince of Dauphiny; afterwards better known as the Prince of Conti—Artus de Cossé, Sieu de Gonnor, and Marechal of France; a furious Papist, and one of Catherine's old courtiers—Louis de Lusignan de St. Gelais, Sieur de Lansac—Tanneguy le Veneur de Carrouge—Bertrand Salignac de la Mothe (or Mota, as in the old English histories) Fenelon, who had been long a negotiator for the marriage—Claud Pinart, one of the French King's secretaries—Barnabas Brisson, First President of the Parliament of Paris, a most worthy and accomplished man; he was hanged in 1592, by order of the infamous Council of Sixteen—Jaques Vray, Secretary of the Duke of Anjou's Treasury, called in the next letter "Virye." These were the Commissioners appointed by the French Court to conclude the treaty of marriage with Elizabeth.

Your Lordship's most assured,
R. LEICESTER.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Marshal of
England, &c.*

No. CLXIII.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My good Lord,

I HOPE to hear from your Lordship by this bearer, that the air of the country has brought you your health. I would have sent a person of better quality, but that your Lordship said you would remain in a secret place, and willed me to send my letters to your servant at Theobalds, to be conveyed to you. The Queen's Majesty had licensed me to repair into the country, but in fine has stayed me, which I do think doth grow upon the arrival of Don Antonio,* whom the Queen would have to be kept secret, although indeed it is openly spoken of. My opinion is, it had been better he had never come hither, if her Majesty mean to do nothing for him; and, seeing he landed in France first, I do surely think his first coming hither is not without consent of that King. Monseigneur has written hither that 50 horsemen, with salt and money, are entered Cambray; and presses earnestly the speedy proceeding in the marriage. Vray has already been with him, and is dispatched to the King, upon whose return Monseigneur will

* Don Antonio of Portugal, who came to solicit Elizabeth's assistance against the King of Spain. (See No. CXLI. &c.)

write at good length. By letters from Sir Henry Cobham it seems that the King will do little in the causes of Portugal or the Low Countries before the conclusion of the marriage. When I hear further your Lordship shall be advertised. God send you your perfect health. June 27th, 1581.

Your Lordship's most assured,

T. SUSSEX.

No. CLXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 105.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
THOMAS BAWDEWYN.

Bawdewyn,
I HAVE thought good, receiving my Lord Treasurer's and my Lord Chancellor's letter for the payment of my subsidy, and to whom it should be paid unto, I have thought it good to send the letter unto you, which I would have you to keep safe. This gentleman, Doctor Gilbert, was sent from her by Majesty by my Lord of Leicester's means. His coming was too late, and therefore his abode short, though I could have been pleased to have had him longer. I have spoken to him to send me some biscuit bread, which is not made by common poticars, and also a serecloth, to use for my gout, which he has promised me to send. See him well recompensed, for surely, for the small talk I have had with him, I have found him a sensible man; therefore seek to be acquainted with him, and be very friendly of him. And I have written to my Lord of Leicester to remember her Majesty of

my suit; declaring that the £ 400 a quarter will bardly serve to find fuel, light, spoil of my stuff, besides many other heavy charges, and the keeping of 40 soldiers daily in my house; and I have presumed that upon my Lord of Leicester's request, that both my Lord Treasurer and Mr. Walsingham will join with him, and so shew them both. So I end, marvelling I have not yet heard from you. Gilbert writes to me that my Lord Morley has found matter against me for Brierly. Speak with Gilbert herein; and for all other matters I know you will be careful; and you shall find me a good master to you, and so I end.

Sheffield, this 25th of January, 1581.

Your Lord and Master,

G. SHREWSBURY.

No. CLXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 120.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
THOMAS BAWDEWYN.

Bawdewyn,

Now that Gilbert's wife is brought in bed, and has a daughter, whereunto I am godfather, therefore I would have you give the Queen's Majesty's new-year's gift this year to Francis Talbot, who I have written shall be my deputy; and for money to the nurse and midwife, see you give it to him to give them, which will be 40s. to the nurse, and to the midwife as others give, which will be near as much as to the nurse. Your letter and stuff came this night by Timperley, and two glasses, one of

them broken, and two stone jugs ; and your dozen candlesticks I like not, because they are too little but only for common places, but there will be occupation found for them. I like well of your stay to the end of the term, before you go with my boys into France, yet I pray you make haste to be at the assizes in Staffordshire, because of my lands, for I see a promise now-a-days is performed by few.

I am now shortly in hope to hear some good news from you how likelihood will fall out for my suit, upon her Majesty's return home again : and I am wished by my friend, Mr. Beale, to write to my Lord Treasurer herein to further it, which I am in hope, when it shall be moved by others, though he be her Majesty's housewife, yet I assure myself of his lawful favour, and so let my Lord understand from me. I am removed to the castle, and am most quiet when I have the fewest women here, and am best able to discharge the trust reposed in me. And so I end.

Sheffield Castle, this 10th of February, 1581.

Your Lord and Master,
G. SHREWSBURY.

I have been moved to take my Lady Lennox's men, but especially Nelson and his wife, and have refused them. I have too many spies in my house already, and mind to make choice of others I may trust.

To my servant, Thomas Bawdewyn.

No. CLXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. F. fol. 393.)

LORD TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My most humble duty remembered, may it please your Lordship. Monsieur has taken shipping into Flanders,* and minds to land at Flushing, where the States meet him; and thence he will go to Antwerp. There are gone over with him my Lord of Leicester, my Lord Hunsden, my Lord Charles Howard, my Lord Thomas Howard, my Lord Windsor, my Lord Sheffield, my Lord Willoughby, and a number of young gentlemen besides. As soon as he is at Antwerp, all the Englishmen return, which is thought will be about a fortnight hence. Her Majesty is minded to be at Greenwich, or St. James', on Saturday, 17th of this instant; it is thought it must be to St. James', for that Greenwich is not altogether sound of the plague. It is reported there is a great scarcity both of victuals and all things else in Flanders. My Lord of Leicester has carried over with him 50 bives and 500 muttons for his provision during his abode. The departure was mournful betwixt her Highness and Monsieur, she loth to let him go, and he as loth to depart. Her Majesty, on her return, will be long in no place in which she lodged as she went, neither will she come to White Hall,

* The Netherlanders had lately elected Monsieur their Governor, with the title of Duke of Brabant, &c., and he now went to take possession of his new dignities; but, all his enterprises there proving unfortunate, he retired into France within a few months, and died soon after, as was said, of a broken heart.

because the places shall not give cause of remembrance to her of him with whom she so unwillingly parted. Monsieur promised his return in March, but how his causes in the Low Country will permit him is uncertain.* Her Highness went no further but Canterbury ; Monsieur took shipping at Sandwich. In the way betwixt Canterbury and Sandwich, a Frenchman, La Fine, lost a portmanteau full of jewels, estimated in value at 6000 crowns : the gentleman stayed here in England, in hope to hear some good tidings. My Lord

* All the writers on this period inform us that the Queen and Monsieur parted on very ill terms. Camden, in particular, gives us the following romantic tale. "The Queen," says he, "celebrating the anniversary of her Coronation day with great splendour in the November preceding Monsieur's departure, took a ring from her finger and put it upon his, in the presence of the whole Court, which stroke of gallantry, and the passionate manner in which it was performed, coinciding with the public expectation, it was immediately concluded that the marriage was absolutely resolved on, insomuch that the Governor of Antwerp, then present, sent the intelligence thither, where it was received with all public demonstrations of joy." But, lo, the Queen, this wise Queen, having retired to her chamber, "was so terrified and vexed by the lamentations of her gentlewomen, with whom she used to be familiar, that she passed the night in doubts and cares, without sleep ; and the next morning sent for Monsieur, who, quitting her after a long private conversation, and shutting himself up in his apartment, threw her ring from him in a fury, with bitter invectives against the lightness of women, and the inconstancy of islanders." The credit of this relation is entirely destroyed by the authentic evidence of the letter before us. Lord Talbot, living in the Court, and ranking with the highest there, could not have remained ignorant of such a rupture, while Camden, if it had really happened, would probably never have gained the information ; and the account which we have here from the former of the separation of these two great personages, and of Monsieur's promise to return, in itself very curious, is rendered yet more interesting because it corrects a misrepresentation of some importance in history.

Howard went a night before Mousieur, to see the ships in readiness ; and, being aboard, in the night, by the forgetfulness of a bow, set the ship on fire in the gun-room. Before it was espied it had almost got to the powder. By great chance, a man of my Lord Howard's laid himself flat in the flame, and tumbled in it, and so stayed the fire from the powder till water came, otherwise it had blown up the ship and all that were aboard. The party was scorched, both face and hands, and his garments burnt. It is thought her Majesty will well reward him for his labour. It was one of the greatest ships.

Malvoisier, the Ambassador Leager, and Marchimont, he that is here for Monsieur, were lodged in my Lord Clinton's house in Chanen Row ; now at their going they left a chest full of plate behind them ; in their absence the chest is broken, and the plate gone ; they are returned, and, finding it, have made complaint to my Lord Treasurer, who sent for the woman that kept the house, and after examination, committed her to the bailiff of Westminster to custody. She has confessed nothing, neither is there any thing as yet heard.

Thus, with my wonted prayer to Almighty God for your Lordship's long life, with much health, I most humbly take my leave, craving your Lordship's daily blessing.

From Sion, this 12th of February.
Your Lordship's loving and most obedient son,

FRANCIS TALBOT.

To my Lord my father.

No. CLXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 122.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My noble good Lord,
BEING long in writing to your Lordship, being so many ways bound for your Lordship's great courtesies shewed to me and mine. Besides, I perceive, by Bawdewyn, my man, it pleased your Lordship to ask him of the matter that is like to grow betwixt Harrington and me, for lands I purchased of the late Lord Monteagle ; and of the matter betwixt my ill tenants of Glossop and me, which I hope the Justices have made relation to your Lordship before this time, wherein I hope it will appear my good dealing with them, and their ill usage of me. This your noble dealing with me binds me, if more can be, to rest at your devotion, and to think myself happy of such a friend. And I beseech your Lordship I may have your furtherance and good help to her Majesty, for recompense for my long painful services these thirteen years, and taking away from me, to my disgrace, the allowance I had, my charge being as great as ever it was ; and this I must say, it was not her Majesty's allowance, when it was at the most, that served me in her Majesty's services ; and now, having but £15 and odd yearly, it will scant find the 40 soldiers, and fire for her folks, and linen and stuff they spoil ; besides her diet ; my people I keep daily, which I would lessen if I had not this charge ; and a number of heavy charges besides this charge brings with it ; and the greatest

charge of all, which I hope will be recompensed, is my great care I have to perform my duty to her Majesty, which has been a shortening of my time, which I have not, nor do, weigh in comparison of my love and duty to my Sovereign. If this deserve nothing, my fortune and hap is the worse. And so I end, fearing to trouble your Lordship.

Sheffield Castle, this 2nd of March, 1581.

Your Lordship's most faithful friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
my Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. CLXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol G. fol. 325. 1581.)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

I AM behind hand, I must confess, with your Lordship, as well with my farewell, being upon a sudden, as also with my salutations since my return ; most heartily thanking your Lordship for your kind and friendly remembrance, so often times received from you ; assuring you that you have not a more fast and assured friend living to you ; and touching your causes here in hand, I shall not fail to solicit them more effectually than if they concerned myself.

Touching the matters of the Low Countries I cannot say much, but this much with grief I think on ; to see such a country refused as that is ; for

to her Majesty they wholly and simply offered themselves before Monseigneur was accepted;* but her Majesty's goodness was such as she would not possess what appertains to another. Few Princes have so good conscience. God make them thankful to her for it, and preserve your Lordship as I wish myself.

In haste, this 8th of March.

Your Lordship's assured,

R. LEICESTER.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
and Cousin the Earl of Shrewsbury, &c.*

No. CLXIX.

(Howard Papers.)

ROBERT BEALE TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My duty most humbly remembered unto your honourable good Lordship. I have shewed my other letter which at this time I send unto your Lordship, unto Mr. Secretary, who tells me that *it is her Majesty's pleasure that I should write in such sort unto your Lordship so as your Lordship may shew the same unto the Scottish Queen*, and so procure her answer thereto, either in writing, or by avouching the same by word of mouth unto your Lordship, *and yet, nevertheless, it is meant that she should not know but that it proceeded from myself only.*† And,

* The Dutch, as hath been before observed, tendered their allegiance to Elizabeth in 1575, and it should seem by this passage that the offer was now repeated. The mention of Monseigneur's election to the government fixes the date of this letter.

† We have here a new and curious instance of Elizabeth's treachery. Mary, as a condition for the favour of being allowed to write to her son, was required to bind herself, either in writing,

sides (whereas I have not set it down so as-
edly) that if her Grace will perform the two
nts contained in my said letter, that is the
uching of so much as is contained in the same,
I I was willed to say here on her behalf, and,
ondly, the writing unto her son to make some
erture for the unkindness which is here conceived
on the refusal of her Majesty's messengers sent
Berwick, and such like actions, that then she
ght be assured that that which she desires should
granted unto her; yea, in case she can be
ought to do so much, I am credibly informed
d assured that her requests will be granted unto
r. Wherefore your Lordship may deal more
ldly and confidently with her; and if it shall
ase her to send hither the letter which she shall

by a verbal declaration to the Earl of Shrewsbury, to the per-
formance of certain articles which we shall find in the next letter;
particular, for it was the point at which Elizabeth principally
ed, that she would persuade James to make an apology for
ing (very properly) refused to receive the messengers sent to
wick. In order to procure these concessions, Beale is directed
rite a second letter to Shrewsbury, "in such sort as the same
y be shewn to the Scottish Queen." We have in that second
er a long repetition of his speeches to Elizabeth, but not one
d of hers in answer. Mary was to have no security beyond
le's phrases of "daring to undertake," and "verily thinking,"
t his mistress would grant her request. But even this degree
caution was not thought sufficient. In spite of all care, some
nal expression might possibly be construed into an engagement
the part of Elizabeth. Beale is therefore made to tell the Earl,
t "nevertheless it is meant that she should not know but that
proceeded from himself only." Thus Mary was to be cruelly
eived; James betrayed into an act of meanness unworthy of a
ng; and Beale, who really seems to have acted with honesty
l sincerity, reputed as the author of the wicked fraud. We
ll see presently that Mary formed that opinion of him from
conduct in this affair.

send unto her son in this behalf, it will be well taken in every good part, and I dare to undertake that she shall have an answer thereto, with as much expedition as possibly may be. If otherwise she would attempt to send unto him, or refuse to write, it would breed unkindness and jealousy, which I, for my part, seek to remove as much as I may; and therefore pray your Lordship to take the more pains to persuade her Grace to condescend to satisfy in so small a matter her Majesty's expectation.

I have done what I can, and, howsoever things may hereafter happen to fall out, I have dealt uprightly, seeking as much as lay in me to do some good offices, and to reduce things into the terms of good friendship and amity ; and, for my poor credit's sake, would be loth that having been an instrument to bring things to some good pass, they should be now overthrown for so small a matter as this is which is required at her Grace's hands. I can say no more, but remit the matter unto the Lord, who direct her heart to the best, and preserve your good Lordship and my very good Lady, and my little Lady Favour, in his blessed and prosperous tuition, and so most humbly take my leave.

From Greenwich, April 2nd, 1582, in haste.

Your Lordship's most humbly at commandment,

ROBERT BEALE.*

*To the right honourable and my very good
Lord, the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl
Marshal of England.*

* Eldest son of Robert Beale (a descendant from the family of Beale, of Woodbridge in Suffolk), by Amy, daughter of — Mori-

No. CLXX.

(Howard Papers.)

ROBERT BEALE TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My duty to your Lordship humbly remembered. By my former letters I advertised your Lordship of so much as at the first upon my return hither I had done touching such matters as both the Scottish Queen and your Lordship had desired me to declare unto her Majesty, and to their Lordships here. During the time of Monseigneur's abode her Highness had not any convenient leisure to make any resolute answer thereunto ; wherefore, since his departure, and her Majesty's repair to this place, it hath pleased her Highness to command me to repeat so much as I had told her before, and was given me by her Grace in charge, which I have done in the best manner that I could, signifying unto her Majesty that I was willed by the said Queen, upon the word of a Princess and Christian, to assure her Majesty, that in case it would please her Highness to deal honourably and favourably with her and her son, her Grace would

son. He married Editha, daughter of Henry St. Barbe, of Somersetshire, and sister to the lady of Sir Francis Walsingham, under whose patronage he first appeared at Court, and was appointed Secretary for the Northern Parts, and a Clerk of the Privy Council. He was a bitter enemy to the Papists, and perhaps somewhat inclined to Puritanism ; wherefore, as Camden seems to suppose, he was chosen to convey to Fotheringhay the warrant for the beheading of Mary. He read that fatal instrument on the scaffold, and was a witness to its execution. We find him in 1600 one of the Commissioners at the treaty of Boulogne, which was his last public service ; after which he retired, with many more of Elizabeth's inferior servants, to make room for the numerous and needy train of her successor.

be contented to condescend to any thing that might tend to her Majesty's safety and good liking. That she desired above all things her Majesty's favour and friendship, which if she might be assured of, then would she prefer the same above all others, and make thereof an open demonstration against all that might seek to disturb the quietness of her Majesty's estate, and benefit of this realm. That she would have no dealings with papists, rebels, fugitives, jesuits, or others, who might go about to trouble the estate of the policy and religion now established, or would seek the alteration of the same. And, seeing her Grace many times, by sundry protestations of the name of the Lord, and her own honour, assured me that her meaning was to deal plainly and sincerely, I humbly besought her Majesty to have some consideration of this matter, and, for the discharge of my promise, to yield some such answer as she should think good. I added further (even as I remember her Grace said unto me) that this might be a means that both she and her son might shift off all dealings with other foreign Princes and Estates, and rather help to suppress such practices which are now coloured perhaps under their titles and name ; that these two realms, being joined in perfect friendship and amity, were like to be a good stay and help to each other against all practices of such as should seek to annoy them, even as the discord and falling out between them had turned always to the benefit of others, and common detriment of them both.

And so, descending to the principal part of my charge, which was touching her Grace's request for the sending unto her son into Scotland, I declared my knowledge therein, how it seemed to grow upon certain letters sent from the French King and Queen Mother ; and that her Grace sought therein the benefit and quietness of both realms, which she was sorry to understand to be entered into some terms of disliking ; and, therefore, before things passed further into a worse estate, she was desirous to do the best offices that she could to compound them in time. That her meaning was to persuade her son to embrace her Majesty's favour and amity above all others, for that should in her opinion be most for his benefit ; and so was desirous to leave him in good terms of amity with her Majesty (being herself diseased, and not like to continue long) ; otherwise, he had a great heart, and might be drawn into other practices, which might be offensive to her Majesty, and dangerous to her son, whom she would, in his marriage, and otherwise, to be advised and directed by her Majesty.

And, to the intent her Majesty might have no occasion to doubt or suspect any collusion or cunning herein, I told her that her Grace offered to make her Highness privy to such instructions as the party whom she meant to send should carry ; that she was contented that he should be accompanied with some of her Majesty's servants thither, and that there he should do nothing without his privity ; that only her son's mind should be under-

stood touching this matter, and nothing resolved and concluded by her Grace before the return of the said messengers, but this to be done in this realm, with her Majesty's good liking and assent; that her meaning was not directly or indirectly to alter the estate of that realm,* either touching religion or otherwise, or to procure any harm unto any; but in case there were any thing which her Majesty would require to be done, then would she interpose, and use her credit and authority to do any thing that might tend to her Majesty's good liking and contentation.

These, and such like words, being first delivered unto me by her Grace, upon confidence that she dealt plainly with me, and would perform as much as she had willed me to say unto her Majesty on her behalf, I was the bolder to discourse at large unto her Highness; whom in very truth I found very well inclined to do as much as is by her Grace required, so as her Majesty might not be

* "Whereas I am privately accused," says Mary in her letter to Elizabeth of the 8th of November following, "by the Earl of Shrewsbury, that, contrary to what I promised to Beale, I have dealt with my son about conveying my title in Scotland to him without your privity, I beseech you believe not Beale's suggestions. I promised nothing but on certain conditions, to which I am not at all tied unless those on your part be performed by you. Since that time I have received no answer, and a deep silence hath ensued touching those matters; but the practices and contrivances in Scotland, to the destruction of me and my son, have been continued." The substance of the long and very memorable epistle from which the preceding passage is extracted may be found in Camden, p. 490; and well deserves the attention of those who would obtain a clear knowledge of Mary's true character, and of Elizabeth's detestable conduct towards her in the last years of her imprisonment.

abused with vain words, and it might stand with her Highness's honour.

For the first, I answered that I could not but report such word as I had received, declaring how I had besought her Grace to deal plainly with me; for, as I would be glad to do all the best offices that I could to do her service, so would I be unwilling to be an instrument whereby her Majesty might be deluded or abused; wherefore I assured her Majesty that I was willed in the word and faith of a Princess to deliver as much unto her as I had done; seeing I had no such credit or commandment, I durst not presume to crave so much of her Grace in writing, but yet doubted not but that her Grace would avouch so much so as this her request of sending into Scotland might be granted unto her; and, in case your Lordship can procure either her letter for the confirmation hereof, or, otherwise, her acknowledging by word of mouth that she delivered so much unto me, methinks that I dare undertake that her request will be the earlier granted unto her.

The other let which I found was a point of honour wherein her Majesty thinks herself somewhat touched, in that a messenger being expressly sent by her Majesty for this purpose to Berwick, the King and his Council refused to admit him, and, besides, continues in a misliking of the English nation, which in truth does him no good. I remember her Grace in some speeches unto me disliked such things; that he should be addicted to any factions or partialities; and offered to do what she

could to salve all matters between her Majesty and him ; and, for that I am very desirous that my negotiation might have some good success, for the service of her Majesty, and quietness of both realms, I shall be the bolder to discover unto your Lordship what I think to be the readiest way to bring that to pass which her Grace so earnestly desires. If it would please her, by some letter unto her son, *to procure that he might send some messenger hither, or letter, in courteous and amiable sort, to excuse the refusal of the messenger sent to Berwick,* it would do much good, and serve for a good beginning and entrance to procure such license for her Grace to send into Scotland as she hath required, and in my conscience I think it would not then be denied unto her.

After I had delivered this much unto her Majesty myself, her Highness appointed my Lord Treasurer, Lord Chamberlain, Earl of Leicester, and Mr. Secretary, to confer on this matter ; and, for that her Grace, about the time of my departure, willed me to do her commendations unto them, and to desire them, as counsellors unto her Majesty, to advise her what course she should take, and what she might do to procure her Majesty's favour, I have declared unto them so much as I did before unto her Majesty ; beseeching their Lordships to be a means that her Grace might receive some speedy answer. And, to say the truth, if they could be resolved in those points which her Majesty stands in doubt of, I do verily think that they would help to procure as much for

her Grace as she hath required, so as it might be with her Majesty's safety and honour.

Thus am I bold to impart unto your Lordship at large what I have done touching those matters which I was willed to recommend here. I beseech the Lord that I may be an instrument to do some good ; and, forasmuch as I am in hope that there will some good success ensue, I shall pray your Lordship to persuade her Grace not to make any difficulty in these two points, but procure that they may be done with some speed ; and, as I have not hitherto sought by any cunning to deceive her Grace, so I trust or ever it be long she shall, by the obtaining of as much as she gave me in charge to require, perceive that I have dealt honestly and uprightly on her behalf. I will not trouble your Lordship at this present with such petty matters as were contained in a memorial delivered unto me by Monsieur Nau, wherein no difficulty will be made so as the other may be brought to pass ; and therefore her Grace needeth not to make any doubt or scruple but that in every of them she shall receive as much favour as may be conveniently looked for. I have not also failed to move her Majesty touching your Lordship's matter, by all the best means that I could, and trust that your Lordship shall understand or ever it be long more particularly her Majesty's intention therein. And so (craving pardon for troubling your Lordship with so long a discourse) with remembrance of my humble duty to my good Lady your bedfellow, I most humbly take my leave.

From Greenwich, the 2nd of April, 1582.
 Your Lordship's most humbly at commandment,
 ROBERT BEALE.

*To the right honourable and my very singular
 good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl
 Marshal of England.*

No. CLXXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 136.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My noble good Lord,
 I do think myself very much beholden unto your
 good Lordship for many former favours which I
 have received by you, and where it is not unknown
 to your Lordship that my allowance for this Lady,
 my charge, hath been abated; I have made suit
 unto her Highness for some recompense, in which
 I do find so cold comfort that I am near driven to
 despair to obtain any thing, which doth cause me
 to seek to your Lordship as my dearest friend, in
 what sort I may best deal, wherein I desire your
 fatherly advice. I have lately written to your
 Lordship concerning the liege privilege; in which
 cause I am driven either to lease my inheritance,
 or to join with the country. And, for my coming
 up, I have written daily to Mr. Secretary, and can
 receive no determinate resolution. Thus, bold to
 impart unto your Lordship my greatest affairs, I
 wish to your Lordship as to myself.

Sheffield Castle, the 20th of April, 1582.
 Your Lordship's most faithful, ever assured,
 G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
 my Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
 England.*

No. CLXXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 84.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My noble good Lord,
I HAVE been a very long suitor unto the Queen's most excellent Majesty that it would please her Highness to grant me, in fee farm, some lands, in recompence of my service in the safe guarding of this Lady my charge, as also in recompence of my former allowance defaulted; but do find such delays that I am near in despair to attain to any thing, and do therefore do flee unto your Lordship as unto my dearest friend; desiring you that, upon motion had by Mr. Secretary, it may please you to further the same, as my trust is in you. So (praying your Lordship to stand indifferent in our liege cause, as I know other of the Exchequer will not) being ready to go with my charge to Buxton whence my Lord of Cumberland, and the rest, are departed, I do wish unto your Lordship as unto myself.

Sheffield Castle, this 12th of June, 1582.

Your Lordship's most faithful friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
my Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. CLXXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 164.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My noble good Lord,
WHERE heretofore I have written unto your Lordship that it would please you to further a suit I

have to her Majesty for land in fee farm, which hath now depended a good while, I do perceive by Mr. Secretary that her Majesty maketh some difficulty thereof, which is no small grief unto me, and the more for that it is now known abroad that I have attempted such a suit; which if it should be denied, adding thereto the detraction of a great part of the former allowance that I had for the diet of this Lady, it would redound infinitely to my discredit, and touch me nearly in my poor honour; whereof I hope her Majesty will have some regard; and not altogether forget the faithful performance of my former long, painful, and perilous service unto her, neither leave me the only unfortunate servant that she hath who yet never tasted of the fruits of her Grace's bounty, which all others have done; as, for a particular, my Lord Scrope, being employed in this self same service, not passing a year, did receive. There were never any of my ancestors that have been employed in their Prince's service who, for a memory of their loyalty, have not been bountifully rewarded; which they have left after them to their succession. And albeit, my Lord, I know well that you may not so conveniently deal with her Majesty as a suitor in such causes, by reason of your office, as some others may, yet do I know that her Majesty will confer with you in the state of her lands, and ask your advice in such matters; and then I nothing doubt but that as you will prudently advise her, so you will carefully persuade her as in honour, and in all due regard thereof, principally appertaineth. I therefore most heartily and ear-

nestly desire your Lordship that as ever heretofore I have found you my honourable good friend, so in this you will deliver your favourable opinion to her Majesty, and then I assure myself she will out of hand grant it; and I earnestly pray your good Lordship that you will inform me, by your letter, what answer her Majesty will make unto you, without whose good help I doubt of any good speed herein; being, I protest, most loath to cumber her Majesty; and, if I were in her presence, I think I should scarce open my mouth therein, but would hope that her Majesty, of herself, would have gracious consideration of me. Thus, my good Lord, it lying in your power to bind me and mine to acknowledge ourselves for ever bound and beholden unto you, and not forgetting my wife's most hearty commendations, I commit you to the Almighty.

Buxton, June 27th, 1582.

Your Lordship's most faithful and assured friend,
G. SHREWSBURY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. CLXXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 166.)

ROBERT BEALE TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My duty most humbly remembered unto your honourable good Lordship. The Saturday after I departed from your Lordship I came to the Court, and delivered unto her Majesty such letters as I brought; besides, I declared unto her Highness

so much as was contained in your Lordship's and Mr. Chancellor's* letter, and what I was willed by you to report concerning the late negociation. It seemed her Majesty would take some deliberation therein, wherefore I have imparted the substance of the whole matter unto my Lord Treasurer, the Earl of Leicester, Mr. Vicechamberlain, and Mr. Secretary;† whom I earnestly solicited to procure an answer, for that the time prescribed by that lady draws nigh unto an end. I know not what will be the success; yet the French Ambassador, who had audience on Monday last, has sent me word that her Majesty told him that I should shortly be dispatched backwards with a message that should be acceptable unto that Lady, but I hear not of any resolution; the Lord grant that it may be good; I do what I can to procure a good answer, and that with speed. I have delivered unto her Majesty your Lordship's letter and message, which were committed unto me, wherewith her Highness seems to rest satisfied, as I declared heretofore unto your servant Bawdewyn.

Monseigneur is come from Dunkirk to Calais, and so to Abbeville, into France; whereupon Dunkirk was immediately besieged by the Prince

* Sir Walter Mildmay, who, as Mary was given to understand, was to have concluded the negotiation lately begun by Beale. It was suddenly abandoned upon the receipt of some intelligence from Hen. IV. of France, respecting a new plan of the Guise family in favour of Mary; or, at least, Elizabeth broke it off under that pretence.

† Hatton and Walsingham.

of Parma and the malcontents. This action causes men to speak diversly ; the time will declare the truth. And so, having nothing else wherewith to trouble your Lordship at this present, I most humbly take my leave.

From Barns, the 28th of June, 1582.
Your Lordship's most humbly at commandment,
ROBERT BEALE.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord, the
Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of
England.*

No. CLXXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 170.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
THOMAS BAWDEWYN.

Bawdewyn,

I HAVE herewith sent you a bill that Mr. Nau delivered me to will you to receive for the Scotch Queen, as may appear by the acquittance here enclosed ; yet, before you deal therein, know Mr. Secretary's mind whether you shall receive it or not. She has declared great want she has of money. I am sorry you have put no more in execution, but stay till Michaelmas term. I have been greatly abused with them, and my riches they talk of + are in other men's purses ; God knows I make many shifts to keep me out of debt, and to help my children, which are heavy burdens, though comfortable, so long as they do well. I can say no more, but I have spies near about me, and

* Nau, or Nawe, a Frenchman ; Mary's Secretary and principal confidant. See her trial, &c.

+ See a letter from the Earl of Leicester, No. CLXII.

know them well; if they said truly, I could better endure it. Little said is soon amended, and so I end.

Sheffield, this 12th of July, 1582.

Your Lord and Master,

G. SHREWSBURY.

No. CLXXVI.

(Howard Papers.)

SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

THE French Ambassador having of late had audience of her Majesty, delivered unto her certain letters from the Queen of Scots, directed to herself, and others to the Lords of the Council, containing a grief, or rather a complaint, in the said letters directed to the Lords that, for lack of common resolution, and sundry unnecessary delays, the matter treated the last winter by Mr. Beale was put off; whereof she thought good, upon a letter received lately from her son, to put their Lordships in mind, to the end her sincerity wherewith she has proceeded might be known unto them, and the desire she has of the good and repose of this isle, which (having not been received nor acknowledged to her intent) she thought good to lay before them, to serve for a discharge of any matter that hereafter she may be charged withal by the Queen's Majesty. For answer whereunto, her Majesty does think it meet that you should let her understand that, first, she does find it strange

that she should direct her letters unto her Council, as unto principal members of this Crown (for so does she in her said letters term them, a course that heretofore has not been held), whereof her Majesty cannot otherwise conceive but that there she doth not repute her to be so absolute as that without the assent of such whom she terms "principal members of the Crown," she canot direct her policy; or else, that upon this charge given by her of delay used in satisfying of her requests, she were by them to be called to an account. Of which misconceit of the said Queen and misunderstanding of the absoluteness of her Majesty's government, she thinks meet she should by your Lordship be better informed. For although her Highness doth carry as great a regard unto her Council as any of her progenitors have done, and has just cause so to do in respect of their wisdom and fidelity, yet is she to be let understand that they are Counsellors by choice and not by birth, whose services are no longer to be used in that public function than it shall please her Majesty to dispose of the same; and therefore her Highness cannot conceive to what end a complaint should be made unto them, unless either she repute her to be in her minority, or else doth mean to use her Council as witnesses against her.*

* The Queen of Scots evidently alludes to this letter in hers to Elizabeth, of the 8th of November, which has been lately quoted. As Camden's abridgement of this particular part of the letter is somewhat incorrect, I give it here in her own words. "Pourvoyez, s'il vous plaist," says Mary, with that dignified spirit which never forsook her, "a l'amendement de mon traitement par

And, touching the matter of delay wherewith she findeth herself so greatly grieved ; her Majesty doth suppose that if she could call to remembrance that the only impediment hath grown upon the King's refusal to receive her Minister, she should have had more reason to have blamed her son than her. And, whereas she doth earnestly desire that the former intent of sending into Scotland might take place; her Majesty would have you let her know that (having considered better of the contents of the King her son's said letters, and finding by the same that, instead of some better excuse and satisfaction to be yielded unto her for the secluding of her Minister from access into his realm, he allegeth in his said letter that the refusal of the message preceded only of

deça (in England) que je ne puis suffrir plus longuement, et ne me remettez a la discretion d'autre quelconque que de vous-mesme, de qui seule, comme je vous escrivois dernierement, je veux doresnavant tenir tout le bien et le mal que je recevray en vostre pays. Faites moi ceste faveur ; que j'aye vostre intention par escrit, ou l'Ambassadeur de France pour moy ; car de m'arrester à ce que le Compte de Scherusbery, ou autres, en diront ou escriront de vostre part, j'ay trop d'experience qu'il n'y peut avoir assurance pour moy, le moindre sujet qu'ils se fantasiront estant suffisant pour innover le tout du jour au lendemain. Outre ce, dernierement que j'escrivis à ceux de vostre Conseil, vous me feistes entendre que je ne me devois addresser à ceux, mais à vous seule ; et ainsi d'estendre seulement leur credit et autorité à me mal faire il ne seroit raisonnable, comme il est advenu en ceste dernière restriction, ou, contre vostre intention, j'ay esté plus indignement traitee. Cela me donne tout occasion de doubter qu'aucuns de mes ennemis en vostre dit Conseil n'ayent expres procuré que les autres du dit Conseil ne feussent participans de mes justes complaintes, ne voyans peravanture leurs compagnons adherer a leurs meschans attentats contre ma vie, ou que s'ils en avoient cognoissance, ils s'y opposeroient pour vostre honneur, et leur devoir envers vous."

the regard he had to the surety of his person, and the quietness of his country, as the state of his affairs then required, as though her Majesty had sought any hurt to the one, or disturbance to the other), she doth not see how, either in reason or honour, she may send to the said King; so long as his ear shall be possessed by such counsellors as do work in him so hard and sinister a conceit of the sincere meaning of a Princess that hath by her actions towards him, wherein she calleth the world to witness, deserved at his hands a more thankful requital of her benefits bestowed many ways upon him than he doth now seem to yield her. And, therefore, if she be not suffered to send to the said King whereby may ensue that good for the common weal and profit of both realms, that she doth promise, the blame thereof is not laid upon her Majesty, but upon the King himself, or rather upon his ill counsellors that are about him, who by their persuading him to carry himself thus unthankfully, and with so little respect towards her Majesty, are themselves the cause why the said Queen's desire to be licensed to send into Scotland cannot be satisfied. But, when her Majesty shall understand that the King shall put on a better opinion of her disposition towards him, though the unthankful requital of former favours extended towards him might with reason altogether discourage her to have any further dealing with him, notwithstanding, her Highness will not fail to concur with the said Queen in any such course as may tend to the preservation of his per-

son, and the continuance of that realm in good quiet. And, this being the substance of that her Majesty willed me to deliver unto your Lordship I most humbly take my leave.

From the Court at Nonsuch, the 30th of July, 1582.

Your Lordship's to command,

FRA. WALSHINGHAM. —

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CLXXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 173.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO THE QUEEN.

May it please your most excellent Majesty, HAVING these ten years been secluded from your most gracious sight and happy presence, which more grieveth me than any travel or discommodity that I have suffered in this charge that it hath pleased your Majesty to put me in trust withal, I have taken the boldness most humbly to beseech your Majesty that it may please the same to licence me for a fortnight's journey towards your Majesty's royal person; to the end you may by myself receive a true account of my said charge, and thereby know what my deservings are. Wherein if I may (as I desire most earnestly) satisfy your Majesty, it shall be unto me a great encouragement to continue the most faithful duty, and careful service that I owe unto your Majesty, and shall yield to my life's end. And thus, most humbly taking my leave, I cease further to trouble

your most excellent Majesty, whom I beseech our Lord long to preserve in health, and to enrich with all endless felicity.

Sheffield, August 5th, 1582.

No. CLXXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol 173.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY
TO SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM.

Good Mr. Secretary,

I HAVE let this Queen understand the contents of your last letters, but so soon as she heard that her Majesty was offended that she had directed her letters and complaints to the Council (as if her Majesty had not in all an absolute authority over them) she, cutting me short, told me that it was enough for her to enter no farther in any matter with me, who was one of the said Council; and that, desiring sincerely to satisfy her Majesty in these causes as in all other things, she was deliberate to deal directly with her Majesty's self; liking to have answer from herself, if it was her Majesty's pleasure to do so much for her. She told me the cause of her writing to the whole Council did only proceed for that some of the same (excusing the delays used in answering her requests) had told to the French Ambassador that the said answer depended on the common resolution of the whole Council, and not of their particular advice. I, notwithstanding, having further proceeded in the rest of your letter, she replied briefly that she was very sorry her Majesty re-

mained not better satisfied of her son ; whose excuses, nevertheless, touching his security (as she taketh it) might be interpreted of his enemies in this realm, and not for any doubt that he hath of her Majesty ;* and, for conclusion, she told me that, for her own part, she hath done towards her Majesty what hath lain in her power, and towards her son what hath been until now permitted her to bring all things to a good agreement ; whereunto she saith she shall be always ready to follow her Majesty's good advice, when her Majesty shall better like to use her good will and means therein. These were her words, so near as I could gather them.

As for my journey, I thank you heartily for your good advice, according to the which I do presently write to her Majesty, desiring nothing more in this world than soon to have her Majesty's gracious presence ; but, good Mr. Secretary, I

* James was now entirely directed by two young men of the Stuart family, whom he had elevated to undeserved dignities, the Duke of Lennox and the Earl of Arran. Maitland of Lethington, the only statesman who would act with them, had engaged them in plans favourable to the captive Queen ; and her son had now agreed to admit her to a participation of the regal authority : Elizabeth, on the other hand, dreading the diminution of that sway which she had so long exercised in Scotland, immediately entered into a close correspondence with the opposers of the Court. Her interference naturally excited James's suspicions, and it soon appeared that his fears for his personal safety were not ill-grounded. On the 22nd of this month he was seized at Ruthven, Castle by the malcontents, and compelled to give up his favourites ; a total change took place in the government ; and the hand of Elizabeth was more than usually visible in this act of violence, which is commonly distinguished by the appellation of the *Raid of Ruthven*.

must pray you to obtain for me a speedy resolution of this my request, for that if within this month I make not this journey I fear greatly that the old enemy of my health shall cross my way ; and to provide for my charge in my absence, I think that Mr. Wortley, one of the Council at York, and my neighbour, a gentleman both wise and of very good credit in the country, shall be able to supply it. I thank you for your occurrences, which my Lord Chamberlain hath sent me ; and so, wishing to you as to myself, I end.

Sheffield, 5th of August, 1582.

No. CLXXIX.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My good Lord,

I HAVE nothing to write from this barren soil but to make you acquainted with what touches myself in this my journey hither. I found the well so cold, by reason of the ill weather, as I could not but very seldom have use of going into it. The water I have drank liberally ; beginning with three pints, and so increasing daily a pint till I come to eight pints, and thence descending daily a pint till I shall again return to three pints, which will be on Thursday next, and then I make an end. Mr. Atslow has good hope I shall receive much good hereby, and I already feel somewhat ; the rest time will shew. I do mean to return within two or three days after I shall make an end of my drinking, but

with some more leisure than I came hither, for so my state requires after this bathing. And so, my good Lord, with my most hearty commendations to your good Lady, and my Lady your daughter, I take my leave.

At Buxton, 7 Augusti, 1582.

Your Lordship's most assured,

T. SUSSEX.

No. CLXXX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 126.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My noble good Lord,

PERCEIVING by letters from Mr. Secretary the honourable respect you have to me, and weighing within myself the hearty desire I have to see my most gracious Sovereign, my greatest comfort upon earth, whom God long preserve, I take it the greatest friendship that one friend can show to another; therefore, as I think myself greatly beholding to your Lordship many ways, so in procuring my coming up, now my health serves me so well, to see, and do my duty to her Majesty, your Lordship binds me to honour you whilst I live. My desire is it may be within these three weeks, lest I be staid by my enemy * against my will; and, in

* By this *enemy* is meant the gout. It seems to have been a fashionable term in those days, and frequently occurs in these papers. In a letter to Lord Burghley, of the 20th of November, 1583, not inserted in this collection, the Earl says, "As your Lordship in your encounter with our enemy received a blow on the hand, so had I been like of late in wrestling with him to have had both my legs tripped from under me, but I thank God I was worse feared than hurt, &c."

my absence, Mr. Wortley * (being of her Majesty's Council in the North, and of great living and account), with those I will join with him in my house, will be sufficient to have this Lady forthcoming. So, wishing your Lordship health as my own, I take my leave.

Sheffield, the 23rd of August, 1582.

Your Lordship's ever assured loving friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

No. CLXXXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 175.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
THOMAS BAWDEWYN.

Bawdewyn,
Now that I have received Mr. Secretary's letter how honourably my Lord Treasurer and he have dealt with her Majesty for my leave, which I perceive by his letter is granted me, therefore now I thought good to write unto you to provide all needful things for me, and specially for my lodging at the Court, and to foresee how my folks may be placed as near to the Court as may be, though it be more my charges: and the best will be to speak with the harbingers thereon. I think my company will be twenty gentlemen and twenty yeomen, besides their men, and my horsekeepers. I think to set forwards about the 11th of September, from Wingfield to Leicester, to my bed, and so

* Francis Wortley, a Justice of the Peace, and Custos Rotulorum for the West Riding of Yorkshire. He was one of the possessors of those great estates which were inherited by the late Countess of Bute.

make but four days' journey to London, which I think to be my next way to Oatlands, if the Court be there then; for I chiefest covet to go to the Court first, rather than go to London. If the Court remain at Oatlands, you must foresee I have some carriages for conveyance of my bedding for self and some pallets for some of my folks to lie about me. Write to me of these things so soon as you can, because I may let you know further of my opinion; and, if it may be, for that I would gladly have Chesterfield Fair past, where will be great concourse of people from all parts of England, to have it ended before my coming; and then will it be the 15th day of September before I set forwards. Send me word by the next how my friends think of it, and thereafter I shall do. I have written by post you shall buy me no foot-cloth, if it become to your hands, for I have one here, as good as you can buy me any, that shall serve my turn I perceive by Mr. Secretary's letter one shall come from above that understands French, doubting Mr. Wortley's understanding therein; if that be the case, Mr. Wortley, being somewhat learned in the law, understands French, which, if it so please them, may suffice for so short a time;* and so I end, this 29th of August, 1582.

Your Lord and Master,
G. SHREWSBURY.

* Notwithstanding all these preparations the Earl's journey did not take place. On the 15th of September he writes to Bawdewyn, that, "the weather waxing cold after Michaelmas, and the plague being so rife in London, he knows not how he shall see it till the spring, which grieves him greatly, &c." He came not,

No. CLXXXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 5. 1582.)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My good Lord,

SINCE my last letter at Oatlands here was brought the sorrowful news of the death of my Lord Talbot, your son; a matter which I know in nature and affection must greatly trouble your Lordship, and thereby must also grieve a number of your friends. Nevertheless, my Lord, I trust the Lord hath so well instructed you with his holy Spirit, that you will submit both the wisdom and the affections of flesh and blood to his divine and blessed providence, which, my Lord, both you, and all men living, must wholly and only acknowledge to be the most Christian and most dutiful way; for to grudge at his will, or to repine at his good pleasure, what is it but plainly to fight and rebel against his power and ordinance. The Lord hath blessed you many ways in this world, and not least with the blessing of children for your posterity. He that sent you many might have given you fewer, and he that took away this might also take away all the rest. Be thankful to him for all his doings, my good Lord, and take all in that part which you ought; be you wholly his, and seek his kingdom, for it far passes all worldly kingdoms;

however, till the autumn of 1584, as will appear by subsequent papers, and was probably now expressly forbad by Elizabeth, in consequence of some strange jealousies, to which we shall presently find him alluding in a melancholy letter to Walsingham.

for by him all flesh doth stand and fall, and blessed are they that stand in him. I trust as he hath taken this one from you, so will he leave your Lordship much and great comfort in the rest, who are many; and the rather, if they and you faithfully and sincerely join together to honour, love, and serve his Majesty according to his blessed will and commandment. And thus, my good Lord, being sorry to have this occasion to write to you at this time, yet, whatsoever please God to exercise you withal, I cannot but shew that love I owe you, which, above all things, is to put you in mind of the true obedience you owe to the Lord your God, to whose blessed protection I commend and commit your Lordship.

From Sonning Hill, near Windsor, this 5th of September.

Your Lordship's assured loving kinsman,
R. LEICESTER.

To my very good Lord and cousin, the Earl of Shrewsbury, &c., with speed.

No. CLXXXIII.

(Howard Papers.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM.

Right Honourable,

I HAVE perfect knowledge, as well by my appoved good friend Mr. Fulke Greville as otherwise, the honourable care which you have had over me, and of your favourable and earnest answering to her Majesty on my behalf, wherefore I have presumed

the more boldly to write at some length to your Honour in my other letter ; and do earnestly beseech you to use the same as it may do me most good, and for ever you shall be most assured of my faithful heart in all the duties of a friend : and, if I may be so bold with your Honour, I beseech you impart unto this bearer, my very good friend, any advice that you will yield me, which I will be most glad and ready to follow, God willing ; and so, ever acknowledging myself more bounden to you tban I can express, I take my leave.

Handsworth, 18th of October.

No. CLXXXIV.

(Howard Papers.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM.

Right Honourable,

YOUR wonted good favour unto me emboldens me at this time to discover unto you the great grief of my mind, for that I have heard of late her Majesty hath expressed some very hard conceits of me, to my intolerable discomfort. I was long since touched with sundry accusations, as your Honour well knows, but the same proceeded out of the mouth of so notorious a lewd person, and without all manner of proof or likelihood, as your Honour, and my other two Lords, before whom both he and I were called, did say you thought me guiltless : and, after, it pleased her Majesty also to send me word by my Lord Treasurer that she did not condemn me in any thing, saving for certain

speeches which her Highness called to mind herself had vouchsafed upon me in private, wherewith I was burthened by that fellow to have disclosed unto him. The truth is, it pleased her Majesty once upon some occasion to tell me how wonderfully God had preserved her from the malice of her enemies, and to prevent all their wicked practices against her ; and, for example, told tha having on a time had notice of a man who had undertaken to execute mischief to her sacred person the stature, and some scars of his face being described unto her, she happened, as she was in progress, amongst a multitude of others to discove that man ; yet, not being astonished at the view o him, she called my Lord of Leicester, and shew ing the party to him, he was apprehended, and found to be the same. Now, this wicked serpen Corker* added, that thereupon I should infer and say that her Majesty thought herself a goddess that could not be touched with the hands of men whereas I never uttered any such thing, neithe any whit more than her Majesty's own sacred mouth pronounced unto me, the which I uttered to him as a proof of God's merciful providence ove her, and that false addition proceeded only out o his most wicked head and perilous invention. And for so much as I said to him, I hope that I neithe discovered secret, nor bewrayed any unfit thing and yet this did so sink into her Majesty's concei against me, as I verily think it hath been the great est cause of her indignation. And, for some othe

* See No. XCIV.

things wherewith her Majesty charged me, the last time that ever I enjoyed the comfort of her private speech, it pleased her, to the exceeding comfort of my heart, to promise that she was fully satisfied ; and further did most graciously promise that she would never condemn me without first calling me to my answer ; and if there hath happened since that time any thing to come to her Majesty's ears against me, I do most humbly on my knees beseech, according to her sacred word, to be called to my answer.

Amongst the rest of my false accusations, your Honour knoweth that I have been touched with some undutiful respects touching the Queen of Scots ; but I am very well able to prove she hath shewed herself an enemy unto me, and to my fortune ; and that I trust will sufficiently clear me. But I humbly beseech you, Sir, become an earnest mean for me to her Majesty, if it will please her to behold me with the sweet eyes of her compassion, that I may be called to account ; and either try myself clear and guiltless, or else to be for ever rejected as a castaway. I am by birth, and so left from all my ancestors, a true loyal subject, and in that will I ever live and die, and live I may (if it so please the Lord God) to do her Majesty some service ; and therefore I hope she will not leave me to ruin myself with the thoughts of my express calamities, so that very shortly I may become in case therewith never after to be able to do either Prince or country service. Once again I beseech you from the bottom of my afflicted spirits, to be earnest with her Majesty for me ;

whereby you may bind me to acknowledge yo
be the only raiser and receiver of my mind
fortune, and to my life's end you shall find n
most thankful for it. So, praying
to send you all happiness, I take my leave.

At Handsworth, this 18th of October, 158

No. CLXXXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 193.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
THOMAS BAWDWEWYN.

Bawdewyn,

I HAVE received this 4th of March the commis
you sent me down for Greaves and others,
likewise the commission for Robert Carr ;
because even as I received these I heard f
Hull that one of the searchers there coming
my ship, finding there, in rifling of my goods
an odd place, a barrel wherein was mass bo
filled therewith ; and, so soon as it came to
knowledge, I writ to Tory my man, to go thitl
and, if the master and purser of the ship were
apprehended, to will the Mayor and officers t
to apprehend them, and, if they thought good
send them up to the Council, if they would
confess how they came into the ship ; for I woul
loath to be touched therewith, seeing I have l
one that chiefly have been a rooter out of t

* The former of these letters was written privately to
Secretary ; the latter, evidently intended for Elizabeth's per
There is likewise on the same sheet another, nearly in the
abject terms, to the Earl of Leicester. They are all in the
writing of the Earl's son, Gilbert, now Lord Talbot, as m
of great secrecy.

kind of abuses. Therefore I would have you stay till the 18th or 19th of March before you come down, and by that time I shall hear more of their proceedings, and advertise you; and so end, praying you to have regard therein.

This 5th of March 1582.

Your Lord and Master,
G. SHREWSBURY.

No. CLXXXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 202.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
THOMAS BAWDEWYN.

Bawdewyn,

WHERE you write to me in your letters of the 14th of this instant, that Mr. Captain Carlile* intended shortly to voyage for the discovery of America, and that he requested me to adventure £100 with him, wherein you desire to know my pleasure; for mine own part, you know that I have already many irons in the fire, and sundry occasions, and therefore had rather disburthen myself of some than enter into more; but if he like to take my ship with him, and that Mr. Hawkins be contented therewith, I could be the rather drawn

* Christopher Carlile, an enterprising man, and one of the old Low Country soldiers. Through the interest of Walsingham, to whom he was distantly related, he was sent to South America with Drake in 1585, at the head of 2300 volunteers, and the success of that year's campaign was in a great measure owing to his good conduct. He wrote "a brief summary Discourse on a Voyage intended to the hithernmost Parts of America," which may be found in Hackluyt. He died in 1593.

to it, because I must set her forth, and furnish her some way. Thomas Baylie hath been lately hurt in the foot by carrying of haulm at the prick, and I doubt he will scarce recover the same this two or three months; and for other to send up I have none here. I have written two letters, at my son Savile's * request, to my Lord Chief Justice, and the Master of the Rolls, about his cause of Cromwell, which I would you should deliver unto him. If you can come by any stuff at broker's hands for the covering of stools I would you should send me some down, because my covered stools are worn; and if you can provide any you must then send down some little gilt nails to trim them withal. I would you should talk with Mr. Hawkins about my ship, and hear his opinion what is best to be done for her. I think the best were to sell her, if I might. I have no liking she should go a scraping, but I would you should see some way with her, because the time of the year passeth apace, and I like not she should lie idle. I would you should talk with the tailor, and devise me some jerkin of thin pretty silk that is light and easy, to wear upon my doublet, under my gown or cloke; or else some perfumed leather, with satin

* Sir George Savile, of Barrowby in Lincolnshire, who married Mary the Earl's second daughter. This gentleman possessed the manor of Cromwell in Nottinghamshire, by inheritance from Sir Henry Savile, K. B. his distant relation, who derived it from the Fitzwilliams, by his marriage with Elizabeth Suthill. A natural son of this Sir Henry, by another woman, was now attempting to establish a plea of legitimacy, and probably pretended a right to this estate, among others.

sleeves, as the fashion is ; wherein I would you should take my son Savile's advice. I would you should remember my chamois jerkin,* and hose for winter, but I would have no silver nor gold lace upon it, but some pretty silk lace, and perfumed. I received, as this letter was writing, another letter from you, with Mr. Hawkins' note, and others, of Mr. Carlile's voyage to America ; and if Mr. Hawkins like not to have my ship to go with him, I would yet that you should adventure 100 marks with him in this his pretended discovery rather than fail, for his friend's sake, and favourers of the voyage, if he be such a one as you report him to be ; and so I cease.

Sheffield, the 20th of May, 1583.

Your Lord and Master,

G. SHREWSBURY.

No. CLXXXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 257.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
THE EARL OF LEICESTER.†

My good Lord,

FOR that I perceive your Lordship takes God's handiwork thankfully, and for the best, doubt not but God will increase you with many good children,‡ which I wish with all my heart. And where

* A jerkin of chamois leather.

† Indorsed, "The copy of my letter of the 8th Aug. 1584."

‡ The Earl of Leicester had an only child by Lettice Knollys, a son, Robert, who was called Baron of Denbigh. He died at Wansted, in his infancy, July 19, 1584, and is buried under a sumptuous monument in the collegiate church of Warwick.

it pleases you to put me in mind of Gilbert T^s
as though I should remember his case by my
truly, my Lord, they greatly vary. For my s
never dissuaded him from loving his wife, th
he hath said he must either forsake me, or hat
wife ; this he gives out, which is false and un
This I think is his duty; that, seeing I have fc
him for coming to my wicked and malicious
who hath set me at naught in his own hearing,
contrary to my commandment, hath both gone
sent unto her daily by his wife's persuasion,
and hath both written and carried letters t
mean personages in my wife's behalf. The
dealings would he have salved by indirect rep
for in my life did I never seek their separa
for the best ways I have to content myself
think it is his wife's wicked persuasion, and
mother's together, for I think neither barrel b
herring of them both. This my misliking to
both argues not that I would have my son mal
hard a construction of me, that I would have
hate his wife, though I do detest her mother.
to be plain, he shall either leave his indirect
ings with my wife, seeing I take her as my
fessed enemy, or else indeed will I do that to
I would be loth, seeing I have heretofore l
him so well ; for he is the principal means
countenance she has, as he uses the matter, w
is unfit ; yet will I not be so unnatural in deei
he reports in words, which is that I should
from him the principal things belonging to
Earldom. He hath been a costly child to

which I think well bestowed if he come here again
n time. He takes the way to spoil himself with
aving his wife at London ; therefore, if you love
im, persuade him to come down with his wife,
nd settle himself in the country ; for otherwise,
luring his abode with his wife at London, I will
ake the £200 I give him yearly, besides alienating
y good will from him, and then come
o late. If he allege it be her Majesty's pleasure
o command him to wait, let his wife come home,
s more fit it is for her.

The assurance of your Lordship's faithful friend-
hip towards me hath, by so many year's growth,
aken so deep root as it cannot now fade nor de-
ay, neither any new friendship take my faithful
ood will away, as time and occasion shall try ;
nd so, hoping your Lordship will be satisfied
ithout further doubt or scruple therein, I com-
end your good Lordship to the direction of the
lmighty.

Sheffield.

No. CLXXXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 259.)

SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,
INCE the receipt of your Lordship's general let-
ters to my Lord Treasurer, my Lord of Leicester,
nd myself, touching Mr. Cavendish, we four are so
ivided, by reason of a little by progress her Ma-
esty hath made for her recreation, as there is no-

thing yet done in that matter. Notwithstanding, my Lords do mean to take such order therein as shall stand with reason and justice, which they do, nevertheless, think meet to defer until they have had further conference with your Lordship in that behalf.

Out of Ireland we had of late an alarm of some foreign pretended invasion ; but by the last letters we do now understand that the numbers of Scots * are not so great as the first reports (which ever increases things) did carry ; and that my Lord Deputy hath taken so good order, both by sea and by land, for the cutting of them off, as that it is well hoped that both these that are landed will ill repent them of their rash attempt, and that others will be warned not to undertake the like hereafter. I hope these my letters shall meet your Lordship upon the way ; and so, having at this present nothing else to impart unto your Lordship, I most humbly take my leave.

At Oatlands, the 2nd of September, 1584.

Your Lordship's to command,

FRA. WALSHINGHAM.

* Natives of the Western Isles, who had lately landed in the north of Ireland with the wretched hope of plundering their somewhat less barbarous neighbours. They were soon routed by the vigilance of Sir John Perrot, lately appointed Lord Deputy, and Elizabeth, with her usual prudence, accepted their allegiance, and gave them some lands on the coast of Antrim ; but another party of their countrymen landing early in the next summer, the new settlers joined with them, and were totally cut off in a bloody engagement.

No. CLXXXIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 261.)

Intituled by Sir William Dugdale, "A memorable Testimonial, by QUEEN ELIZABETH and the LORDS OF THE COUNCIL, on the Behalf of GEORGE Earl of SHREWSBURY, as to the discharge of his duty faithfully, and trust, in the custody of the QUEEN of Scots."

At Oatlands, 15 Septembris, 1584.

PRESENT.

| | |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| LORD BURGHLEY , Lord Treasurer. | SIR CHRISTOPHER HATTON , Mr. |
| EARL OF SHREWSBURY . | Vice-Chamberlain. |
| EARL OF LEICESTER . | SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM , Se- |
| SIR HENRY SIDNEY , Lord Pre- sident of Wales. | cretary. |

THIS day the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of England, and one of the Lords of her Majesty's most honourable Privy Council, being lately come unto the Court, was warned to come to the Council appointed to be holden this day, which he did, and (in the beginning of their Lordships' sitting) standing up, used some speeches unto their said Lordships to the effect following, viz. That, seeing he had been now a great while absent from that honourable place, and had understood that in the mean while sundry untrue reports and bruits had been raised of him, as though he had not faithfully and loyally served her Majesty in the charge committed unto him, as he ought to have done; forasmuch as he knew the uprightness of his own conscience and actions, and that being especially vainer by her Majesty to take the charge he had (whereof he understood not the importance when he first received it, as since he hath proved it) and

being persuaded at that time to accept thereof by such as thought to have led him at their pleasure to serve their turns, yet, after finding that they could not so much prevail with him, did find fault with his insufficiency; yet, nevertheless, he thanked God that he had performed as much as he then undertook and promised unto her Majesty, which was to have the said charge always forthcoming, as she was at this present. Since his repair hither he had most humbly besought her Majesty that if he could be charged with any manner of disloyalty, or undutifulness in this charge, he might understand the same, and be admitted to his purgation, for her Highness's better satisfaction, and maintenance of his credit and honour, which he esteemed more than his life, lands, goods, or any earthly thing. Whereupon it pleased her Majesty, to his great comfort, most graciously to declare unto him that she knew no cause otherwise to conceive of him than of a true and loyal nobleman, and so reputed him, and thought that he had faithfully served her in the custody of the said charge; so, likewise, before he would be set down, and take his place as a counsellor at this board (seeing the room required a person who was not to be touched with any disloyalty or dishonour) he most humbly besought their Lordships (and specially her Majesty's Secretary, to whom such informations most commonly first come, and are imparted unto her Majesty by reason of his office) to signify unto him whether they, or any of them, either know, or have understood, any thing that might touch him in

honour or loyalty ; and to declare the same unto him before he should proceed further, to the intent he might answer thereto, and clear himself, as appertained unto the honour and reputation of that place. After some speech uttered by the Lord Treasurer, that their Lordships all were right glad of his company, and, to his understanding, knew nothing otherwise of him than of a true and loyal nobleman ; yet, for that he did so instantly require to have their answer to that which he had propounded, his Lordship was desired to withdraw himself from the table to the cupboard, which he did. And so, upon some consultation amongst the rest of their Lordships then sitting, his Lordship being again called to his place, it was by the Lord Treasurer, in the behalf of all the rest, with their consents, declared unto him, that, albeit the presence was then small, and many of the Lords of her Majesty's Council absent, yet his Lordship in the name of those who were present, answered that they all concurred in one opinion ; that they knew not, nor had heard of any thing concerning his Lordship that tended to any disloyalty or undutifulness, but took and his Lordship for a very loyal and dutiful counsellor and subject, and that he had faithfully and honourably discharged the service committed unto him. And likewise on the behalf of her Majesty's Secretary it was especially answered, that if he had understood any such thing, it had been his part to have signified the same unto her Majesty ; protesting that as he never received any such information concerning

his Lordship that might touch him in honour or loyalty, so did he not impart any such thing unto her Highness, as appeared by her Majesty's own justification of the said Earl. And if in some trifles, and private matters of small moment, not appertaining to the Queen's Majesty, his Lordship thought that his honour and reputation had been touched by the evil reports of any, he was required to think that the same was common to them, and others, as well as to himself, in the world; howbeit if any person could be particularly charged by his Lordship, it was reason that he should be called to answer the same; and, therefore, his Lordship was desired to assure himself of this their Lordships' good and honourable opinion concerning his Lordship, and so to sit down, as a person that was very meet for the company, there to serve her Majesty and the realm; and so, therewith, he took his place in Council, according to his degree and office.

This is a true copy, agreeing with the original remaining in the Council-chest, and entered of record into the book of her Majesty's Council.

No. CXC.

(Cecil Papers.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO LORD COBHAM.

My very good Lord,
I HAVE expected a good time for your Lordship's repair to London, upon such report made to me; but now, finding the continuance of your absence,

I have thought good to advertise your Lordship by writing of that which I meant to have done by speech. I doubt not but your Lordship has lately heard how, upon a consultation in Council, it was accorded that there should be a bond of a union, or association, made by such noblemen and others, principal gentlemen and officers, as should like thereof, voluntarily to bind themselves to her Majesty, and every one to other, for defence and safety of her Majesty's person against all her evil willers;* whereupon all the Council have already accorded, subscribed, and sealed, such a bond as I do herewith send your Lordship a true copy thereof, and there are the like made by all the Judges, Serjeants, and principal officers at Westminster. The like is made by the gentlemen and Justices of the Peace, in sundry counties; and now, considering that I am sure that many, or the

* The late discovery of Throgmorton's conspiracy, and of a new design formed by the King of Spain and the Duke of Guise to invade England, afforded Elizabeth a pretence for exacting this extraordinary testimonial of loyalty from her subjects, but it requires no great share of penetration to discover that all its terrors were levelled at the Queen of Scots. The associators engaged "to defend the Queen against all her enemies, foreign and domestic; and if violence should be offered to her life, in order to favour the title of any *pretender to the Crown*, they bound themselves never to acknowledge the person or persons by whom or *for whom* such a detestable act should be committed, but vowed to prosecute such person or persons to the death, and to pursue them with their utmost vengeance, to their utter ruin and extirpation." This curious piece is published in the State Trials, and is of considerable length. It appears by an intercepted letter from Morgan to the Queen of Scots (*see Murdin*, 489), that Lord Cobham was inclined to favour her cause, and we may presume, from some passages in the crafty epistle before us, that he was not entirely unsuspected at Court.

most part, of the Justices of the Peace in Kent will not be behind others, I have thought good to impart to yourself thus much, that your Lordship might make this known to such of your acquaintance there in Kent as you shall think convenient, leaving it voluntarily to their own judgments whether they will hereupon enter into the like union and association ; and if your Lordship shall find them so willing, I wish your Lordship had the honour to obtain the same, and to present it to her Majesty, as a matter offered to yourself for her Majesty's service. And, for your own person to be of this society, I think it more convenient for your Lordship to adjoin yourself, now at your coming to London, with other noblemen, being Lords of parliament ; but yet, all this that I write to your Lordship, I pray you accept it as a matter that I leave to your own consideration : and so I take my leave of your good Lordship, with my very hearty commendations to yourself and to my Lady. I think there will come to your house, by the way homewards out of France, a fugitive, that cometh home for lack of money to continue longer abroad. He is your Lordship's poor servant, whose name I leave to be guessed, to be merry with your Lordship. There is at hand an Ambassador from the King of Scots ; the Master of Gray, the chief gentleman of the King's chamber, of great credit, who shall be with her Majesty on Sunday next.

From my house in Westminster, 27th of October, 1584.

Your Lordship's most assuredly,
W. BURGHLEY

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Lord Cobham, Lord Warden of the
five ports.*

No. CXCI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 263.)

THOMAS STRINGAR
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

AFTER my humble duty, may it please your Honour, that where Mr. Secretary wrote to Mr. Chancellor, about a fortnight since, that directions were given to the Sheriff of Staffordshire that he should bring all my Lord Paget's stuff to Tutbury, with speed, and that my Lord St. John* should meet him there the 23rd of this month, to receive this charge; and Mr. Chancellor and Mr. Somers,† dining with Mr. Zouch, on Friday last, at Offerton, letters came thither by post from Mr. Secretary, that an officer of the wardrobe, and one of the cofferer's clerks were dispatched from the Court, and had warrant from my Lord Treasurer for money to supply the wants for Tutbury; and yesterday there came new

* John, second Lord St. John of Bletsho. His appointment to this trust is not mentioned by the writers of that time, and indeed we shall find by a succeeding letter that he found means to get excused. Lord Paget, who was suspected of being a well-wisher to Mary, had fled to France upon the discovery of Throgmorton's conspiracy, and it appears from this passage that his papers, &c. were brought from his seat of Beaudesert, to be examined at Tutbury, which is in its neighbourhood.

† Sir Walter Mildmay, Chancellor of the Exchequer, and Somers, were appointed temporary keepers of the Queen of Scots when the Earl of Shrewsbury departed for London.

letters from Mr. Secretary, that the officer of the wardrobe was sick, and not able to come ; so that he was to move your Honour, from her Majesty, to continue your provision longer. If that should be so, here is not wine to serve a fortnight ; therefore your pleasure must be known for supply, if there be longer stay. I canuoſt learn of past six quarters of malt in the bailiff of Worksop's hands, and six quarters of moltar malt * here ; so that, and all the drink in the house, will serve little more than a month. If her Majesty devised not your remove hither, he or she that devised it were not your friend, to bring you from Sheffield Castle, which is a strong house, and from your provision and people, to this, which is of no strength ; and now the ways are foul, and your provision cometh starkly, which causes you may lawfully allege unto Mr. Secretary, whom I think devised your remove ; for this house is a house of great waste divers ways, and especially of lights, and therefore the sooner you dispatch the more your profit.

I did perceive Mr. Secretary wrote to Mr. Chancellor to know how many people were attending of the Scotch Queen, and what her diet was, and how many messes of meat they had daily, and what the charge thereof would be weekly. So that he has returned that the Queen has

* The toll taken for grinding corn, &c., was anciently denominated *molitura*, or *multura*. Moltar malt, therefore, was probably toll malt purchased of the miller, which, having been collected in small quantities, and long kept, must have been of an inferior quality.

men dishes at the first and second courses; the Master of the Household, and her chiefers have, for them and their servants, ten & at the first and second courses, and her lewomen eight dishes, and the rest of the wo- five dishes at every meal; and for people ward her, not under one hundred gentlemen, men, and officers, and fifty soldiers; and that has no furniture of household, neither for her- than her people, but all of your Lordship's. judge the Queen's Majesty and Council do to furnish such a house as Tutbury with hang- , bedding, linens, plate, brass, pewter, and r furniture, which will amount to a huge sum ioney (besides the charge of her ordinary diet, & spices, and other things), that they are ry to look into it, for though some that were hollow friends did think your charge not it, now they may see the contrary to their ne. I do hear that Mr. Secretary wrote to Somers, that they were all weary to enter it, and, as it seems, sorry that her Majesty given her word to your Honour for your dis- h of this charge; and, therefore, it behoves Lordship (seeing you have spent a good piece our own living in keeping of her, for the duty bore unto the Queen's Majesty) now to seek e delivered; for I verily think your enemies her to continue with you, that by villainous al in your house that they may advertise lies reed suspicion in her Highness towards you, now is your gracious Sovereign, and never

had cause otherwise ; and if you are delivered, your enemies have no ground to work on, so that you shall give them the greatest overthrow, and keep quietness in your latter days. Your Lordship must be earnest for your deliverance ; for Mr. Chancellor and his people are well enough here ; for your people take all the pains, and they have all the thanks. On Tuesday Mr. Chancellor gave Mr. Curle and Bastion leave to bring Mr. Nawe* to Nottingham, and sent both Banks and a horse-keeper with them ; and on Wednesday they came into the horse fair at Lenton, and rode up and down, which was more liberty than I ever knew your Lordship give ; and many, as I heard, did think that none of your people had any dealing with, or about, this charge ; and if we had not, less was your trouble, and more our quietness, for there did not yet one man of his watch a night since you got up. But for your services we would not take all trouble and they have the pleasure, for they are so well that I think they would be loth to go hence ; for Mr. Chancellor had rather be here until my Lord St. John comes, than go to bare walls at Tutbury ; but they think these delays will keep them here all Christmas ; but I trust your Honour will foresee that (I doubt) the Queen's Majesty will be in hand with you to continue. Your Lordship has tasted both of the

* Curle and Naue were Mary's Secretaries, and highly confided in by her. They were the principal evidences against her at the trial at Fotheringhay. Bastien was a very old servant, one of her original French attendants.

charge and grief, and, therefore, if you make any evil match for yourself, those who bear you duty will be sorry. I have observed your commandment for Mr. Chancellor's horses, but Sir John Zouch has sent him six loads of hay, and he bought two loads in Winkfield, so that he has of no charge but for a little provender. I do greatly doubt your Lordship (by means) shall be won to this charge; and if you are, I beseech God you be no loser thereby, for now is the time to mend the allowance, or else to be delivered.

This day Mr. Zouch sent two of his gentlemen hither, who shewed me a letter that came from Mr. Harpur to him. The contents were that he would be at the election of the Knights for the Shire, for that he did hear that Mr. Knighton, of Myrcaston, had travelled greatly freeholders to be at Derby; and, as Mr. Harpur writes, that he thinks to have their voices for Sir Charles Candish. I think Mr. Zouch and Mr. Harpur will be there; and I have written this night to Mr. Manners, and to Bailiff Booth, and Mr. Ball of Derby, and the Bailiff of Chesterfield, to make so many freeholders be there as will dispatch this cause I trust.

I hear if my Lord St. John comes he will be guarded with such as he brings with him, so that all your soldiers are like to be turned off. If that fall out, I would gladly know your Honour's pleasure; and, in like ways, if Mr. Chancellor desires to understand the Queen's rate in diet, if they go away, I would know your pleasure; for

both Mr. Somers and he were in hand with me, but I would not tell them, but answered that the clerk delivered as he saw cause. Thus, beseeching the Almighty to send your Honour long life, with perfect health, I most humbly take my leave.

At Winkfield, this 15th of November, 1584,
by your Lordship's obedient poor servant, most
bounden during his life,

THOMAS STRYNGAR.*

*To the right honourable and my very good
Lord and Master the Earl of Shrewsbury,
Earl Marshal of England, at Chelsea.*

No. CXCII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 272.)

JOHN HARPUR TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My humble duty unto your Honour premised; the great troubles and taxations which the whole country ten miles from Tutbury do presently feel, at their earnest suit have emboldened me to make request unto your Lordship in their behalf, that by your good means their burthens may be qualified; for, besides their late charge in setting forth the

* This person, who seems to have been a principal officer in the Earl's household, was the son of John Stringer, of Overthorpe, by Anne, daughter and heir of Robert Rishworth, of Crotton, in the West Riding of Yorkshire. He resided upon an estate belonging to his Lord, at Whiston, near Sheffield; married Gertrude Fenton of the latter place; and died Feb. 15th, in the 30th year of Elizabeth. A branch of his posterity was afterwards seated at Sharleston, near Wakefield, in the rank of gentry, and terminated in an heiress, Catherine, daughter of Thomas Stringer, Esquire, married, first, to Richard Beaumont, of Whitley Beaumont, in Yorkshire, secondly, to Thomas Fane, Earl of Westmorland, whose family now enjoys her estate at Sharleston.

soldiers into Ireland, there is presently levied of sundry townships of the duchy, within your Lordship's office, a number of men to serve at Tutbury for the safety of the Scottish Queen ; and, for the apparelling and furnishing of them, the townships charged to pay to every of those soldiers 40s., and yet, nevertheless, are greatly burthened with carriages for the provision of wood and coal ; as Melborne and Newton with twelve, Dunnington eight, Lockington six, Hemington six, with divers others answerable unto them at one charge, for discharge whereof they pay for every load 3s. 4d., (as I am credibly informed by him that maketh forth the precept) to hire others to lead the fuel ; and now they are daily terrified with the like charge to come upon them six weeks hence, and yet doubt they shall neither be eased of their subsidy, fifteenth, nor the purveyor. Wherefore I humbly crave your Honour's mediation for them, in such sort as to you shall seem meetest ; whereby the country shall be occasioned continually to pray for the good continuance of your health, as they now deeply acknowledge themselves bounden unto you for discharging them so long of these payments ; and so humbly take my leave, this 3rd day of February, 1584.

Your Honour's humbly to command,

JOHN HARPUR.*

*To the right honourable and my very good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of
England, and one of her Majesty's most
honourable Privy Council.*

* John Harpur, of Swerkston in Derbyshire, knighted towards the end of this reign, was the eldest son of Richard Harpur, one

No. CXCIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 274.)

SIR JOHN SOMERS TO THOMAS STRINGER.

AFTER my most hearty commendations. Thi bearer hath delivered me your letter of the 12th c this month. As touching Sharpe, I have imparted your letter to Mr. Chancellor. He answers tha he will not stay Sharpe from returning to my Lord's service, or to make you receive blame for his stay here, and therefore refers the matte to Sharpe's own consideration. I have also made him privy to your writing ; who says that having served his Lordship twenty-eight years, would no now willingly fall from his Lordship's favour, bu did not resolve with me to return to you, until he had made Mr. Curle acquainted with the matter So far as I can perceive by this Queen, by her speeches to me at other times since our coming hither, she is loth to part with him because he is

of the Justices of the Common Pleas, by Jane, daughter of George Findern, of Findern in the same county. Several letters from this gentleman, relating chiefly to the affairs of Derbyshire, which he afterwards represented, particularly in the first parliament of James, are preserved in the Talbot MSS. He was a steady par tizan of that noble family, especially of Earl Gilbert, for whom he was the principal agent in his county. He was twice married first, to Isabel, daughter of Sir George Pierrepont, of Holme in Nottinghamshire ; secondly, to Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Andrew Noel, of Dalby. By the former he had Sir Richard, a Knight; John; Henry, created a Baronet, 2 Car. 1., and five daughters; Winifred, who died unmarried; Jane, wife of Patrick Lowe, of Denby in Derbyshire; Dorothy, of Sir John White, of Tuxford, in Nottinghamshire; Winifred, of John Brown, of Stretton in the Fields in Derbyshire; and Isabel, of Sir Philip Sherrard, of Stapleford in Leicestershire. He had no issue by his second wife, and dying Oct. 7, 1622, was buried in Swerkston church.

well practised with her horses and coach, swearing by God that he never did her any other service than about the same ; for she perceived perhaps that he might be mistrusted. We hear not yet any more of any other coachman to come from above, only when we were at Wingfield it was written by Mr. Secretary that one should be sent ; therefore by the next dispatch hence I will move Mr. Chancellor to put them in remembrance of it, and that this coachman is to depart to my Lord's service, unless his Lordship be moved from the Queen's Majesty to suffer him to abide here, for this Queen must needs have one. As I shall understand more hereof from above, or of this Queen's liking to depart from him upon this your writing, I will advertise you by the next commodity ; and so we recommend us unto you, and us and all to the Almighty.

From Tutbury Castle, the 15th of Feb., 1584.

My Lord St. John being ready to come hither, fell suddenly into a sever, with an ulcer in his leg ; which, together with the death of his only son, happening even then, hath gotten his release from this charge ; and now we hear that Sir Amias Paulet is appointed,* and is hastened hither so soon as

* This part of the melancholy story of Mary's imprisonment hath always been misrepresented. The common account is, that the Earl of Shrewsbury having been found to treat her with too much respect and gentleness (of which, by the bye, we do not here find abundance of instances), she was taken from him, and placed in the hands of Sir Amias Paulet and Sir Drue Drury, whose chief recommendation was a sternness and ferocity of manners which her arch-enemy charitably hoped her delicate frame would soon sink under. We are to infer, then, that Elizabeth had thought fit

conveniently he can come, but poor I am like to tarry by it yet awhile after Mr. Chancellor. This Lady, being fallen into her old aches, hath kept her bed these five or six days.

Your's most assured, to my small power,
JOHN SOMERS.*

No. CXCIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 277.)

Rough Copy, superscribed, "The EARL OF SHREWSBURY's Answer to the EARL OF LEICESTER's Letter, sent to Swindon by CHRISTOPHER COPLEY, ultimo Aprilis, 1585."

My good Lord,
SINCE her Majesty hath declared her mind in the matter betwixt me and my wife, and doubts not

to dismiss the Earl, and that these persons were immediately appointed to succeed him; but our papers prove the contrary in both instances; for they not only afford us ample evidence that the Earl resigned his charge voluntarily, nay, that he had held it most unwillingly for several years at the Queen's instance, but also that Mildmay and Somers immediately succeeded him; that Lord St. John was then nominated; and even in this letter, written exactly five months after the Earl had received his quietus from the Council-board, the appointment of Paulet is spoken of as a rumour, and Drury's name is not mentioned.

* This gentleman is called by Camden a Clerk of the Council. An instrument, nearly of the same date, in Diggles's Complete Ambassador, styles him "Clericorum Sigilli unus." Lord Burghley's notes of this reign, in Murdin's papers, inform us that he was sent, in July, 1580, to congratulate Henry II. of France on the peace which he had then newly concluded with the Huguenots, and again, in June, 1581, jointly with Walsingham and Sir Henry Cobham, to settle certain points with the Duke of Anjou relative to the marriage: their letters on the business of the latter embassy may be found at the end of Diggles's collection. These employments, and his late appointment to attend on the Queen of Scots, prove that he was held in some estimation by Elizabeth, yet his name is barely mentioned in history, nor does any memorial of him or his family appear in the College of Arms.

but in every respect I will observe it as her Highness hath set it down, and that the Lord Chancellor should take order with me for the accomplishment thereof, well weighing her Majesty's hard censure of me and my causes; since my coming to Chelsea, I have not been well, nor able to return my answer by your Lordship's servant so speedily as I would, but have now thought good to send this bearer, my servant, Christopher Copley, unto your Lordship with this answer; that as her Majesty doth demand and look for at my hands faith and due obedience, as is the duty of every good subject to spend lands and life in the defence of her Majesty's person and realm, which I and my ancestors have done, and am ready at her Highness's commandment, so, for the maintenance of my honour and credit, do I claim and demand of her Majesty justice, and benefit of her Majesty's laws, never denied by her Majesty, nor by any her noble progenitors, to any the meanest her subject before this; yet not doubting but that her Majesty will have better consideration of me and my cause, when she hath thoroughly weighed of it; and that if she (for all my careful and painful service, to my great charges above my allowance, in the keeping of that Lady for sixteen years last past: with the extraordinary charges and expense of her Majesty's Commissioners sent down, as of Sir Walter Mildmay, Mr. Beale, and Sir Ralph Sadler, and others, their horse and men, for so long time as they continued with me) will bestow nothing on me, yet I ever thought she would have left me

with what her Majesty's laws had given me. Since that her Majesty hath set down this hard sentence against me, to my perpetual infamy and dishonour, to be ruled and overran by my wife, so bad and wicked a woman, yet her Majesty shall see that I will obey her commandment, though no curse or plague in the earth could be more grievous to me. These offers of my wife's, inclosed in your letters, I think them very unfit to be offered to me. It is too much to make me my wife's pensioner, and set me down the demesnes of Chatsworth, without the house and other lands leased, which is but a pension in money. I think it stands with reason that I should choose the £500 by year ordered by her Majesty where I like best, according to the rate William Cavendish delivered to my Lord Chancellor; or else I shall think myself doubly wronged, which I am sure her Majesty will not offer unto me. And thus I commit your good Lordship to the tuition of the Almighty, &c.

No. CXCV.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE MASTER OF GRAY*
TO ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.†

I THOUGHT good, not willing to omit any occasion, to let you know of my estate, and the estate of

* Patrick Gray, eldest son of Patrick sixth Lord Gray of Scotland, by Barbara, daughter of Patrick Lord Ruthven. James, always attached to some unworthy object, chose this man of his Privy Council, appointed him Chief Gentleman of his Bedchamber, Master of his Wardrobe, and Commendator of the Monas-

matters here. As for my own it is as at my last, in good favour with my Prince and all honest men ; as for the estate of the country it stands in the same terms as before. The King's Majesty is very well satisfied with the articles, and if they had been more unreasonable they had been granted,

tery of Dumfermline. Having undermined the Earl of Arran, a man of equal profligacy but meaner parts, the Master of Gray rose to a degree of favour and confidence greater than that nobleman had ever enjoyed, and repaid it with the most detestable treachery. When Ambassador to Elizabeth, an office in which he was frequently employed, he became a conspirator with her against his country ; and when at home, was busily engaged in executing her schemes, and thwarting those of his Prince in the character of his chief minister. This is the general account which we have of him ; the particular charge insinuated by most historians, that he advised the execution of the Queen of Scots at the very time when he was directed by James to use his utmost efforts to prevent it, is fully proved by one of his own letters in this collection, and it is almost certain that his intrigues on that occasion determined Elizabeth to put her to death. He was accused of high treason soon after that wretched event, his deceit with regard to which made a part of the impeachment, but as he was only sentenced to banishment, we may reasonably suppose it was not proved. He now retired to Italy, and indulged his natural inclination to treachery by condescending to become a spy on the Court of Rome, and transmitting intelligence of its politics to Elizabeth, who, to her eternal dishonour, countenanced him to the last. The Master of Gray succeeded to the Barony in 1609, and died in 1612, having been twice married ; first, to Elizabeth, daughter of John Lord Glamis, Chancellor of Scotland ; secondly, to Mary, daughter of Robert Stuart Earl of Orkney ; and by the last had a numerous issue.

† Cousin to the late Regent, Morton, and a man of infamous character. He fled into England in 1581, to avoid the enquiry then instituted concerning the murder of James's father, in which he was proved to have been an active party ; but in the beginning of this year, the King thought fit to commence a secret correspondence with him, and invited him to return to Scotland, where, having been declared innocent by a court notoriously partial, he was received into favour, and soon after sent back to London in the honourable character of Ambassador Resident.

as indeed we find them very reasonable. Because it was the intent of some to have stayed indirectly the league (not daring avow the same) in calling the matter in question before the Estates ; thinking that way, by a majority of votes, to have borne the matter away, as indeed by calculation they had (for many there be, as both the Secretary and I have let the Ambassadors see, that rather wishes it should not take effect than that it should), therefore, to prevent their design in that point, we have thought this form meetest to be used. That the Estates being convenient for giving answer to the Danish Ambassadors, that the King shall show to them that he must enter in league with that Queen's Majesty, and estate of England, both for that he pretends some day to be King of it, as also for present defence of religion ; and seeing that, not only in this mattter of the league but in many other necessary things which shall occur daily to be treated of with England, their advice shall be requisite, it being a thing factious to send for them, or to convene them for every particular, he will ask whether it be a thing necessary and profitable for him and his estate to enter with England. No man will deny that, unless he will be reputed for an evil subject ; so, all condescending to the which, the King shall crave of his Estates a full power to deal in the particulars, as a thing factious for them, the which we are well assured they will not deny ; so that this shall eschew their design of plurality in votes, and so, in grace of

God, we shall obtain our process touching the going forward of the league.*

As for my own particular, the Earl Arrant has dealt marvellously with me, and yet has deceived himself; for when he gives me fairest words I assure you then he speaks most of me behind my back, so that you may perceive *quod non sit novus homo*; but I assure you an angel shall come from heaven before I trust him. You shall know further by my next; at this time my haste was so that I had no leisure to write to you at length, nor

* An alliance between Elizabeth and the Kings of Scotland and Denmark in defence of the Protestant religion, and in opposition to the famous Catholic league, which had been lately formed. An act was passed by a convention of the Estates of Scotland, assembled at St. Andrews July 31, enabling the King to conclude this treaty with Sir Edward Wotton, the English Ambassador, and it is particularly remarked by Spotswood that it was signed by the Master of Gray though a professed Papist. The scheme for procuring this concession from the Estates by laying the business before them in a general way lest they might disapprove of the particulars, seems to have been considered as a fine stroke of policy, and is a curious instance of the simplicity of the times.

† James Stuart, second son of Lord Ochiltree. He is mentioned by all the Scottish writers as a very monster of corruption, debanchery, and tyranny. He was one of James's earliest favourites, and fixed himself in that Prince's esteem by becoming the chief instrument of Morton's fall, for which he was rewarded with the title and estate of the unfortunate Earl of Arran, a lunatic, to whom he had been before appointed *tutor*. Within the space of four years he filled the offices of Governor of the Castles of Edinburgh and Stirling, Provost of Edinburgh, Lord Chancellor of Scotland, and Lieutenant Governor over the whole kingdom, and before the termination of that short period was reduced to his original obscurity by one of those wild revolutions so frequent in the history of that country; owing rather to the intrigues of Elizabeth, and the jealousy of the Master of Gray, than to the universal hatred which his own infamous conduct had so justly provoked.

in no other sort, so that this far I have written to let you know that I am not forgetful. I pray you send me word by your next what you look for to the merchants, my clients. I will do my excuse with my humble service recommended to the Earl of Leicester, Sir Francis, and my good Sir Philip. I believe my last to Sir Francis was somewhat through passion, but before God I was at the writing of it in chaff. I commit you to God.

From Falkland, this 8th of July, 1585.

Yours known.

No. CXCVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 7.)

HENRY TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

MAY it please your Honour to be advertised that there are no speeches but of going either into Flanders, or else with Sir Francis Drake.* As touching the journey into Flanders, it is agreed that there shall be sent over with speed 6000 footmen, under the conduct of General Norris, who are to be paid with the money her Majesty lendeth unto the States. There are divers officers appointed for the execution of military discipline, such as by Mr. Norris shall be thought worthy and sufficient; moreover it is thought that there shall be a new supply sent over 500 horse, but who shall have the charge of them is not as yet

* Drake set out on his third voyage in the autumn of this year, with a fleet of twenty-one ships, in which were embarked not fewer than 2300 volunteers.

down. There hath been of late a new attempt made by them of Lillo* to burn the new bridge with a certain device of firework, the which was conveyed so secretly under water that it did blow up one of the great butts whereon the bridge is built, but did no other hurt; but it is made up again. There are letters come out of Scotland from the King, wherein he declareth how sorrowful he is for the late mishap that fell at the day of Ypres,^t and saith that it was nothing done by pre-meditation, but by the device of some wicked person whom he doth not know, nor can yet learn; offering unto her Majesty that, for her better satisfaction, he will as shall by her lightness be thought guilty, or any ways consenting to the fact to be disposed of at her pleasure.

There is a new Ambassador come the 30th of July, but has not as yet been at the Court. He appointed to have audience the 7th of this present, and the old Ambassador doth determine to

* Lillo, a considerable fortress on the east side of the Schelde, eight miles N. of Antwerp.

† Alluding to the death of Sir Francis Russell, son and heir the Earl of Bedford, who was killed by the Scots in a sudden tumult which happened at a meeting of the Wardens on both sides. Elizabeth treated this matter, probably accidental, with great seriousness, and the imprisonment of the Earl of Arran, and Ker of Fernihast, Warden of the Middle Marches of Scotland, who were charged by the English with conniving at the murder, did not appease her wrath. She sent home the Earl of Angus, and other Scottish exiles remaining in England, furnished them with money, and attempted by all means to raise a rebellion in Scotland, which James, who usually conquered parishes by reconciling them, prevented by a stroke of that kind of policy.

depart towards France, the 20th of this month. It is advertised bither that the King of France, notwithstanding his new edict,* goeth about to have peace with the King of Navarre in this wise. The King of Navarre wrote a letter unto the French King, that, for his part, he neither could nor would revolt from his own religion, having been so long instructed therein, and knowing it to be the true worshipping of God, unless he could by the persuasion of some learned man be otherwise resolved ; whereupon the King of France hath used these four means to persuade him. First, he hath sent unto him a very learned man, one Doctor Alen, to divert him, if it be possible ; again, he did send unto him a Doctor of the Civil Law, to advise him, for his profit, to alter his religion ; declaring unto him that if he did make wars for his conscience sake, it would be an occasion to alter the French King's good disposition towards him, and so would hinder his greater profit ; thirdly, the French King sent unto him one to demand those towns to be given up again into his hands which the King of Navarre had at his last composition, declaring further, that if he would not yield them unto the King his master, that then the King would take them by force ; lastly, the Queen Mother is going towards him to see if she can make

* Called *the Edict of July*, by which all Protestants were enjoined to go to mass, or to quit France within six months. Sully, though very particular in his Memoirs of this year, does not mention these curious overtures for the conversion of his master which Mr. Talbot afterwards speaks of.

ie peace, which if she cannot bring to pass, then
e French King will invade him with forces. The
ews are come to Court of late that the town of
ntwerp is yielded up unto the King of Spain,
nd hath accepted those conditions which in my
st letter, sent by post, I declared unto your
ordship.

All your Lordship's affairs here are well; and
our wife doth exclaim against my Lord Leicester
ecause, as she saith, he hath not been so good as
is promise. Her Majesty, praised be God, is
ell, and marvelleth she can hear nothing from
our Lordship, and she useth the best speeches
at may be of your Lordship. And thus for this
me I humbly take my leave, praying the Al-
mighty to send your Lordship long health with
uch honour.

Cold harbour, the 6th of August.

Your Lordship's most obedient son,

HENRY TALBOT.

Postscript. My Lord Mayor hath his humble
lity remembered unto your Lordship, and saith
e hopes your Lordship's bucks are fat this sum-
mer. I have sent unto your Lordship herein inclosed
he plaster your Lordship wrote to me for.

to my Lord my father.

No. CXCVII.

(Howard Papers.)

HENRY TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

MAY it please your Honour to be advertised that
I came from Court upon the 20th of this present

where I left all things very well, and her Majesty saith she doth marvel greatly that she hath received but one letter from your Lordship since your going down. Moreover she herself told me that she marvelled she heard no oftener from you, whom it pleased to term her love, declaring further what care she had of your health, and what a trouble your sickness was unto her ; whereunto I answered that your Lordship's chiefest comfort, and speedy recovery of your health, proceeded from her Majesty's so gracious favour and countenance bestowed upon you ; whereat her Majesty smiled, saying "Talbot, I have not yet shewed unto him that favour which hereafter we mean to do."

As touching your wife's causes, she lieth still in Chancery Lane, and doth give out that she meaneth to continue there, and not to go into the country. My Lord, my brother's wife, and her brother, the Knight,* do attend very diligently at Court, and little respect there is had of them ; nevertheless they cease not to follow, to the end the world may say they are in credit.

There are certain news come unto the Court that Antwerp is yielded unto the Prince of Parma upon these conditions. First, they are content to pay unto the Prince £80,000 in money, and to be contributors unto the re-edifying of the churches and monasteries ; moreover that no man shall exercise any other religion but the Romish ; and

* Sir Charles Cavendish.

if there be any man that will not conform himself unto that religion, he shall have two month's space to resolve in ; and if afterwards he will not convert, then it shall be lawful for him, and all such, to depart the town, and to make sale of their goods. Thus, in haste, I humbly take my leave, earnestly craving your Lordship's daily blessing.

Cold-harbour, the 22nd of August.

Your Lordship's most obedient son,

HENRY TALBOT.

To my Lord my father.

No. CXCVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 311.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My noble good Lord,

SINCE my coming into the country, my wife and her children have not ceased to inform her Majesty, most slanderously of me, that I have broken her Highness's order ; and at the length they have obtained her gracious letters, and Mr. Secretary's, to me, the which I have answered, and sent up my servant Christopher Copley with them ; praying your Lordship that he may, with your favour, attend on you, and acquaint you thoroughly from time to time with my causes, and that it would please you to further him with your advice, and continuance of your good favour. My Lord, she makes all means she can to be with me, and her children to have her living, whereunto I will never agree, for if I have the one I will have the other, which was thought reasonable by the Lord Chancellor,

and the Lord of Leicester ; but by her letters she desires to come to me herself, but speaks no word of her living. I have been much troubled with her, and almost never quiet to satisfy her greedy appetite for money to pay for her purchases to set up her children ; besides the danger I have lived in, to be compassed daily with those that most maliciously hated me, that if I were out of the way, presently they might be in my place. It were better we lived as we do, for in truth I cannot away with her children, but bave them in jealousy ; for till Francis Talbot's * death, she and her children sought my favour, but since those times they have sought for themselves and never for me. Thus, with my hearty commendations, I commit your good Lordship to the tuition of the Almighty.

Sheffield, this 23rd of October, 1585.

Your Lordship's most faithful friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

No. CXCIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 319.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My noble good Lord,

FINDING you so honourable and constant a friend to me, I have been willing, but yet doubtful to trouble you with my gouty fist, unless I had matters of some importance, knowing your Lordship so troubled with her Majesty's affairs ; but now, perceiving what untrue surmises have and are

* Francis Lord Talbot, the Earl's eldest son, who died in 1582.

invented by my wife and her children of me, think will be, during their lives, I am, therefore request your Lordship thus much ; that if hall exclaim of me from time to time, without as they do, considering how manifestly they been disproved in all their accounts, that they ake trial of their complaints against me be- ey are heard ; and so shall her Majesty and ouncil be less troubled with these untrue es, and by the grace of God, my doings and gs have and shall be such as I wish my wife r imps, who I know to be my mortal ene- night daily see into my doings, which I look less but they will do their best. So, wishing ordship health as my own, I take my leave.
Sheffield, this 9th of November, 1585.

Lordship's most faithful ever assured friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

No. CC.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 305.)

SERJEANT WALMESLEY

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

ght honourable, my very good Lord,
e had I proposed verily to have seen your ip in my coming out of Lancashire, it sell out,
y to my determination then, that my wife rds must needs come to London, and so orced to leave your Lordship to accompany e ; which if it had not been a thing of great ty, it should not have holden me from your ip. But now, my very good Lord, such is

the cross chance of my fortune, that unless I can by your honourable favour and good means, and by other of my honourable friends, avoid it, I am not like ever to see your Lordship, for that I am named to go into Ireland to be Chief Justice there which is a country so contrary to the state of my body (being so troubled with a flux of blood that I do bleed weekly, and that very plentifully at sundry times) as I do not look to retrieve again if I do go thither; and, in the mean time, besides this punishment (which they term a preferment) I shall lose a thousand marks a year, which I should get if I might continue my practice; and so, having toiled all my life painfully, hoping to have reaped the harvest and fruits thereof (which is now, by reason of my long continuance common to that ripeness that my gain is in one year more now than in three before) I shall be taken from my living, and be sent away a beggar, for no other purpose, my weakness considered, than to carry my carcase there to be buried; for I have not purchased £40 by year in lands; and, if I might tarry here, I might do some service in my commonwealth, and profit to myself, my wife, and posterity; and, being taken away, I fear me I shall make a short end of all.

I have declared my estate to my Lord Chancellor, my Lord Treasurer, and to Sir Christopher Hatton; who have given me good words, as pitying my estate, but what relief I shall find I know not. Mr. Secretary is against me; for whose sake, or by whose means, I know not, for I never offend-

ed him. My Lords the two Chief Justices have, by their letter, declared to Mr. Vice-Chamberlain that my service is as requisite in England as the service of any other Serjeant at the bar, for the subjects of the realm who have cases of great weight and difficulty in the common law ; that I may not be so well spared as divers others ; and Mr. Serjeant Shuttleworth,* having as much lands as I, in his own right, and 500 marks a year in his wife's right, and was called to be a Serjeant on purpose to serve in Ireland (wherein he saved the charges of 400 marks which we did bear when we proceeded) yet, by my Lord of Leicester's means, he is to be discharged, and by this means I, who am the weakest, am driven to the wall ; yet, if my Lord Treasurer would take it in hand he may dispatch it, as may chance Mr. Vice - Chamberlain may further it greatly, and my Lord Chancellor also. And although I have received comfortable speeches, yet if I might have your Lordship's letter to my Lord Treasurer, that he would move her Majesty for my discharge, in respect specially of my infirmity (although there are many other causes, because I shall not be able to do her Majesty any service there, and, by means thereof, also, the Court of Common Pleas shall lack my service here) I trust it would do me pleasure. And thus, being sorry that I have occasion to trouble your Honour with this long tedious letter, I shall,

* Sir Richard Shuttleworth, of Gawthorpe in Lancashire, Knight, afterwards Chief Justice of Chester. The present family of Shuttleworth in that county is descended from a younger brother to this gentleman.

in recompense of your goodness and favour, remain at your Honour's commandment.

Serjeant's Inn, this 15th of December, 1585.

At your Honour's commandment, in all I may,

THOMAS WALMESLEY.*

* Sir Thomas Walmesley, Knight, afterwards one of the Judges of the Common Pleas, was of a reputable gentleman's family in Lancashire, being the eldest son of Thomas Walmesley, of Showley, by Margaret, daughter of — Livesay, of Livesay. He raised a considerable fortune by the practice of the law in this reign, and purchased the site of the dissolved abbey of Selby in Yorkshire, as well as many valuable estates in his native county, the principal of which latter, Dunkinhalgh, was the residence of his posterity till the beginning of the present century, when his line ended in an heiress, Catherine Walmesley, successively married to the Lords Petre and Stourton : she died in 1785, and her descendant, the present Lord Petre, hath the estates above mentioned. Sir Thomas married Anne, daughter and heir of — Shuttleworth, of Hackinge in Lancashire, his children by whom were bred in the Roman Catholic persuasion, which the family never quitted. He was buried (as Dugdale informs us in his Visitation of Lancashire) in the chancel of the church of Blackburne, under a fair marble monument, which was destroyed by the rebels in 1644. The following epitaph, in the good old circumstantial manner of those days, will perhaps impart more of his history than is to be met with elsewhere. It is taken from the MSS. of John Smyth, of Heath, in Yorkshire, Esq.

" Tombs have their period, monuments decay,
And rust and age wears epitaphs away ;
But neither rust, nor age, nor time, shall wear
Judge Walmesley's name, that lies entombed here ;
Who never did, for favour, nor for awe
Of great men's frowns, quit or forsake the law.
His inside was his outside : he ne'er sought
To make fair shows of what he never thought :
For well appear'd it by his bold opinion
In that great case stiled of the Union,
Deliver'd openly in Parliament,
How free his heart and tongue together went,
When, against all the judges, he alone
Stood singular in his opinion.
And well King James's bounty likewise there,
His justice, greatness, goodness, did appear ;

My very good Lord, I have been so bold as to draw a copy of a letter* to be sent by your Honour to my Lord Treasurer; I trust your Lord-

For, though that his opinion seem'd to bring
Some crosses to the union wish'd for by the King,
Yet (as he thought he freely spoke his mind,
Neither with favour, nor with fear inclined)
He did withdraw no grace he shew'd before,
But rather of his bounty added more;
For, when as old age, creeping on apace,
Made him unable to supply his place,
Yet he continued, by the King's permission,
A judge until his death, still in commission;
And still received, by his special grace,
His fee, as full as when he served the place.

"Sir Thomas Walmealey, Knight, here entombed, was made Judge of the Common Pleas anno xxxi of Queen Elizabeth, and continued a Judge of that Bench the space of 25 years, and above. He died the 26th of November, anno Domini 1612, having lived 75 years complete, under five several Princes; Henry the VIIth, Edward the VIth, Queen Mary, Queen Elizabeth, and our Sovereign, King James. He left behind him (who are yet living) Anne, his lady, and sole wife; and also one only son, Thomas Walmealey, sole heir to them both, whom in his life time he saw twice married; first to Eleanor, sister to Henry Lord Danvers, and daughter to Sir John Danvers, by Elizabeth his wife, one of the daughters and co-heirs of the Lord Latimer; and, secondly, to Marie, sister of Sir Richard Houghton, Knight and Baronet; by both whom he saw him have issue; by his first wife, one son, and two daughters; Thomas, Elizabeth, and Anne; by the second, one son, Charles."

* It is subjoined to this letter in the MS. collection, and contains a vain recital of his merits, and an account of his complaint, which was of a very disgusting nature, given in the grossest terms. The Serjeant's aversion to the appointment of Chief Justice in Ireland, together with the hints that his epistle affords us of the emoluments of barristers in those days, render it somewhat interesting. Sir James Ware informs us that in 1598, or a little before, the salary of the Lord Chancellor of Ireland was raised to £ 415. 6. 8., which, with the fees to the Great Seal, then very inconsiderable, constituted the whole of his gains. The profits of the inferior Judges were doubtless far lower. See also a letter from Edward VI. to the Lord Deputy of Ireland, inserted in this collection, No. XVIII. of papers in that reign.

ship will pardon me in putting more into it than there is any cause, for I presume your Lordship will do something of friendship where there is want of desert.

*To the right honourable and his singular good
Lord, the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 309. 1585.)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,
I THANK you most heartily for your frieudly proffer unto me before my coming out of England,* which I know not by any means how to deserve, but only by my service here unto her Majesty and my country, the joy whereof I am thoroughly persuaded, for the goodwill you bear me, will be unto your Lordship an acceptable satisfaction, the success thereof being such as my good hope, and all

* Leicester had lately gone over into Holland with the title of General of the Queen's auxiliary forces there, and his reception was not less flattering than he describes it in this letter. Elizabeth, who well knew his ambitious and subtle disposition, resolved to crush his popularity in the beginning, and his acceptance from the states of the style of *Governor and Captain-General, with absolute authority, of the United Provinces*, afforded her a fair opportunity ; she wrote, therefore, both to him and to them in terms of high resentment, and, having received their reasons for investing him with so extensive a power, acquiesced, contenting herself with having thus assured him that she stood on her guard. Leicester, however, soon lost the confidence of his new subjects, and, after a year's residence among them, returned to England without having done any thing effectual, nor was his second campaign more successful ; yet it appears from Lord Burghley's notes, in Murdin's papers, that he received a reward from the Queen of £ 26,000 for his service in the Low Countries.

likelihood, assures me it will ; for I find the people so wholly addicted unto her Majesty, and so kind unto me for her sake, in all places where I come, as I cannot think that ever before they were to any other ; insomuch as they have even enforced upon me the absolute government of their countries, as well in civil affairs as in wars, yielding into my hands the appointing of all their Council, and the whole administration of their estate ; too great a burden, I confess, for me to support, and little agreeable unto my desire, if the service of her Majesty, and the benefit of my country, were not to be preferred before other respects. Here has no exploit happened since my coming, of any consequence ; the enemy, having the opportunity of this frost, which has continued here this month, and even at this hour begins to break, has made sundry attempts in divers places, but achieved nothing at all. The companies which were here before are greatly decayed ; I am presently in hand with the repairing of them. If we had one six weeks passed over our heads, and the poor soldiers, who are now sick and weak, were once thoroughly recovered, I doubt not but we should do well enough. As there shall any thing fall out worthy the writing, I will not let to advise your Lordship, and so, for this time, commit you to the blessed tuition of the Almighty.

From Leyden, this 16th of January.

Your Lordship's most assured
cousin and friend,

R. LEICESTER.

My good Lord, you must bear with me, and I beseech you do so, that I write not with mine own hand ; my continual business is such that I can get no leisure, but your Lordship shall hear the oftener from me.

No. CCII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 117. 1585.)

" Abstract of the Authority given to the Lieutenants by their Commission."

To assemble and levy the inhabitants within that county, and the cities, towns, and privileged places thereof, apt for war.

To arm, array, try, and muster them, both horse and foot.

To lead them against her Majesty's enemies, rebels, traitors, or other offenders against her Crown and dignity.

To fight with them, and execute the offenders.

To prescribe orders for the government of the country.

. To use martial law.

To save, at their pleasure, any offender subdued by them.

In case of any invasion, insurrection, or rebellion, riot, rout, or unlawful assembly, in any part adjoining, out of the county, to lead forces to the suppressing thereof.

To make a Provost Marshal.

To appoint one, or more, Deputy Lieutenants.

The Deputy, in all respects, to have like power, as aforesaid.

All Justices of Peace, and other her Majesty's officers, to obey and be assisting unto the Lieutenants and their Deputies in the execution of their Commission.

" Abstract of the Orders to be observed by the Lieutenants ; sent with the Commissions."

Imprimis, to take order with their Deputies for the publishing of their Commission.

To give direction for exercising in martial feats such as were the last year trained and reduced into bands.

To cause a general view to be taken by their Deputies of the able men within their several charges, and to see how many of them may be armed with such furniture as is presently within the county their charges.

To take a view of the horsemen, and to appoint Captains over them, allowing to every Captain a Cornet of 50 horse ; which several Cornets are to be clad with cassocks of one colour.

To cause a view to be had of all places of descent, and to consider what sconces, or other kind of defence, may be made there without any great charge to the country, and how the enemy may be impeached on his landing.

To consider, if the landing-places should be taken, what straits, and other apt places, there are to make head against them.

To appoint, by way of distribution, certain of the armed men to repair to the said places.

No. CCIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 120.)

Indorsed, "Sir Fra. WALSINGHAM's Instructions fr trayning fo
Shott, &c."

THE Leaders and Captains who are appointed to instruct and train them, shall cause a halberd to be set up in the plain, whereby every shot may pass in that order which the French call *a la file*, or, as we term it, in rank like wild geese ; and so, passing by the halberd, to present his piece, and make offer as though he would shoot ; and those who do not behave themselves with their pieces as they ought, may receive particular instruction and teaching.

This exercise would be used two or three meetings, at the least, for ignorant people ; in which time may be discerned those who cannot frame themselves in any likelihood to prove shot, in whose room the Captain may require others to be placed who are more apt thereunto. Afterwards teach them how to hold their pieces, for endangering themselves and their fellows ; to put in their matches ; and acquaint them with false fires, by proving only the pan, and not charging the piece, which will inure their eyes with the flash of fire, embolden them, and make every thing familiar and ready unto them ; then to give the piece half the charge ; and acquaint them, in skirmishing wise, to come forwards, and retire orderly again ; after, to proceed to the full charge, and, lastly, to the bullet, to shoot at a mark for some

trifle to be bestowed on him that best deserves the same.

With this order and policy men shall in shorter time be exercised, and with the tenth part of the charges, to the great ease of the country, and saving of powder ; for that in this manner it is found that two pounds of powder will serve one man for four days' exercise of training, and a number which, by reason of the churlishness of their pieces, and not being made acquainted therewith by degrees, are ever after so discouraged and fearful as either they wink, or put back their heads for the piece ; whereby they take no perfect level, but shoot at random, and so never prove good shot.

FRA. WALSINGHAM.

No. CCIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. M. fol. 237. 1580.)

SIR BRYAN LASCELLES
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My most humble duty unto your Honour remembered. Although I have no great matters of importance, nor news, to signify unto you, yet my duty is to let your Honour understand the world here. Upon Tuesday, being the 17th day of this instant, was brought unto the Star Chamber the Earl of Arundel, to answer to such contempts and offences as he had committed against her Majesty and her laws. Who answered but slenderly for himself, for that there was such manifest proof by his own confession, and letters against him ; but excusing himself (with humility, and non-intend-

ment of evil, as he made protestation) requiring the honourable persons there present to be means for him for her Majesty's gracious favour, which he trusted had not deserved so evil; but, if it pleased her Majesty to pardon those offences which she did take against him, he would make satisfaction and amends for the same hereafter. There were at his examination the Lord Chancellor, the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Chamberlain, the Lord Cobham, the Lord Buckhurst, Sir Francis Knollys, Mr. Vice-chamberlain, Mr. Secretary Walsingham, and the Judges of every Bench, saving the Lord Chief Justice of England, who was sick. Mr. Justice Periam gave the Judgment, with his opinion, the first, whereto all the rest did consent; and as much as I could briefly gather that he was charged with all at that instant I have sent your Honour hereinlosed.*

* This Earl of Arundel was Philip Howard, eldest son of the late Duke of Norfolk, and heir to the titles of Henry Fitzalan, the last Earl of his family, who died in 1580. The charges exhibited against him were, that he had relieved several priests; that he had corresponded with Cardinal Allen, and Persons the Jesuit; and that he had intentions of departing from the realm without license; in short, that he had committed several breaches of those barbarous statutes of the preceding year, which no sincere Roman Catholic could possibly abide by. He was preparing to avoid the severity of those laws by flight, when he was seized on a retired part of the coast of Sussex, and, having already suffered a year's confinement in the Tower, was now sentenced to pay a fine of £10,000, and to be imprisoned during the Queen's pleasure. In 1589, he was brought to his trial before his Peers, and condemned to die for the above-mentioned offences, which were lamely proved by witnesses of indifferent character; but Elizabeth thought fit to extend what was called her clemency towards him, and he was suffered to wait in the Tower for the termination

I pray God send you health, and make you strong, and then I trust I shall see you here at London; for I think it very requisite, as I doubt not but Mr. Raynor can impart unto you, who will be with your Lordship very shortly; and your friends cannot persuade you to take a better course than the good advice of your noble friend the Earl of Leicester which he did give you, which will daunt your enemies and please your friends. My service shall be wholly your Honour's, as I protest before God it hath been; and so, desiring God that I may see you here in good state, and that your travel may be without any trouble to your health, I most humbly take my leave.

Holborn, 20th of May.

Your Honour's most humbly to command,

BRIAN LASSELLS.

*To the right honourable my singular good
Lord, the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCV.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE MASTER OF GRAY TO ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.

My Lord,

FOR that within a day or two his Majesty is to write answer of her Majesty's last, and that you are to

of a life shortened by the strictest austerities of his religious persuasion. A memorial of his piety, carved by his own hand, on the stone wall of his secluded apartment, is still to be seen: it is in a part of the Tower which is not usually shewn to strangers — “*Sicut peccati causa vinciri opprobium este, ita e contra, pro Christo custodiae vincula sustinere maxima gloria est.* Arundell, 26th of May, 1587.” He died Nov. 19th, 1595, under the age of 40.

hear, God willing, then at length from me, these lines shall be only to let your Lordship know the estate of matters here since my last ; which is in no worse case, yet bruits are more abundant, proceeding from a convention which has been lately of a number of the late Lords who were about the King holden in Cairn, the Earl of Crawford's house. The Earl of Huntley was there , Crawford, Montrose, Arran, and Doun ; openly all. What they mean all the world knows ; it is to cut all our throats, and seize themselves of the King's Majesty ; although himself, assure you, he remains constant in all points. It may be thought how dare they presume any thing if they have not his Majesty's consent thereto, and this is ever the argument his Majesty's self uses ; but they ground themselves *a simili* ; they having Majesty's good favour albeit they themselves, why may not he forgive them sooner nor such whom he headed to the death, as they now about him.* This kind of argument I fear makes them over bold, and deceive us ; but I am within a day or two to get the certainty of all matters, so by my next you shall have it.

The King's Majesty hath commanded me to write to you very earnestly to deal for his mother's life, and I see, if it cannot be done by you, he minds to take the matter very highly. All this I

* Meaning the Lords, who seized the King at Ruthven in 1582, and were banished for that outrage. These conspirators, rendered formidable by Elizabeth's assistance, now returned to Scotland, and drove Arran and his associates from James's presence.

take, as God judge me, to proceed of his own good nature, and to have no other matter secret, and, therefore, do what we can to avoid *wrong constructions*. This is a hard matter, to speak truly, to the King our Sovereign, not to make any mediation for his mother; *and yet the matter is also hard on the other side for you and me, although we might do her good to do it; for I know, as God liveth, it shall be a staff for own heads*; yet I write to you as he has commanded me, to deal very instantly for her; *but if matters might stand well between the Queen's Majesty there and our Sovereign, I care not although she were out of the way.*

His Majesty has written to me that if ye receive not a good answer at this time touching his mother he will send me, but I will make no answer till himself come here, which will be on Thursday next. I will be very loath to enterprise any such commission, but of this you shall hear further shortly, at his Majesty's being in my house. Remember I pray you his horses, and bucks, and hounds. I marvel you send me no word of my letters written to my Lords Hunsdon and Admiral. Till my next I commit you to God.

From Dumfries, this 11th of October, 1586.

Your Lordship's as his own,

MASTER of GRAY.

No. CCVI.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE MASTER OF GRAY TO ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.

Sir,

MANY men whisper a sudden alteration, but I see it not. The King is to be shortly at my house With him my Lords Hamilton, Angus and Mar, the more secretly to counter the convention of the other Lords at Cairn. The King is very instant for his mother, and minds to charge me with a commission for that effect, in case you prevail not; and, in like manner, for his title, as I wrote before, but I shall shift all till I hear from you. *For the commission for his mother I like it not.* Young Trebourn is come home, and has brought with him divers letters, and has been dealing with the Secretary from the Duke of Guise, and Bishop of Glasgow ; of this assure you, for I have it from him to whom he spake it; what answer he received you shall know by my next. I pray you with speed let me have your advice touching all matters contained in my last.

As for my Flanders voyage, as I wrote, it is a thing that I could have willingly quashed long since, but, having gone so far in it, cannot, and but one is to go now ; but as I wrote of before, I shall not stay, God willing, six weeks. I pray you, Sir, if there may be any means had for me to do diligence, for, as God judge me, this same Flanders voyage has cut me up. If I get no other way, I must borrow of yourself, and then take it upon my land, for I will not my jewels, and the day

is ten days before Martimas ; but by your next, let me know what I may look for, that I be not held in the house, for that shall rack me ; and if ye see no other thing but drift, I shall do for my own release. The time is short, therefore send me suddenly answer. Let Roger know that I have written to yourself, and Mr. Secretary, in his favours. Now of late I was forced at Restalrig's instant suit to engage some of my cupboard, and the best jewel I had, to get him silver to his marriage. God be with you.

From Dumfries, this 21st October, 1586.

This being with me of his Majesty will be to me as the last time.

No. CCVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 343.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.*

My noble good Lord,
I HAVE received your Lordship's letter, for which, as well as for your pains in delivery of my letter to her Majesty, and declaring my sentence with the rest of the Lord Commissioners, I heartily thank you. I am further to move your Lordship that if upon Monday next the general sentence shall be recorded according to the order, your Lordship will subscribe my name thereto in this

* Indorsed, "The copy of my Lord Treasurer's 28th October, 1586." It alludes to the sentence against the Queen of Scots, which was pronounced in the Star Chamber on the 25th, and subscribed then by all the Commissioners, except the Earls of Shrewsbury and Warwick, who were sick in the country.

mine absence, who giveth you full authority do by these my letters, and, for the sealing thereof I have sent my seal hereinlosed. Your Lordship desireth to hear of mine amendment, and I am to come towards London by that time, where I shall be here as evil troubled with my grief as I was first, or rather worse ; and, for that my desire to be there is great, I am purposed to prove p and then, if I can find any ease at all therewill make what speed I can. And, whereas I heretofore moved your Lordship by my son Edward Talbot, and Beiston, that in mine absence I would take upon you my deputation of Earl of Shrewsbury, for that the Heralds have none to resort to I am to put your Lordship once again in thereof, heartily desiring you by this my letter to use the same. Thus, being ever most bold in your Lordship when I have any occasion, with heartiest commendations, I take my leave.

Stilton, the 28th of October.

No. CCVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 345.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD TALBOT

Good son Gilbert,

I HAVE received your letter in a packet of H. Talbot's perceiving thereby the care you have come to see me ; but considering the straits of place, and what stead you may stand me in the case as you are ; and that from time to time, as occasion serveth, I may hear from you, which (I thank God) I find you perform, and I pray do so still,

take delight in reading of your letters, and especially to hear of her Majesty's gracious speeches to you of me, which is the greatest comfort to me I can receive, for truly my sickness is not more grievous than grief of mind in that my lameness should so fall out at this time when I should have done her Highness' service. But God's will be done; and so soon as God makes me able I shall make my repair up, and rather than it should be thought any want in me to perform any service whatsoever her Highness shall command me, I will come though I die by the way, and so may you answer for me, and I will perform it.

I am sorry you are not of this Parliament house;* yet I pray you when any great matter is debated be at them, that I may hear from you, for weekly there comes some down that you may send letters by. I perceive you were at the hearing of the water matter before the Justices. I pray you have care of it, and speak to my solicitors to look to it, and yourself to follow it, for the loss of it would be a great one to Haleshire. So, praying God to bless you, I end, being weary of scribbling.

Orton Lodge,† this 12th of November, 1586.

Your loving father,

G. SHREWSBURY.

To my son Gilbert Talbot.

* This Parliament was called to confirm the proceedings against Mary, and met a few days after the sentence against her was declared.

† Overton Longvile, in Huntingdonshire, the seat of Henry

No. CCIX.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE MASTER OF GRAY TO ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.

Sir,

FOR that by two several letters I made promise at Restalrig's coming to deal more plainly with you than by letter, I have imparted to him sincerely my whole mind. I doubt not ye will trust him, for ye know his kindness and honesty; so I will write nothing of any particulars concerning either of us both, but remits me to him, and to the memorial I have given him.

As for this commission I am charged with I cannot eschew it, for by the refusal my wreck was intended, as the bearer shall show; but answer to the Queen there, and all my honourable friends, *that they shall find me always constant; and that in my negociation I shall know nothing but for their contentments*, reserving my duty to my Sovereign. Of this assure them, and promise it in my name. But I see if some means be not used, of necessity the amity shall dissolve. Therefore, if ye can espy forth a means for her Majesty's surety, and to our Sovereign's contentment, I think ye do a piece of great service to both; and I

Talbot, the Earl's fourth son, in right of his wife, who was a Rayner. It afterwards came into the possession of the Cavendishes, Dukes of Newcastle, and from Lady Arabella, youngest daughter and coheir of Henry, the last Duke of that family, it descended to her only daughter, Frances, wife of Henry Howard, fourth Earl of Carlisle, whose eldest daughter, Lady Arabella Howard, carried it into the family of Cope, in which it remains.

would wish ye did it before our coming, that the world might see ye did it of yourself; for your enemies never had so good subject to calumniate you as at this time for their common saying to the King is that ye will be both slayer of his father and mother; so that I think ye were happy if ye could do good in this of yourself; and ye may very well do it, for we would be glad of any honest cause to stay at home, and so would his Majesty; for, except we will sell land to furnish ourselves, the means cannot be had; and all men and means is sought for it; but I assure you except I get 10,000 marks I mind never to meddle in that matter, although the King should banish me Scotland, I am already so far behind the hand, or else that I get my own. But I look to hear news that ye have holden in our voyage.

The bearer will show you the very reasons that moved me to think ye never since your parting to have used me so familiarly as of before, and why I took it evil, and what confirmed my opinion. So, remitting me wholly to him, I commit you to God.

From Holyrood House, this 9th of Dec. 1586.

Your loving friend,

MASTER of GRAY.

No. CCX.

(Cecil Papers, 1586.)

SIR FULKE GREVILLE TO ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.

My Lord Ambassador,
This bearer tells me you are desirous to hear of

me, and would have pained yourself to see me, but that you are presently tied to greater matters; I can do no less for these courtesies than thank you, and desire the love between us may grow and multiply. By reason of my weakness and sloth together, it will be some time before I shall find it good for me to wait; and when I come, the new writers in navigation that there are so many mines of adamant under your North Pole, as if I should accompany you, as I love you, I am afraid you would judge it was that stone which drew my iron. But I will measure my thoughts and fashions by the ell of truth, *et ruat mundus.* I am a stranger to the Master of Grays; but, in honour of his memory, that while he lived bare an honourable witness of his worth, I mean the Prince of gentlemen, Sir Philip Sydney, I hope it shall be no trespass to present him love and honour by you; I pray you do it, and make me as much worth to him as you think good. In this sort, and further, your Lordship may ever command me; for I hold your love exceeding dear, and desire of God you may have right and honour.

From Broxbourne, this 12th of January.

Your Lordship's, to do you service,

FULKE GREVILLE.*

*To the right honourable Lord Ambassador
Legier of Scotland.*

* Sir Fulke Greville, Knight, created Lord Brooke by Jas. I., with limitation to his kinsman, Robert Greville, from whom the Earl of Warwick is descended. This gentleman was one of the

No. CCXI.

(Cecil Papers. 1586.)

THE LAIRD OF RESTALRIG TO
ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.

My Lord,

THE occasion that I never wrote to you since I came home was by reason I had no man to deliver the letters unto, allwise now you shall receive one letter from the Master of Gray; and with that letter he wrote one other to me, desiring me to write to your Lordship that you should write no more to him, for your letters do him very much harm, and he was nothing the wiser for your intelligence. It is indeed of truth that the King is in great anger at you, and altogether by William Keith * and James Hetson's information, and

principal ornaments of Elizabeth's Court, but never held any high office of state, owing, in some measure, to a dignified indolence of temper, but more to a degree of refinement in morality which rendered him unfit for the common pursuits of mankind. He was murdered by an old servant in September, 1628, and lies buried in the Collegiate church of Warwick, under a fine monument, with the following inscription, dictated by himself—"Fulke Greville, servant to Elizabeth, Counsellor to King James, and friend to Sir Philip Sydney." Collins's Peerage gives a full and correct account of this eminent person.

* William Keith, a gentleman of the King's Bedchamber. He had been sent Ambassador Extraordinary to Elizabeth towards the end of October preceding the date of this letter, and during his stay in her Court professed his entire approbation of Douglas's conduct, in a letter which may be found in Dr. Robertson's Appendix. It is pretty clear, however, that the Master of Gray's party, of which Keith was one, had pre-determined to lay all the blame which was due to their treachery upon Douglas only. At the very time that Gray plotted with the latter to prevent the effect of James's remonstrances in behalf of the condemned Queen, he was secretly undermining him in that Prince's favour,

thinks you have done him wrong : James He has been but small friend to the Master's self ; it is little he may do, for the Master, thanl God, is in greater credit than ever he was the King's Grace. His Majesty takes the c of his mother very heavily, and has, for that ca retired himself to Dalkeith for the space of days in quiet.

There is one opponent to go to the Duke of Guise, little George of Lochleven, your com and one other to the Bishop of Glasgow, an to present the letters to the King of France rect from the King, which is John Shaw, who the Laird of Fernihurst's man : I could write effect of their commissions, but I will not at time, till I know that all be sure. Sir William Stewart * sought this credit, who is one g enemy of yours, but it was refused him. I tell that Andrew Gray told to William Keit your Lordship. It came of a man that you know afterwards, who moved Andrew to se and all he did besides. The gentleman you k of is an evil doer, both one way and other, a blithe of your evil luck, if any are. Robert Maxwell is very evil loved here for your cause, for King has caused to lie watch for him, and I command, as one, myself.

As for news : the Master of Glames is nc

and sowing discord between him and Secretary Maitland, b repetition of a private conversation. See *Rob. Hist.*, 8vo. vol. ii. 441.—445.

* Brother to the Earl of Arran. He impeached the Master of Gray in May following, and was killed by the Earl of Maxwell in the streets of Edinburgh, July 31, 1588.

great with the Secretary as he was ; he is married to Lochleven's daughter. The Earl of Arran marries Athol's sister ; the Earl of Angus M. Jane Lyon ; the Earl of Bothwell his : the Secretary is his, always he is stealing the wedding over my Lord Hume's head. The Secretary is like to trouble the Laird of Johnson for words he alleges Johnson should have spoken of him. I believe you shall hear of other news shortly. I pray your Lordship to remember Robert Kerr's pardon, and also my packet, with the first that comes by post. If it were possible, your Lordship might get me the things you promised, now again fourteen either by yourself, or get a reward at the Queen's Majesty's, or Council's hand ; for perhaps I might be worth it, and should be to them any perpetual relief for me and my house : otherwise I will be all the worse. I desire your Lordship to advertise me so shortly as possible as to what I shall look for in that matter. In the next letters I shall write more largely of all things, from time I know my letters may come to you without danger ; so, wishing to your Lordship as to myself, not in any thing to alter the thing begone, I commit your Lordship now and ever to the protection of Christ.

From Fastcastle, the 25th of February, at the twelfth hour in the day.

Your Lordship's as his own, to his life's end,
RESTALRIG.*

* Robert Logan, Laird of Restalrig. The pains that have been taken by historians to collect circumstances relative to the

No. CCXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 49.)

LORDS OF THE COUNCIL
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

AFTER our hearty commendations to your Lordship. Her Majesty finding by advertisements from sundry parts beyond the seas, that there is cause to doubt of some attempt against her realm of Ireland, for impeaching whereof she shall have need to use the service of some of her good subjects, her royal pleasure therefore is, that presently upon the receipt of these our letters, your Lordship do take order, either by yourself, or by direction to your deputies, in the counties of Derby and Stafford, that there may be enrolled in the said county of Derby the number of 100 able men, and in the said county of Stafford, 100, to be put in readiness to march within three days' warning, upon further direction to be received in that behalf, furnished and sorted with weapons, as in like cases heretofore has been appointed ; that is, in every band of 100 persons, 40 shot, or arquebusiers, 20 armed corslets, 20 bows, and 20 halberts, or good black bills ; and, further, to be provided of swords and daggers, convenient hose and doublet, and a cassock of motley, or either

Gowry Conspiracy have preserved this man's name from oblivion. Several years after his death, he was declared by the confession of George Sprot, a notary, to have been a principal contriver of that dark affair, and, according to the ancient law of Scotland, his bones were dug up, tried and condemned of high treason ; his estates were confiscated, and his posterity declared infamous. This happened in 1609.

sea-green colour or russet. And, for that heretofore, when like levies have been made, there has been great fault found by her Majesty's ministers in Ireland to whose charge they have been committed, both with the persons of the men and their furniture, we are to require your Lordship to take order that such care may be had in the choice of these numbers, that both these may be of bodies, for strength and agility, meet for this service, and so well provided of armour and furniture that the Captain who shall take the charge of them may have no just cause to complain. We are further to put your Lordship in mind that it is not meant that any of these numbers should be of the trained bands of the said counties; for that her Majesty's intent is, as hath formerly been signified to some of them by her own letters, to reserve the said trained bands for the defence of her person, and the realm, in case of invasion. And so we bid your Lordship heartily farewell.

From the Court, the 26th of February, 1586.

Your Lordship's assured loving friends,

W. BURGHLEY.

C. HOWARD.

H. DERBY.

FRA. WALSINGHAM.

R. LEICESTER.

T. BUCKHURST.*

J. WOLLEY.†

To our very good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury, Lieutenant of her Majesty's Counties of Derby and Stafford.

* Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, ancestor of the Dukes of Dorset. He succeeded Lord Burghley as Treasurer, and Jas. I., as a singular mark of favour, confirmed him in that office by a Patent for his life. He was more distinguished as an elegant scho-

No. CCXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 357.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD TALBOT.

Son Gilbert,

I THANK you for your pains taken in certifying me of those your sundry news, being the very same in effect that I heard of the day before I received your letter. For answer thereto you shall understand that my meaning towards you is as good as it was at that our departure you put me in mind of ; but for any help about the payment of your debts, I do advise you rather to rely altogether upon yourself, and the best discharge you shall be able to make thereof, than any ways upon me ; who, least my silence in that behalf, and at this time, might breed some hope agreeable to your conceived opinion, do in sadness, as you did in jest, return you a short answer for your long warning ; willing you either to provide for yourself as you may, or else be disappointed, for during my

lar, and a fine gentleman, than for his knowledge of state affairs; but, having the good fortune to serve in quiet times, and loving his ease too well to busy himself much in court intrigues, he was universally beloved, and few ministers have left a better character. He died suddenly at the Council table, April 19th, 1608.

† From what merit this gentleman derived the honour of a seat in the Privy Council we know not, for his name is not mentioned in history. He was the son of John Wolley, Esq., by a sister of Sir Walter Buckler, of Causeway, in Dorsetshire, and descended from a family which had been seated in that county ever since the reign of Henry III. He was appointed Latin Secretary about 1580 ; succeeded Sir Amias Paulet in the Chanceryship of the Garter, in Jane, 1589 ; was knighted in 1592 : and died in the end of February, or the beginning of March, 1595-6.

life I would not have you to expect any more at my hands than I have already allowed you, whereof I know you might live well, and clear from danger of any, as I did, if you had that government over your wife, as her pomp and courtlike manner of life, was some deal assuaged. And, for mine own part, and your good, I do wish you had but half so much to relieve your necessities as she and her mother have spent in seeking, through malice, mine overthrow and dishonour, and I in defending my just cause against them ; by means of whose evil dealings, together with other bargains wherein I have entangled myself of late, I am not able either to help you, or store myself for any other purpose I shall take in hand these twelve months. Thus, praying God to bless you, I bid you farewell.

Sheffield Lodge, the 17th of June, 1587.

Your loving father,

G. SHREWSBURY.

To my son, Gilbert Lord Talbot.

No. CCXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 363.,

SIR HENRY LEE TO LORD TALBOT.

Sir,

ON Monday last I received your letter ; on Thursday I went to Sheffield, my Lord, your father's, where I found him much amended, after his physic, of the gout, which took him at Brierly, and troubled him until then. My being there made him much better disposed, of whom I re-

ceived many sundry kindnesses and more favours than I have or ever may deserve. Acknowledgment is small requital, but that I do, and will, to him, yourself, and yours, in as sundry ways as by my wit, will, and fortune, I may. Dinner done, and all rising saving his Lordship and my poor self, I told him I had written to you, according to his liberty given me upon such talk as his Lordship had last with me at Worksop; that I received an answer which then I presented unto him. I left him alone, Mr. Henry Talbot, Roger Portington, your very good friend, with myself, standing at the window; where I, that knew the sundry contents of the letter, might see any alteration in himself, as they that stood by imagined by his sighs, whereby guessed according to their humours. Your letter perused (and well marked, as it did well appear unto me by his speeches immediately after) rising from the board, with more colour in his cheeks than ordinary, he led me by the hand into his withdrawing chamber, where he told me he did well perceive the contents of your letter; that you had been long a disobedient child unto him; that you joined and practised against him, and with such as sought his overthrow, and, consequently, your own undoing, and the espials and parties you had in his house did shew your care to be more for that he had than himself; but, withal, he knew you had many good parts, but those overruled by others that should be better governed by yourself. More regard, he says, to your old father, would do well; who has been ever loving

unto you, and must be requited with more love and obedience, or else (by his divination) your credit will slowly increase. He is glad, as he says, that you live in those parts (but he speaks ironia) where some good may be learned, but more to be shunned ; yet all well where grace is, so you are able to go through with all ; but for the feeding of such vain time and superfluous excess as should do best for yourself to diminish, he is not able, he says, and I fear will never be willing, to maintain. He reckoned how many had been in hand with him for the payment of your debts ; my Lord Treasurer, and others. His answer was that, through the wilfulness of his,* who shunned his advice, and the imperfections of others, his undoing should not grow, that they themselves might have cause to pity him in his age, through his folly and their persuasions. There, my Lord, he told that £ 3000 yearly went out of his living to his children, and many other sums to small purpose to remember. He confessed he sent you such a letter as you write of, and written by a man of his, but altogether by his direction. That he was old, lame of the gout, and now no more able to write himself. He spake much of your inconstancy in your friendships, and especially to my Lord of Leicester ; sometimes, as you favoured, there was not such ; and laboured himself to rely more upon him, altogether misliking such humours as favoured and disfavoured

* i. e. of his children.

in such sort, and in so short a time ; but, for himself, he would fly such variety, and perform his friendship and faith. Truly, my Lord, he used many of these speeches before I interrupted him, and good reason I had to forbear, for he spoke not without grief, as I guess, and passion, I am sure, therefore thought best to stay until the storm was somewhat overblown. At the last I besought him to tell me whether these old grievances were not remitted upon conference between yourselves ; and whether your abode there was not with his good allowance, that you should procure yourself to be joined with him in his offices ; further, that you should, by good means, procure some honourable office for your better understanding.* All this he did not deny, but, touching his discourse, I think not fit to set it down, my messenger is so uncertain, and my meaning to do good, if I may, but no hurt. He is old and unwieldly, and deceived by such he trusteth, and you shun to assist him, and therefore will let out all ; but that I believe not.† I found one thing in your letter, I said, that I much feared, and made me sorry ; that your favouring so much your own credit, and finding so small means to answer your creditors, you might fall into some hard course ; and, before these words were all out of my mouth, he said,

* Meaning for his better support.

† The Earl charges Lord Talbot with "shunning to assist him," &c. "but that," says Sir Henry, "I do not believe." This letter is rendered obscure in many passages by a laboured conciseness, not only uncommon, but inconsistent with the idiom of our language at that time.

"Yea marry, some desperation." Thereupon I took hold ; good my Lord, license me to speak, with your favour, that speak nothing by practice for gain, but through a dutiful mind to you, now in years, and for yours, by course of nature likely to succeed you. If he should, as you have termed it, take any desperate race ; pass into those parts which this doubtful time brings to many dangers, and especially to our nation ; were not his peril great, and, by presumption, not to be recovered ? You cannot be ignorant, for all your mislike, what a son you have ; esteemed of the highest, favoured of the best, and the best judgments, and how much he differs from other men's sons of your own condition ; so much your love, care, and regard should be the more by how much your loss were more (to be balanced with reason) than all the rest put together. Your country may and will challenge a part and party in him, as a wise man, fit and able to serve it. You yet find not what a Lord Talbot you have ; but if he should by any extraordinary accident be taken from you, and not to be recovered, yourself, with your grief, would accompany your white hairs to your end with a grave full of cares ; and who doth sooner enter into desperation than great wits accompanied with mighty and honourable hearts, which hardly can away with want but never with discredit ?" This, my Lord, sunk somewhat into him. He confessed much of this. He mused long, and spake little : he stayed, standing long, without complaining of his legs (by reason he was earnest) one hour and a half at the

least before we parted. So, in many doubts, I left him, minding to send such letters as you required to Welbeck, and thence to be sent to you: wherewith I took my leave.

I will never take upon me to advise you. You see now what passed, and upon what grounds; therefore resolve, upon temperate blood, and good judgment, and free advice, for the time present; remembering both love and duty, and that you deal with a kind man. I wish a sudden journey, at the least to see him; he must needs take it well, and I know your age may endure it; your friends desire it, and I among the rest (to see you e'er I go from these parts) that loveth you, whose being here, with my Lady, would have made this country to me far otherwise than it is, and my abode much longer than it is like to be. I have troubled you long. The news is that my Lady Talbot, the widow, and your sister my Lady Mary, with my Lady Manners, as I take it came to Sheffield this night past. I think my Lord will to Hatfield the next week that cometh, or the week following, with such company as he hath, but the certainty I know not; but whether he go there or no, I wish you would haste to meet him. My brother, Mr. Portington, Mr. Lascelles,* with myself, and Mr. Fawley recommendeth our love and service to your good Lordship. I beseech

* Portington of Barnby Dun, near Doncaster—Lascelles of Gateford, near Worksop. The former family is now represented by a maiden lady. The latter is extinct—the heiress married into the family of Rhodes, of Barlborough, in Derbyshire.

you let me be remembered humbly unto my Lady,
and to good Sir Charles Candishe and his family,
wishing them both the best happiness.

From Letwell the 13th of August, 1587.

Your Lordship's poor and faithful friend ever,

HENRY LEE.*

*To the right honourable his very good Lord
the Lord Talbot, at Cheston, near Tyb-
boult, give this.*

No. CCXV.

(Cecil Papers.)

R. DOUGLAS TO ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.

Please your Lordship,

I DOUBT not but ye marvel what should be the occasion to hinder me so long from writing since my

* Sir Henry Lee, only son of Sir Anthony Lee, of Quarendon, in the county of Bucks, by Margaret, daughter of Sir Henry Wyat, of Allington in Kent. He was bred from his infancy in courts and camps, and had served in the wars in Scotland with distinguished reputation, and obtained the honour of knighthood, when a very young man. His mind, naturally volatile and whimsical, imbibed a romantic turn from this sort of education, and he not only took the lead in all tilts and tournaments, but assumed the self-created title of Champion for the Queen. Mr. Pennant, who in his late agreeable book "of London," hath given some account of this gentleman, with his portrait, informs us that he made a vow to present himself at the Tilt-yard in that character on the 27th of November every year, till disabled by age. Accordingly in 1591, being then sixty years old, he resigned his post, with great formalities, to the brave Earl of Cumberland, in the presence of the Queen, and the whole Court; offering his armour at her Majesty's feet, and clothing himself in a black velvet coat and a cap. If we may judge from his letters, he possessed a strong understanding, and no inconsiderable share of penetration; yet he appears to have held no office of trust under his adored lady, except that of Master of the Ordnance, which he exercised with much credit at the siege of Edinburgh in 1573. He was made a Knight of the Garter in 1597, and dying in 1611, unmarried, was succeeded in his estates by his cousin, Sir Henry Lee ancestor to the lately extinct Earls of Litchfield.

coming in this country, and I know well you attribute the cause thereof either to my little diligence to come, or else my sloth, and negligence to write since my arrival. As to the first, I made as great haste by the way as conveniently I might for my health, for, the third day after my departure, which was the 22nd of this month, I came in Scotland, but was so uncertain where to find his Majesty, being then on his progress, that I was compelled to follow him for the space of four or five days before I could come to his Highness, which was at Inshmerin, following his wonted pastime of hunting there. I followed him thence to Dumbarton ; where, upon Sunday, being 27th of this month, I had large conference, both upon the state of England and upon yourself, but could find no opportunity to read such memoirs and instructions as I had from you, partly for attendance on his pastime, partly from the company which was about him, which hardly he could shift. The 28th his Majesty went to Hamilton, whither he commanded me to accompany him, and the morrow thereafter, finding opportunity of conference, I requested his Highness that he would take some convenient time that day for reading and hearing of such letters as I had from you, to the end I might have a little time to repose me after so long and tedious a journey ; assuring his Majesty that for the sickness which by travelling I had contracted, I was not able to follow the Court at that time. There his Majesty read your letter, and heard the better part of my instructions, after

the which says his Majesty : “ Because these matters are of weight and importance, and my leisure not so convenient at this time as to advise upon them as they should be, and also that you have a desire to relieve you for a space for your own rest, ye shall deliver these letters and memoirs to the Justice Clerk, and confer with him thereon as ye would with myself ; and, seeing I am to be at Falkland about the beginning of the next month, there ye shall come to me, and receive your answer, and know my meaning about all these matters where, also, I desire to have longer and more particular conference with you.” Whereupon I took my leave, and went to the Justice Clerk, and with him accomplished all his Majesty’s command, and had conference with him more than three whole hours ; in which space, by * the matters which I was commanded to acquaint him with, we had large speech, both of the state of the country and your particular state. I find him a very honest gentleman, affectionate to you as ye could wish, and desirous of peace and amity betwixt the two countries, but fears the interesting of his Majesty’s honour too far, and would wish that his Majesty had so good cause to be contented with that country that in honour he might enter in sure friendship with them. I find his Majesty himself still constant in his old opinion ; and cannot be removed, as yet, from the good will and affection

* q. d. Besides—over and above.—The word *by* occurs twice in the same sense towards the end of this letter “ *By* his defraying, &c.” “ *By* a number of hackneys.”

he bears to that country, neither by his nobility nor counsellors, who are, almost all, very earnest with him to that effect, upon the little hope they say that there is any honest dealing meant for him from that country. As yet they have nothing prevailed, what time and hard using may do is greatly to be feared; for the practisers in France and Spain, and with the Pope, are very busy, and promises very fair already, and, for certain, Spanish ducats are flying thick in this country; and of late, since my return in this country, one Mr. Robert Bruce, whom ye have heard of (I need not to describe him) is come from France directed from the Bishop of Glasgow, and others, with great offers; so that it is to be feared that his Majesty by these and like persuasions (and, on the other part, if he see no assurance of honest dealing thence) may be moved at the length to condescend to the earnest desire of those who cease not to press him daily to prosecute the revenge of the wrong offered him by some of that country; with assurance that if once he were entered there with forces, though small, protesting that he came thither as protector of such as were afflicted, by the great assistance of strangers the best and greatest part of the country itself would concur with him. These and such like speeches are daily beaten in his ears, but yet have taken no place; partly for the natural affection he bears to that country, and partly upon the hope ye give him that honourable and sufficient offers shall be made to him from that country, which, for your part, I

you to do what you can to hasten, for fear hould come too late. I need not to write to Lordship what care his Majesty has for reng the insolencies committed upon the bor- for I know the order my Lord of Angus has for quelling them, by his Highness' special and is already come to your ears.

ur Denmark Ambassadors are returned, as said, but the loss of any of their ships con-as was reported. They have delivered their er to his Majesty, which was hereabouts in —that the King of Denmark would be glad s Majesty's friendship and alliance, and is sorry of the promise he has already made of ldest daughter* to Archduke Matthias, but Highness can like the second, he will con-with him what conditions ; as, he will be a suitor to the Archduke to dis-with him for his promise, and to be contented his second daughter, that he may give the t to his Majesty ; some say that he desired hat the Queen of England might be a doer : marriage. The convention of the nobility pointed, for that cause, to be in Falkland the beginning of September, where his Ma-will be to crave their opinion concerning this er, and his marriage ; but ye remember what ke to you, being with you, hereanent ; that e is to be followed certainly.

Elizabeth, daughter of Frederick II. She married Henry Duke of Brunswick, and died in 1625. Anne, her next was married to James, April 20, 1589.

The state of this country remains as it did at my departure hence ; never quieter within ; never surer friendship betwixt the nobility ; never better affectionate subjects towards their Prince : never a Prince more careful of their welfare. Some tumults are in the Isles and Islands, betwixt Machlane and Mackoniel,* the causes whereof are attributed to the Deputy of Ireland, for without his assistance, Mackoneil, who is delared rebel to his Majesty, were not able to trouble the country as he doth ; and ye will not believe (as that matter was tried out upon his Majesty's being at Dumbarton) as no occasion is omitted to exasperate the King against the country. For my part, I believe the Deputy dare not avow the maintaining and assistance of so disloyal a traitor as is Mackoneil, if he should be accused thereof to his mistress. The temporal of the benefices of Scotland, granted to the King,† as the Lord, in the last Parliament, because it is a great matter, and touches many, the charge thereof is committed to the Chancellor, Treasurer, and Justice Clerk ; the

* See Spotswood's History of the Church of Scotland f. 348.

† Under the specious pretence of enabling him to support his dignity without burthening the country with taxes. Spotswood, however, informs us that this act was meant as a fatal blow, and indeed it proved so, at the Scottish Prelacy ; for the Bishopricks, being mostly founded on temporal lands, became so reduced in value that it was now difficult to persuade the more reputable of the clergy to accept them. James soon repented of the error into which his greedy disposition had betrayed him, especially when he found himself obliged to grant away to his yet more rapacious courtiers those very revenues for which he had so lately bartered one of the strongest pillars of his throne.

uplifting thereof to the collector general. Du Bartas* is this day to take his leave of his Majesty, to return to Rochelle by the vessel at Dumbarton. He has been very honourably used by his Highness since his arrival; for, besides his defraying during his abode, and one of the best ships in this country sent only for his sure transporting, his Majesty has yesterday made him Knight; giving him a chain weighing 1000 crowns, and 2000 crowns of the sun also; and to every one of his company a sum of money, with a tablet of gold, having in it his Majesty's portrait; besides a number of hackneys, and other presents, made to him by some of the nobility and courtiers.

I pray your Lordship to commend me to Mons. du Moulins, and excuse me to him; the time could not suffer me to write as I promised, but let him understand that I delivered his letter to his Majesty, who was very glad thereof, and is very desirous of his coming into this country. I could not have conference upon his matters as yet, but against my next dispatch I shall understand both his Majesty's mind more particularly, and the Chancellor's also, and then shall write to himself what he may look for. The particular answers to all such matters as I had from you at my going to Falkland I shall not fail to desire; which, immediately thereafter, I shall write to your Lordship

* William du Bartas, a noble Gascon, and a celebrated poet in his time. He came to Scotland to propose a marriage between James and the Princess Catherine of Navarre, sister to Henry IV. of France.

† See note at page 311.

to which time I commit them and all other matters; and so, after my humble commendations of service, I take my leave, praying the Eternal to have your Lordship in his holy protection.

From Hamilton, this 30th of August, 1587.
Your Lordship's loving nephew, to do you service,
R. DOUGLAS.*

Roger Ashton has him commended to you, and prays you to have him in remembrance; and to Mr. Secretary.

To the right honourable Mr. Archibald Douglas, Resident for his Majesty's affairs in England.

No. CCXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 365.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO SIR HENRY LEE.

Good Sir Henry Lee,

I HAVE perused that enclosed letter you sent me within yours, and do account you most faithful and forward to do good where you profess friendship. Neither can the eloquence of the one, nor the earnest desire of the other, persuade me to do otherwise in that matter than I have already upon good consideration, determined. My son compares my words with his own conceits, and means to save

* Richard Douglas, a cadet of the Earl of Morton's branch, and nephew to the Ambassador. It appears from certain passages in Doctor Birch's papers that he was in some degree of confidence with James, and that he was sent to London on that Prince's affairs in 1593. His letters prove him to have been a person of considerable abilities.

his credit as shall content me, but when he sealeth I will assure.* I proposed to leave him in better case than my father left me, and if I give him so much as I cannot withhold I am not in his debt. I forgave him all his faults, but I promised him not that I would trust him. He can bring the honour of his house now to make for his purpose, but he remembereth not how he went about to dishonour it. He laboured not to make sure my Lord of Leicester of their side that went about to accuse his father of treason. He did not countenance his wife and her mother against me in all their bad actions. His deceits never moved me to be displeased—Well, if they did, I pronounced forgiveness thereof to his friend, as I have done before unto him. He knoweth whereof his grief grew; let him henceforth avoid the occasions. He says he is not over-ruled by his wife, but attributes that to my speeches; but I say, if he be not he will quickly recover, and live better of his annuity than I could do when I bare his name, with less allowance. Yet (notwithstanding his doubtful words of your welcome hither, in respect you have moved me for his good) I beseech you come ten times for every one past; assuring you that the most eloquent orator in England can do no more with me than

* This passage is extremely obscure. The taunting and ironical style of the context seems to warrant the following explanation. The earl says, “ My son compares my words with” (or suits them to) “ his own conceits, and means to save his credit as shall content me; but when he *sealeth* I will assure;”—*i. e.* when he performs his engagement, I will believe him.

you have, till I perceive a new course. Thus, with my hearty commendations, I bid you farewell.

Sheffield, September 6, 1587.

Your loving friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

*To my very loving friend Sir Harry Lee,
Knight.*

No. CCXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 369.)

—TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable,

I HAVE delivered your letters, to be transported in a packet, safe. My Lord, for anything I can find, here is a resolution for a peace, if the enemy will perform his promises ; and, for that purpose, there is either John Yarbert, or Robert Beale, to go presently to the States to signify the same to them, and to persuade them to join therein, which if they will they shall be provided for as well as we ; if they will not, it will go on without them. The Commissioners have commandment to be ready upon warning had from Holland, from him that goeth, upon their forwardness there. The Earl of Leicester hath earnestly procured his revocation, but he cannot obtain it as yet, till her Majesty do try, by sending her Commissioners,* whether the enemy do dissemble or no touching the peace,

* These Commissioners were Lord Buckhurst, Norris, and Bartholomew Clerk. They were sent not only to discover the inclinations of the Dutch with regard to a peace with Spain, but also to enquire into the causes of complaint lately preferred against Leicester.

will be known very shortly. We have no news out of France these sixteen days, where it is thought they be about a peace too. causes of Scotland remain very suspicious, whether the King be lost or no;* at my next writing signify those matters more plain unto your M^r. My Lord of Essex is a little thing sickish. Majesty hath written a letter with her own hand to call home Sir Charles Blount from Holland. : my next letters shall report more alterations in Honour. And so, most humbly taking my

I pray to God to bless you, and all your family, with his grace and mercy.

At London, October 11, 1587.

your Honour's most humble poor friend, assured, and at commandment.

The Secretary hath been ill, and at home at his ease this good while, troubled with his old disease—the tympany and carnosity.+ It will be this time yet before he be able to go to the Court. gentleman, the more the pity, for he is very well in mind; for this course, if it hold, goeth against his opinion.

No. CCXVIII.

(Cecil Papers.)

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO THE QUEEN.

May please your most excellent Majesty,
the world and base estate, the want of living, and

meanings—whether he be *lost* as a friend and ally to England. Walsingham died, says Camden, of an excrescence *in partibus*, or rather of an intemperate application of physic.

the greatness of my debts, proceeding from my grandfather, father, and brother, and remaining due unto your Majesty by me to be paid ; and also of my own debts, growing thereby since, with the estate of my calling ; (not having wherewithal to satisfy the same without sale of a great part of my living, to the utter undoing of myself, and hindrance of my posterity) do urge and constrain me most humbly to sue and appeal unto the most gracious and favourable toleration therein of your Majesty. My case, most gracious Sovereign, is this ; my late Lord brother hath left me to live ~~or~~ but £450 by year ; my instalment unto your M~~a~~jesty, as hitherto, above £500 by year ; and after the next payment, which is £735, a continual annual yearly payment of £500, which is £50 yearly more than is left for me to live of. My will and desire of my service great ; my ability and state, as your Majesty may truly hereby see, nothing. If aught remain, it is but a proud show of a beggar's purse— My humble suit unto your Majesty, therefore, is this : that where I have but £450 left me from my ancestors to live of at this instant (the like whereof was never so small when we were but Barons, though now Earls) that it would please your Highness, of your great grace, and favourable goodness and consideration, to deal thus graciously with me. That either it would please your Highness to receive and take £250 yearly to your self, and leave unto me the other £200, towards my living and maintenance ; or else to let me have the £250, and your Majesty to receive the other

200, until your Highness shall be satisfied of all
ebts by my brother, father, and grandfather, due
unto your Highness. Wherein your Majesty shall
o this gracious goodness and act, you shall grant
id give me the greatest gift I can receive ; you
all of a man bound by debt make me free ; and of
me now not credited, to be well trusted. Which
it shall please your Majesty of your gracious
oodness to accept of, I must say no act to me too
reat, no attempt doubtful, nor no peril dangerous,
at may tend for your Majesty's defence and ser-
ce, which this notwithstanding the effect thereof
mean to perform.

I assure your Majesty my state was and is in
is sort ; that whatsoever I have paid unto your
Majesty since my brother's death I have taken up,
id yet do, upon interest ; so as the principal and
terest are both payable. I am therefore most
umbly to crave your Majesty's pardon and favour,
show a cause why I am rather persuaded to de-
ver unto your Majesty this my humble petition and
it in writing than to utter it by speech. Your
Majesty doth know that neither my place of access
to your Majesty, nor my opportunity of time, be-
ch as I may without the understanding or over-
aring of others deliver my humble suit and peti-
on in words ; which being heard (perhaps all not
ing friends unto me) might thereby be discovered ;
d thereby, being reported, it would come to pass
at my enemies would rejoice against me, my friends
ould pity me, and my creditors would mistrust
>. All which, by these means, and your Majesty's

gracious goodness, I may avoid ; for, being known but unto your Majesty, I may for a while remain in the same state and credit I was before, and partly yet am ; without joy to my enemies, pitying of my friends, or mistrust of my creditors. If I were to be referred to the court of Exchequer, where debts are to be installed, and payments to be made, I do know my Lord Treasurer can tell that the law, conscience, and order, of that court, hath, and would, set down that all men dying indebted unto the Prince, their next heirs should in that court be allotted and allowed so much for their maintenance as their calling should require, and the rest to remain unto the Prince for their satisfaction ; whereof, for my own part, I can make no challenge, having received heretofore your Majesty's most gracious instalment ; and, therefore, refer my whole state to your Majesty's most gracious consideration, praying unto the Almighty for your Majesty's most prosperous and gracious reign long to continue.

November 5, 1587.

Your Majesty's most humble, faithful, and obedient servant and subject,

H. SUSSEX.*

* Henry Ratcliffe, fourth Earl of Sussex of his family, and Knight of the Garter, second son of Henry, the second Earl, by Elizabeth, one of the daughters of Thomas Howard, second Duke of Norfolk. This depressed nobleman, whose name scarcely occurs in history, appears to have filled no public employment but that of Governor of Portsmouth. He married Honora, daughter and heir of Anthony Pound, of Hampshire, who brought him an only son, Robert; and, dying in the beginning of December, 1593, was buried with the former Earls at Boreham in Essex.

No. CCXIX.

(Cecil Papers.)

R. DOUGLAS TO ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.

Please your Lordship,

YOUR last letters brought by the Laird of Barnbugell's son, come to this town about the last of this last month, at what time I was absent in my father's house ; therefore he delivered them to my Lord Justice Clerk, as he says you directed him. I come hither the first of this month, being sent for by my said Lord Justice Clerk, suppose I was scarce well convalescent out of my late sickness. His Lordship at my coming communicated to his Majesty, together with your letter directed to his Highness self, in my presence, both the contents of my letter and his own : for which advertisement his Majesty acknowledged himself to be beholden to you, and commanded my Lord and me both to write back to you his mind thereon ; which seeing my Lord (being so holden busily occupied about the trial of his late discovered conspiracy) could have no time to perform, at the least before his Majesty's journey to Peebles beginning this day, I was commanded shortly to let your Lordship understand a part of his Majesty's mind thereon, until the justice clerk did the rest, which will be ere it be long.

His Majesty marvels very much that that Queen and counsellors should rather judge of his mind and meaning by vain reports, and letters of sedi-

tious knaves (for so he named Courcelles*) enemies to both your states, forget as he thinks, to no other purpose than to entertain this begun jealousy and unkindness (these are his own words, confirmed by his daily behaviour and whole actions), and complains heavily that by such dealing they seem rather to seek a quarrel against him than to shew any good mind of friendship, or continuance of amity ; for, says he, “ I am so far from that mind as to dissemble with that queen that ever I deal with any other prince in her prejudice, or mean any harm unto her, I shall advertise her thereof myself, and give up friendship openly ; which I protest before God I was never minded to do, and desire never to have that occasion. And as for Courcelles, if in his letters he has reported other hard speeches or evil meaning towards the Queen of England in my name, he has done me great wrong ; for, as God knows, I spoke not with him myself, nor any from me, more than this half year ; and in all my speeches I use to speak reverently of all Princes ; and, if the Queen of England will desire me by letter, I will set down to her in writing all that ever I spoke of her.” This was the effect of his Majesty’s words concerning that matter, which I am assured he spoke uprightly, as he meant, for I know, since Easter last, Courcelles

* De Courcelles, a Frenchman, who had been employed in several negotiations by the deceased Mary, and whose name frequently occurs in Haynes and Murdin’s papers. See particularly a letter from Lord Hunsdon to the Queen, in that collection, vol. ii. 591.

spoke never with his Highness. And as for that part of the instructions to Denmark that they quarrel, believe me there was no such matter in these instructions : but if it was amongst his papers, you may be assured that that part, and many others like unto it, were either forged by himself to let it appear to them that sent him what great offices he had done for the advancement of what he came for, or else given him by some malicious Papist, to persuade him that his Majesty was willing to revenge that cause ; as they are busy both to move him to that, and to make their friends believe that he lacks no good will thereunto. His Majesty in no wise can think it meet that you should as yet come out of that country, for he esteems you may do him, being there, far greater services than by your coming ; neither yet has his Highness resolved touching the sending of one unto you. His resolution in that and other matters upon your letters, being stayed by weighty matters, has been these six days past in hand ; and by his journey towards Peebles this day, which he has deferred until his return, which he minds to make short, being minded to go no farther than Peebles, seeing all the borders are there with their pledges, both for restitution and repairing of wrongs and stealths already committed, as also for keeping of good order in time coming ; and, therefore, if my Lord Hunsdon, or any other, complain for border matters, they do it causeless, for never in our days was there so strait order taken with them ; for Lidisdale, who, as your Lordship knows, was most

disordered, is lately come in, and given pledges ; promising to make full restitution for all stealths, burnings, or whatsoever other wrongs done by them against England since the providing the like be done to them.

I touched in the beginning of this letter that the Justice Clerk could not have opportunity to write to your Lordship, being holden so busily occupied with the trial of this late discovered conspiracy ;* and, because the bruit thereof I am assured is already there, I thought I would set the matter down to your Lordship at length. Upon the penult of this last month, October, there came to the King a certain personage, whose name I must conceal because his Majesty will not reveal it, desiring conference of his Highness ; which having obtained it, he shewed him how that one John Smollet, known to your Lordship, and one Cavillon, a Frenchman, servant to the Duke of Lennox, had been very busy with certain noblemen, some Papists, some malcontents of the present state, to bring them to make some sudden enterprise for altering of the present state ; and had brought it so far about that certain of them were agreed, against a prefixed day, to have taken by force his Majesty out of the hands of the noblemen who are presently in rule ; killed the Chancellor, Treasurer Justice Clerk, and Prior of Blantyre ; erected Pastry ; and compelled his Majesty to have broken

* This conspiracy is not spoken of by any of the Scottish historians.

with England, and denounced war for his mother's death ; and this he gave his Majesty to understand with their particular names, and how it should have been executed. His Majesty believed this report the rather because Cavaillon had been sundry times in hand with him before, to try his liking of the present state, and whether he could be contented of any alteration in the same ; and, therefore, immediately after this discovery, his Majesty sent for the Chancellor and Justice Clerk, and, calling them alone to the cabinet, opened the whole matter to them, craving their advice. They both were of opinion that his Majesty should suffer the matter to go further forward, and to grow to some greater maturity and ripeness, that they might more certainly discover who were the authors and particulars in the plot, and, in the mean time, to be upon their own guard ; but the King was in a contrary opinion, alleging that by delaying and protracting time he could see no other appearance but that either the suspected persons remaining at court should escape, perhaps being advertised by the same person who had owned the matter to himself (seeming to doubt whether he would like of the purpose or not) or else, by time, a greater number of the nobility would join in the cause than was already, to whom it behoveth him to shew himself an enemy, which he would eschew so far as he could ; reproving therewith the fashion of England, who, says he, “wittingly and willingly suffer such conspiracies to go forward until the very point, which can produce nothing but all ex-

tremity, which all Princes," says he, "I think should seek to avoid." His Majesty's opinion, as grounded upon better reason, was followed; so the same night Smollet was committed prisoner in the castle of Edinburgh, and, after two or three sundry examinations, Cavaillon was also taken: Sir William Stewart, who serves for such purposes, has accused them both severally, and at his Majesty's coming back they are to be confronted every one with the other. This whole matter, and all their depositions, are kept very secret; and I think verily, besides three or four of the council, there be no one who knows the certainty, or so much as I have written to your Lordship. The Justice Clerk opened the truth of the matter to me, as I have written it. The purpose was the change of both state and religion; the layers of the plot, Fentrie, the Prior of Pluscardin, with some other Jesuits, lately come in this country. Their assistants are the Earls of Huntly, Crawford, Montrose, Glencarn, the Abbot of Paisly, and some others; but this is kept very close, therefore your Lordship will handle it wisely, and cause it to serve for good offices where you are.

The King has declared here both his zealous mind in religion, and his constant keeping of promise to the Stirling lords. The plague is lately risen, both in this town, and very vehement in Leith. The Session is discharged until the beginning of December, and if the sickness increase, his Majesty minds to go to Dalkeith, and there remain. At his Majesty's returning to this town, which will

be about the tenth of this month, the Justice Clerk will resolve your Lordship at length of all other matters contained in your last letters, as also such other matters as occurs your Lordship shall know. Unto which time, after my commendations of service, I commit your Lordship to God for his protection.

From Edinburgh, the 6th of November, 1587.
Your Lordship's loving nephew, to do you service,
R. DOUGLAS.

*To the right honourable my Lord Ambassador
resident for the King his Majesty of Scot-
land at the Court of England.*

No. CCXX.

(Cecil Papers.)

R. DOUGLAS TO ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.

Please your Lordship,

YOUR last letters, bearing date the 12th of January, came to my hands, to this town, the 16th thereof. Immediately after your receipt I went to Court, to let them be seen, first by the Justice Clerk, and then by his Majesty. It pleased his Highness, even then, to command the Justice Clerk to write to you his mind at length, both upon such heads as were contained in your letter, as also upon some other points concerning his service; but I have these eight days past, even hourly almost, and day by day, attended to have had his letters, or at least instructions from him to be sent to you, but can not as yet attain thereto, every day excusing his other greater affairs in his Majesty's service; but

now, lest you should, as heretofore you have done, accuse me that you have not your answer, I could no longer stay, but by this advertise you that it lay not in my hand to have any answer with greater expedition ; desiring you to lay the blame where it should, and neither upon his Majesty nor me. As for my part, I am neither in the rank nor have the credit, that I dare complain to his Majesty that his will is unperformed, especially when the occasion thereof proceeds from those persons that bear the sway of our state ; but so far as I could understand of his Highness's mind I have there set down, and when it shall please him to whom the charge was specially committed to perform the rest, I shall see it sent unto you with all expedition.

I perceive the King his Majesty likes very well of the answer you gave unto the Queen, concerning the offers she would have sent by you, and thus far I dare assure unto you, that his Highness is nowise minded to accept any such kind of offers, nor to hear of them from no man ; and unless, as I wrote unto you in my last, they shall come off with some more square form of dealing, and propose to him conditions carrying some greater assurance of their good will, with satisfaction in honour, there is no appearance that they shall be accepted. As for any dealing his Majesty has had with the Lord Hunsdon, private persons might, either in their own name, or perhaps taking a more ample commission than was given them by his Highness, persuade that Lord further of his Ma-

jesty's liking than ever they had in charge ; but I may, and that by commandment from his Majesty's self, assure you that never one had from him any commission to deal with the nobleman in any matters, except such as pertained unto the borders, and for keeping good order upon them. As for any other matters, either concerning the concluding of the begun league, or renewing of intelligence for assuring of a certaiu unity and friendship betwixt their Majesties, persuade yourself his Majesty dealt never therein with any, yourself excepted ; neither can I see or perceive any disposition in him that way, except it shall be both first begun and prosecuted by them of that country, and by the special command from the Queen.

I perceive, and his Majesty laughs at it, that State is very untruly informed of our proceedings there ; for they take his Majesty to be driven to some hard inconvenience at home, so that he will be compelled to seek their friendship, which I assure you is as far from the truth as who would say we already be by the ears ; for, believe me, his Majesty is absolutely and with reverence obeyed through all this country in all points, and there dare be no open neither disobedience nor revolt through all this realm ; and if any grudge or occasion of discontentment be, it is only of such as are devoted to the Papistical religion, who are sorry that his Majesty utters himself so far in their contrary ; but the number of such persons is so small that neither they dare nor may presume to any open rebellion ; but, on the contrary, the principals of that

sect have bound themselves either to deliver to justice, or else to send out of the country, all Jesuits, priests, and notorious Papists, that meddle with the state, within the space of one month ; so that you may certainly affirm that there is no cause for any trouble likely to fall to his Majesty at home, that he needs to seek the friendship of the state. As for any other private person who thinks his own state in danger, or would by foreign friendship assure the same, surely I think there be none of them whom his Majesty now trusts that will require his good will so evil as for their particular to hazard his honour or service ; or, if they would, I am assured they will not be able to perform what they shall promise, or to move his Majesty to descend to any conditions derogating to his state, or princely dignity. His Highness is past that point that he will at every occasion, or every particular favourite pleasure, alter his determination ; his Majesty increases daily in judgment and wisdom, and with a provident care foresees his own state, and of his country, and takes the government of his affairs now in his own hand, so that particular persons neither dare nor may meddle as they had wont.

I cannot perceive in his Majesty any disposition to write either to my Lord of Leicester, or any other in that country, except he saw a better and surer ground than any he can as yet perceive ; but he desires you to assure my Lord, and all other professing him good-will in that country, of his loving and favourable mind towards them ; and my

Lord, in special, that if he shall understand of any good offices he shall do for advancing of his service there, his Lordship shall understand it shall be done for a thankful and gracious Prince, who in time shall not forget to requite the same ; and hereof I doubt not his Majesty will assure his Lordship, if he see the effects of any good meaning from that country.

There are Deputies gone from hither to treat with the Lord Hunsdon upon border matters ; only Alexander Home of Hutonhall, the Laird of Carmichael, and Mr. George Young ; I know they have no other commission of his Majesty's but to entreat upon the common sorts of wrongs done upon the frontiers since March last, and to take some good order for them ; neither is his Majesty minded to deal of any other matter with the Lord Hunsdon, whatsoever he has written to Court in that country ; neither has he any assurance of his Majesty's good mind but by words only, and that by me when I was sent thither ; and I think there be not one of the Council of England of whose good meaning to do his Majesty's service it will please you to advertise his Highness, but he may have also great assurance of his goodwill as has the Lord Hunsdon, for all his vaunting thereof. And, therefore, his Majesty thinks the occasion as great offered to you presently to do him service, yea greater than it was before, considering the present state of that country ; and how necessary the assured friendship of this country is now to their brawled quietness, like to be invaded by

foreign nations, and nothing assured of their own
people, at the least of a good part of them.

As to the part of your letter concerning the preacher who falsely reflected upon his Majesty in the pulpit, where you desire to know his Highness's mind anent his punishment ; it is of truth that his Majesty was advertised thereof a great while before the coming of your letters, and suppose he takes it to come from some other than the simple preacher, yet, as you know, his Majesty, being always more bent to clemency than any rigorous dealing, never punished the like offence in any of his own subjects but by confession and acknowledging of the offence (thinking his own honest and virtuous actions more sufficient to give proof of his upright meaning than the severe punishment of any railing fellow), so his Highness will be content that the preacher acknowledge his fault in the same place where he made the first offence ; and in the mean time, if you can learn at whose persuasion he did it, you will do him acceptable service. The other part of your letter, concerning the occurrence from France, was little agreeable to his Majesty, who desires in heart good success to the King of Navarre, and the rest of the Protestants in their action. We are very uncertain here of the state of France, and hear reports, and them but late ; therefore his Majesty would be glad you advertise him oftener of that state. He has lately received letters from Monsieur du Bartas, written from Rochelle about the middle of December. He had not then been with the King of Navarre,

and therefore wrote rather anent that point.
William Melvin is looked for shortly.

The state of this country remains almost as it was, guided under his Majesty, by the same persons, but his Highness daily more and more meddling with his own affairs, to the great comfort of his good subjects, and fear of broken persons. He shews himself still an enemy to the Papists, and maintainers of Jesuits and priests, towards whom he has conceived a deadly hatred. He has sent for the Earl of Huntly, and some others of the faction, who are looked to be here within a day or two; it is certainly believed that he, and some others, shall be committed to ward at their coming. His Majesty would be glad to have assured friendship with that country, and will be sorry it should be invaded by other nations, but yet I know he will neither by the suitor thereof, nor yet accept it but with honourable conditions. He will be upon his own guard, and wait, as they use to do, what time will produce. There is some other matter concerning this state, and your particular also which I looked ere this to have been resolved of, but I can not understand it certainly before the coming of Huntly and Crawford, at which time shall let you understand it with what expedition I may. I delivered your letter to R. A. who is in a great rage that you should have conceived any sinister opinion of him: as to the first, he denies not; but it may be that of ignorance and simplicity his letter might have wrought other effects than he wished or looked, and for that cause has promised

to forbear to write; but manifestly denies that ever he wrote any matter that might in any ways prejudge or hurt your credit, avowing that as he had been very ungrateful to have done it, so he had never any intention but to do you all service possible; but this I refer to his own letter, which I send you herewith inclosed. For my own part, I cannot say that ever I could perceive in him but an upright meaning to do you all the good offices he could. The Earl Marshal, a very honest and wise nobleman, is here at Court, fallen in feud with the Earl of Huntly, as you heard of before. He has written to you for a license to buy two horses out of England, by reason of his feud. Surely I think your Lordship shall do well to pleasure that nobleman in that matter, if you may, for I know his honesty, that he will be willing to acquit it whensoever you shall have to do with him in a greater matter, and it will be the occasion of farther friendship betwixt you. I wrote to your Lordship before that Robin Scott imprudently had told the King of two horses he had to bring to his Majesty from you. At the beginning there was some difficulty made in accepting of them, but now Carmichael is come to Robin from his Majesty, desiring him that (because the two horses he had already bespoken were not so meant for his Highness's riding) he would give him the placquet and money to buy the best he could find in that country, and that he would go himself to seek them, assuring him that such was his Majesty's pleasure. Robert answered that he had not the placquet, and for

money, he knew not if you would allow so much as he desired ; but, if it would please the Laird to go and choose the horses, he should come after to buy them, and bring them with him, or else he would advertise you thereof, and abide your answer, and whatsoever you would command him to do, that he should accomplish. This Robert Scott desired me to let you know, praying you to write him your mind with as great haste as you may. He has not yet delivered me the money you desired, by reason of his absence from this town almost ever since your letter came to my hands. I pray your Lordship to write to him to give me other forty pounds, for, believe me, I am indebted of that, and more also, and that only in your Lordship's service.

His Majesty bears a good mind to recompense my services, but I am in all my gifts crossed and hindered by the Chancellor. My brother John Brown, in Exmouth, has advertised me that his brother Robert Brown is lately departed at London, to his great grief, both for loss of his brother and of his gear that he had ventured with him. He is also advertised that by your Lordship's means this Robert Brown had recovered a part of his losses, and was to have received about this last Christmas four score pounds sterling ; therefore I may request your Lordship very earnestly that for

the young man be dead who should have received the money, that your Lordship suffer it not to be lost, seeing it appertained to his brother John, but your Lordship will cause it to be reco-

vered; and, further, if it be possible, to the use of John Brown, who is an honest and kind man, ready to do your Lordship all pleasure, and who both conveys your Lordship's letters to me, and mine to Berwick; and it is of truth that his brother had nothing but that which did appertain to him, and was but his merchant, and thus, until the next occasion, that I believe shall be within a day or two, I take my leave of your Lordship.

From Edinburgh, this 24th of January, 1587.

By your Lordship's loving nephew,
to do you always service,
R. DOUGLAS.

*To the right honourable my Lord Ambassador
Resident for the King of Scotland at the
Court of England..*

No. CCXXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 135.

Extracts from Papers of this year relative to proceedings
against Recusants in the County of Derby.

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY
TO THOMAS KNYVETON.

THE Queen's Majesty, being moved by sundry occasions greatly importing the estate of this her realm, to abridge the liberty of sundry Papists recusants, ill members of the same, resident within this county of Derby, hath prescribed unto me an order to be taken in that behalf, wherein is especially required the service of her subjects of best affection towards her Majesty within the said county; and, for that I am persuaded you are one of those, I have thought meet hereby to require

you forthwith to receive into your charge and custody the body of Philip Draycot, Gent. recusant, to be by you well safely kept as her Majesty's prisoner, upon his proper costs and charges, until further orders shall be given you in that behalf; whereof fail you not, as you tender her Majesty's service, and will answer the contrary.

Given at Whitley, this 29th of January, 1587.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 135.)

FRANCIS LEAKE

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY, Feb. 2nd. 1587.

ACCORDING to your Lordship's direction, I have apprehended William Sherbrook, and this day sent him by the constable to the gaol. I was likewise this day at Tupton, where I found the Lady Constance Foljamb,* Richard Kitchen, and Richard Copstack. I did impart to the Lady Foljamb my commission to commit her to the charge of my

* In the volume of Ladie's letters, in the Talbot MSS. marked O. is one from this Lady Foljambe to the Earl of Shrewsbury, dated Sept. 22, 1589; wherein she thanks him for having lately procured her enlargement by his letters to the Privy Council, in consequence of her having heard *such service* as her nephew, Sir Edward Littleton, had been ordered to say before her, in the presence of some of his Lordship's servants; but informs him that Sir Godfrey Foljambe had refused to obey the order of Council for restoring to her "her living, goods, and chattels;" wherefore, "being left utterly destitute in her very old age," she conjures the Earl again to interfere in her favour. This persecuted woman was second daughter to Sir Edward Lyttleton, of Pillaton in Staffordshire, and widow of Sir James Foljambe, of Walton, in the County of Derby, from whose first wife, Alice Fitzwilliams, Sir Godfrey descended.—See a letter from the Earl of Shrewsbury to Lord Burghley in her behalf, in unpublished Talbot papers, vol. H, fol. 77.

cousin Foljamb. Her answer was that she was, by age, and sickness of the stone, not able to travel either on horseback or on foot, and so desired me to let your Lordship understand ; whereupon she as yet remaineth at Tupton till your Lordship's pleasure be further known.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 128.)

JOHN MANNERS AND ROGER COLUMBELL,
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. Feb. 3rd, 1587.

YESTERDAY, being Candlemas day, Mr. Columbell went himself early in the morning, with sixteen or twenty of our men, to Padley, where he found Thomas Fitzherbert's wife, Anthony Fitzherbert, two of his sisters, and about twenty persons besides, seeming to be of their household ; and made diligent search for Mr. John Fitzherbert, yet could not find him, but was informed by them that he was in Staffordshire. Thence he went to the Northlees, and took Mr. Fenton, and searched his house, but found no suspicious persons. He used himself very obediently, and came with him willingly to Haddon, where he shewed a protection, and desireth that it may stand with your Lordship's pleasure, to have the benefit thereof, for the liberty to be in his own house, according to the same ; by which it appeared that he hath entered into bond of £200 to be forthcoming at any time within twenty days warning. And if this cannot be granted him, then his humble request is that he may have respite to go to his own house for a week, to take order for his things, and

chiefly, to comfort his daughter, who was brought in bed the same morning, and seemed amazed with his sudden apprehension. Also the same morning we sent Robert Eyre, of Bubnell, with the constable, and seven or eight persons to Harwood Grange, where they found Brown, and brought him hither; but Corke, and the Lady Talbot, be removed thence. The said Brown offered to come to the church, and is very loth to go to the gaol, because, as he saith, there is an execution forth against him for debt, who yet for recusancy was never indebted. Padley may be doubted much to be a house of evil resort, and therefore, my Lord, there will be no good redress there (in our simple opinions) in those matters, unless that some may be resident there that will be conformable; and some preacher placed amongst us, here in the Peake, to teach the people better.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 126.)

In answer to Mr. LEAKE'S letter, unsigned, Feb. 3rd, 1587.

My Lord commendeth your forwardness in this her Majesty's service, and hath commanded me to signify thus much unto you in part of answer to your letters. That by how much thinking that the Lady Foljamb is suspected to do most hurt in those parts, by so much the more his Lordship willingly would have her committed.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 123.)

JOHN HARPUR

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. Feb. 4th. 1587.

COMING early to Mickleover, I found Mr. Danyer in his bed; unto whom after I had declared the cause of my coming, by warrant from your good Lordship, he said that he was not any recusant, and produced the vicar, and some of his neighbours, for testimony thereof: nevertheless I would not therewith be satisfied, until he and his wife went with me to the church, and there in my sight, they both heard service, and joined with us in prayer for her Majesty. Thence I rode to Mr. Powtrell's house, and at our coming thither we found all the doors locked; and, after we had knocked, presently Mr. Powtrell himself came to the door, and opened it; of whom I asked the cause why he so guarded his house; who answered that there was suits betwixt Mr. Thomas Markham and him to the value of £10,000, and that for fear of process which might much endanger his title he so did, and had done a good space. And then I shewed him that I had warrant from your good Lordship, to make search in his house, and so shewed him your hand and seal, whereunto he willingly yielded. Mrs. Powtrell, her gentlewoman, and two of her servants, did ride away over night, but to what place her husband could not tell. And so passing on to Sawley, we found Mrs. Edmundson also from home, and, as her daughter said, gone to her brother, in Rutlandshire, who was

sick, and therefore her return uncertain ; albeit I suspect that because Mr. Manners and Mr. Leake began their searches a day before I received your honour's letters, that thereby they had warning given them by some of their own faction. For William Brownlow, I did not think good to go to him, for that I know his absence from the church is not for recusancy, but for fear of executions for debt ; nevertheless I shall be ready to deal further with him, the rest, and any others, as by your Lordship's further direction by this bearer I shall be commanded.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 133.)

WILLIAM KNYVETON AND THOMAS KNYVETON
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. Feb. 7th, 1587.

WE have made first secret enquiry, and then search for seminaries, and other Papist recusants, as well resiants as lurkers, within the hundred of Appletree. Constance, the wife of John Sherwin, of Roddesley, one that hath been a Papist and recusant, now offereth to go to the church, hear service and sermons, and become a new woman ; that, because your Honour's commandment was specially to commit her, we have so done, to the gaol ; and, as for old John Sherwin, her husband, he keeps his bed and house continually, is ninety-two years old, blind and impotent, in that case as we dare not, for doubt of his sudden death thereby commit him to gaol, neither yet remove his body out of his house, and if his wife be from him any time, it is thought he cannot live ; of which two

persons we beseech your honour for these causes to have pity.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 121.)

SIR GODFREY FOLJAMBE
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. Feb. 16, 1587.

HAVING received your Honour's letters, directed unto me and my cousin Leake, for the apprehension and committing of divers Papists recusants mentioned in the same letters, I have accordingly apprehended the Lady Constance Foljamb, my grandmother, and now have her in my custody ; whom, by God's help, I shall safely keep, and have forthcoming, when she shall be called for by your good Lordship, or any other that shall be in such behalf by her Highness authorized or appointed.

No. CCXXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 284)

THE EARL OF LEICESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. 1588.

My dear good Lord,

I CANNOT sufficiently imagine how to render you thanks enough for your loving and honourable care of me, but it doth me so much good to hear often from you, and specially in this so noble and kind manner, as I can no way express it but only with so just and so an assured good-will as never to fail you whilst I live. And now, my good Lord, I must most earnestly entreat you not to think me forgetful that I have not written to you of late ; the true cause I trust you hear and conceive, which is

Indeed the continual toil and business I have been
n since my coming to this camp ;* but now, God
e thanked, the most difficulties are past which
ay most upon my hand, and our gracious Ma-
esty hath been here with me to see her camp
nd people, which so inflamed the hearts of her
good subjects, as I think the weakest person
amongst them is able to match the proudest Spa-
iard that dares land in England. But God hath
also fought mightily for her Majesty, and I trust
they be too much daunted to follow their pretend-
ed enterprise. My Lord, this gentleman hath seen
our camp, and a fair shew I made my Lord Tre-
asurer, who came from London to see us. He
shall tell you how willing and well-furnished men
here be ; and, he being now very full of business,
I will take leave and commit my dearest good
Lord and friend to the Almighty.

From the Camp, this 15th of August.

Ever your Lordship's most assured,

R. LEICESTER.

No. CCXXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 389.)

THE EARLS OF SHREWSBURY AND DERBY TO LORD
BURGHLEY AND SIR CHRISTOPHER HATTON.

Our very good Lords,

BEING here together at this point, and under-
standing of the death of our noble friend, the Earl

* The camp at Tilbury.—Leicester died of a fever, upon the road to his seat at Kenilworth, exactly three weeks after he wrote this letter.—See the next, written the day after his death.

of Leicester, we have written to her Majesty, signifying thereby as well the sorrow we conceive for such a loss, as (instead of the best comfort which we can give in this extremity) to require that our service may be employed wherein it may stand with her Highness's good liking. And, therefore, as we honour and love you, and rest persuaded that her Majesty will rather hear your own lively words then our written letters, so we hope that by your means she will be better comforted, this hap sooner forgotten, and our faithful services more manifested ; which are, and shall be, with all our whole powers, lives, and livings, ready with the readiest to defend her Majesty, and this her realm, whensoever we shall be called. And thus, as partakers of grief with all those which lament so great a loss, we commend your good Lordships to the Almighty.

Sheffield Lodge, the 6th of September, 1588.

Your good Lordships' assured loving friends,

G. SHREWSBURY. H. DERBY.

*To the right honourable our very good Lords
the Lord Chancellor and Lord Treasurer of
England.*

No. CCXXIV.

(Cecil Papers.)

RICHARD DOUGLAS TO ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS.

I HAVE deferred to write to your Lordship this long time, partly because such as I was commanded to write and promised was not kept, being promised the one day, and forgotten, at least refused the

next, partly seeing the King commits all things to the Chancellor, I thought it better to be beside the Chancellor, and so make moyens and intelligences to Mr. Richard,* than by open dealing to be from his company. I have often been in talk with him touching removing of particulars from amongst how, and in end has had him more toward than at the beginning; and I think this gentleman, Sir Robert Sidney,† if he had not by this unfortunate accident of his uncle's death been so suddenly called away, should have brought it by the King's help to any good point. Your last answer I had of him was, that when he had seen self-evident proof of your good-will (as he had seen and perceived how earnest you were to seek his disgrace, as well by your letters direct to his Majesty, as by speeches issued forth to sundry) then should he be most willing to forget all by-gones. Wherefore, in my opinion, it shall be best done, seeing whatsoever you write, the King does he communicate with him, to let alone these private nips and indirect language against him; and now, seeing by the death of my Lord of Leicester, matters are as they were of now to begin, plainly to set down to him some good advice for the furtherance of his Majesty's service in that country, and course into that while you will unfandly proceed

* Probably meaning Maitland, who had been lately appointed chancellor, and is mentioned as such immediately before.

† Second son of Sir Henry Sidney, the late Deputy of Ireland, by a sister of the Earl of Leicester's. He will be mentioned in a subsequent note.

with him. Or, if you will not directly write to himself at the first, your Lordship may write to me any letter, testifying your inclination from time to time, together with your advice how matters shall be handled in times coming, to be shown to him, and likewise to his Majesty, whereupon I hope to send you his answer, and so begin farther friendship.

So, remitting to your own narration the particular, being weary after my journey, I will take my leave; praying God to send your Lordship long life, with increase of felicity.

From Spote, this 11th of September, 1588.

Your Lordship's most loving and obedient
nephew, to be commanded,

R. DOUGLAS.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord and
uncle, my Lord Ambassador, resident for his
Majesty's affairs in England.*

No. CCXXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 395.)

SIR GEORGE HENEAGE
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My duty to your good Lordship remembered, it may please you to be advertised that my professed enemy the Earl of Lincoln, who, by unbridled malice goeth about to touch me in living and credit, whereby I am not only forced to exhibit a bill against him into the Star chamber, of supportation,

maintenance, and champarty,* but also to seek further reformation by my Lordship of her Majesty's most honourable Privy Council. So it is, my very good Lord, that at my being in the country, we met for her Majesty's service at the sitting for a subsidy, where he sought by all means to discredit and deface me, and to procure me as many enemies he possibly could ; whereupon he took his nephew, Sir Edward Dymock, of the one side of him, and Sir John Mounson of the other, both being puny knights to me ; which neither I nor some other of my friends take in good part, being presumptuously and maliciously taken in hand. Wherefore I have been both with Mr. Garter, Mr. Clarencieux, and other heralds, for reformation, who have advised me to appeal to your Honour herein, being Lord Marshal of England ; and for that your Honour is absent yours elf, my humble suit to you is that it might please you either to direct and order the matter yourself, or else to give your authority either to my Lord Treasurer, or some other that you shall make choice of, for I am not only marshalled in the knight's roll before them, but likewise in all other commissions that are directed from her Majesty for any service. And in this doing I shall not only have cause to pray for the preservation of yonr Honour, long to

* Champarty, an ancient law term, signifying the assistance or support of another man's law-suit by an indifferent person, upon condition that the latter shall have a share of the property when it is recovered. It is derived from the French, *champ*, and *parti*. This practice was forbidden by a very early statute.

endure, but also rest ready at your commandment during life. Thus committing your Honour to the tuition of the Almighty, who preserve you with long life and health to his pleasure.

From Charing Cross, January 4, 1588.

Your Honour's ever at commandment

GEORGE HENEAGE.

To the right honourable my very good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury, Lord High Marshal of England, give these.

No. CCXXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 33.)

WILLIAM FLEETWOOD TO THE EARL OF DERBY.

Right honourable and my singular good Lord, I do think verily that your Lordship shall receive from our Chancellor the news of the concourse of things in this troublesome world most certainly, for he told me that he would certify your Honour thereof himself; nevertheless what hath passed of late in France, at the Parliament holden at Caen in Normandy, hereinclosed I do send unto your good Lordship. It came forth even this present New Year's Day in the morning. The commission for causes ecclesiastical is renewed, and yesterday was published at Lambeth in the forenoon. All the Commissioners dined with my Lord his Grace. The Commissioners newly put in are my Lord of Bristol (Doctor Fletcher) my Lord Cobham, my Lord of Buckhurst, Mr. Wolley, Mr. Fortescue, my Lord Wray, my Lord Manwood, the Master of the

Rolls, Doctor Bancroft,* and one or two more. There are in commission now no more alive, from the beginning unto this day, but only Mr. Dean of Powlis† and myself. There are also in commission Mr. Attorney, Mr. Solicitor, Mr. Dean of Westminster,‡ and divers other doctors of the civil law. Before Christmas Mr. Doctor Dale and Mr. Doctor Drury§ were buried. Upon St. Stephen's day Mr. Robert Hopton, sometime Knight Marshall, was laid in his grave. Upon Monday last Mr. Doctor Hamond was delivered to the earth in like manner. My Lord of Bristol shall be made the Queen's Almoner.

I am sure your Lordship will be glad of the well doing of my grandfather William Fleetwood's off-

* Richard Fletcher, Bishop of Bristol, afterwards translated to London—William Brook, Lord Cobham, and Warden of the Cinque Ports—Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, of whom elsewhere—John Wolley, a Privy Counsellor, and Latin Secretary—Sir John Fortescue, Master of the Great Wardrobe, afterwards Chancellor of the Exchequer—Sir Christopher Wray, Chief Justice of the King's Bench—Sir Roger Manwood, Chief Baron of the Exchequer—Sir Gilbert Gerrard, Master of the Rolls, late Attorney General—Richard Bancroft, afterwards Bishop of London, and at last of Canterbury.

† Alexander Nowell, who died Dean of St. Paul's in 1601, having held that preferment more than forty years.

‡ Sir John Popham, Attorney General, afterwards Chief Justice—Sir Thomas Egerton, who succeeded Puckering as Lord Keeper, and was created Baron Ellesmere—Gabriel Goodman, appointed Dean of Westminster in 1561, and died in that office in 1601.

§ Valentine Dale, Dean of Wells, and a Master of the Requests, a person of great wisdom and integrity, who had been employed in foreign affairs of the highest importance. He died November 17, preceding the date of this letter—William Drury, L.L.D. Commissary of the Prerogative Court of Canterbury.

spring, who was an old servant, while he lived, of your good Lordship's most noble progenitors the Earl's of Derby. It is so that my uncle Thomas Fleetwood, amongst divers children, left behind him atdecease (near 28 years now past) two young daughters of tender age named Bridget and Joyce. Upon Tuesday last they were both married ; Bridget unto Mr. Secretary Smith's nephew and heir, and Joyce unto Sir Edward Osborne's son and heir, whose name is Henett Osborne.

There is great and diligent fining of gold in the Tower. It is said that it was sent in by Sir Martin Furbisher, but I am sure divers poor mariners have brought their shares into the Tower, expecting some speedy return thereof. There is great quantity of sugar come from my Lord of Cumberland, but what is become of his Lordship we cannot learn. It is reported that his Lordship is in Ireland ; I pray God to send him safely home again into England. All the Lords of the Council keep at Richmond this Christmas time. The Thames hath been so frozen that all that went or came to or from the Court passed over London Bridge. The gentlemen of Norfolk and Suffolk were commanded to depart from London before Christmas, and to repair to their countries, and there to keep hospitality amongst their neighbours. Here, in and about London, are nightly sundry robberies and burglaries committed. There were five Irishmen, being footmen, lately apprehended for robbing of a pack horse upon St. James's Cause-way ; they took £ 300, &c.

There is a new Bishop of Oxford, called Doctor Underhill. The chief of the lands thereof are to be given unto the Earl of Essex ; some part likewise is sold. I suppose the Bishoprick of Bristol is to go in like sort. Thus, troubling your Lordship with trifles, fearing that I am become over tedious, I commit your Lordship unto the tuition of the Almighty.

This New Year's Day, 1589.

Your good Lordship's most humbly bounden.

W. FLEETWOOD,* Recorder.

*To the right honourable and my singular good
Lord the Earl of Derby be these delivered.*

* This gentleman was a natural son, as appears by a mark of distinction in his arms, of Robert Fleetwood, a younger son of that ancient family of Fleetwood which came from Lancashire into the county of Stafford early in the 16th century. He was educated in the university of Oxford, which he quitted without taking a degree, and went to study the law in the Middle Temple, where he soon acquired a considerable reputation as a sound lawyer and a brilliant pleader. He obtained the office of Recorder about 1570 ; was appointed Serjeant at Law soon after, and in 1592 Queen's Serjeant. His sedulous attention to the interests of the city made him very popular among the Londoners. Stow records some instances of his diligence in their service, particularly a speech made by him in 1583 against the increase of buildings. A catalogue of his professional writings is preserved by Wood, who informs us that he was "a learned man and a good antiquary, but of a marvellous merry and pleasant conceit," and that he lived in a house, built by himself, in Noble street, within Aldersgate Ward. He married Marian, daughter of John Barley, of Kingsey in Buckinghamshire, and had by her six sons. Sir William, who settled at Missenden, in that county ; Sir Thomas, who became Attorney General to Henry Prince of Wales ; Edward, James, Robert, and Francis ; and two daughters ; Elizabeth, married to Sir Thomas Chaloner, of Steeple Claydon in Bucks ; and Cordelia, to Sir David Foulis, of Ingleby in Yorshire, Knight and Baronet. Mr. Fleetwood died February 28, 1594, and was buried at Missenden.

No. CCXXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 425.)

WILLIAM BAILEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My humble duty remembered, may it please your Honour, that now, being at Plymouth, our action* hitherto proceeding with so many crosses as it hath done, yet our hope ever was until this instant that it would still have had better success; but now, Right Honourable, for aught that I can gather by any means, there is great doubt how we shall be able to proceed; for, first, the Hollanders have hitherto utterly deceived us both of victuals, horses, and munitions, and generally of whatsoever else they promised, howbeit God had sufficiently provided us of shipping for transporting of our army, by means of 70 sail of Easterlings that we met at sea, the most of them being bound for the coast of Spain, but whether they will prove lawful prize or no I cannot certify your Honour as yet; nevertheless they will do us great service, if it may please God that we do proceed, which generally amongst us standeth very doubtful, and, especially, the rather for that it is given out that her Majesty's favour, by means of the Earl of Essex's departure,†

* The projected invasion of Spain and Portugal by Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Norris, for which purpose the fleet sailed from Plymouth soon after the date of this letter. For a full account of the events of this expedition, which was prosecuted chiefly at the expense of those commanders, and some other private persons, see following letters.

† He had withdrawn himself privately from the Court, without having asked the Queen's permission, and, fearing to join the forces before their departure, lest he should be countermanded, determined with his usual ardour, to put to sea in a small bark,

is withdrawn in such sort from the action : as also our so long living here, expecting the coming of the Hollanders, hath caused us to spend our store so far that I can hardly see how there can be supply made for so great an army with so weak purses as I fear are amongst us ; and this I dare assure you, that if all the provisions that we have were equally distributed amongst us, it would not serve above one month at the uttermost.

The Earl of Huntingdon's coming hither, for the staying of the Earl of Essex's passage, hath wonderfully daunted all the whole army ; but he is at sea ; but for what place, or whither he is bound, there is none, so far as I can learn, can tell ; nevertheless we are encouraged by our Generals that we shall away with the next wind that will serve. All their proceedings are kept very secret from us, so that I humbly beseech your Honour to pardon me that I write not in particular to your Honour of our proceedings herein, as being loth to trouble your Honour with any thing but such as I know to be true. The army is supposed to be, for the land service, at the least twenty thousand strong. The navy contains two hundred sail, or near thereabouts. I am appointed by the Generals and Council to be Captain of a ship of Lynn, called the Mary German, a very good bark in every respect, if she were well appointed with victuals and munitions,

and wait for their passing. He accordingly joined them on their way from Spain to Portugal. It appears here that this young nobleman's popularity, as well as his favour with Elizabeth, was already at a great height. He was now in his 22nd year.

such as were fit for her, but both I and almost all the rest want more than we have as yet; how we shall have it supplied God knoweth. Even so, my very good Lord, resting your Honour's poor beadman, I most humbly take my leave, beseeching the Lord ever to preserve you and yours in health and honour.

Plymouth Sound, April 7, 1589.
Your Honour's most humble servant during life,
WILLIAM BAILEY.

To the right honourable the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of England, &c.

No. CCXXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 439.)

RICHARD BAGOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable,

It may please your Lordship to be advertised, that on Saturday last I received a privy seal, directed first to Joseph Jollye* of Leek, and now to Joseph his son, who is a great deal worse able to perform it than the father, for, as I understand, he hath suits in the law, and is gone to London at this present on foot, and so did the last term, for want of a gelding to ride on; and, truly, my good Lord, he that wanteth ability to buy a nag to follow his own causes in law, pity it were to charge him with the

* Or Jolliffe, from whom the present family of that name is descended. This letter, selected from many on the same subject, throws some light on the mode of collecting money by the obsolete ways of loan, privy seal, &c. The relief of the poor man at the expense of the miser is a curious stroke of arbitrary equity, which could only be practised under an absolute monarchy.

loan of any money to her Majesty. I am informed that the father, Joseph Jollye, hath given most part of his substance to his younger son, Thomas Jollye, who may better lend it, with the aid of the father ; and besides, there is one Reynold Devill, a man of great wealth, without wiff or charge, a usurer by occupation, and worth £1000. He will never do good in his country : it were a charitable deed for your Lordship to impose it upon him : he dwelleth with his brother, John Devill, in Leek aforesaid.

Concerning the loan money, I have sent up £1000, which I think is paid into the Exchequer, much about this present first day of the term : £200 is promised more to be paid me there ; and those whose names I send your Lordship herein-closed neither come nor send me their money, though I have requested them by my letters to them directed the 13th of March last ; I hope some of them will pay it to London. And so, with remembrance of my humble duty, do pray to the Almighty God to send you long life in all happiness.

At Blithfield, this 16th day of April, 1589.

Your Honour's at commandment,

RICHARD BAGOT.*

*To the right honourable my very good Lord the
Earl of Shrewsbury, her Majesty's Lieute-
nant of the Counties of Stafford, Derby,
and Nottingham.*

* Richard Bagot, of Blithfield in Staffordshire, Esquire, an ancestor of the present Lord Bagot. He died Feb. 2nd, 1596. See the late accurate Supplement to Collins's Peerage for a further account of him.

No. CCXXIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 299.)

THE EARL OF DERBY
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My good Lord and dearest friend,
I AM to give your Lordship my most hearty thanks
for your most honourable letters, and free consent
for the loan of the money which you did write to
your servant Heron to have provided for me
amongst the Halifax men, which by no means could
be provided for; I have, therefore, sent my ser-
vant Arthur Genneson, this bearer, with my bill
for the repayment of the said sum, herinclosed, at
the end of six months; desiring your Lordship, it
may be delivered to his hands, wherein your Lord-
ship shall please me very much; for you are my
surest anchor hold of all the friends I have in the
world, whose long life and health I wish, and pray
to God for as mine own.

I have sent your Lordship hereinclsoed the true
copy* of Sir John Norris and Sir Francis Drake
their letters to my Lords of the Council, whereby
your Lordship shall perceive how they have pros-
pered very happily in their first enterprise. There
is nothing as yet understood what is become of my
Lord of Essex, who hath taken with him a ship of
th Queen's, called the Swiftsure, with some other
pinnaces, and divers gentlemen of account which
should have been in the English navy, whose
names I have sent your Lordship hereinclsoed.

* See the next letter.

Sir George Cary* goeth presently Ambassador to the Scottish King. The French King and the King of Navarre are at a good accord together, and the Duke de Main, and the Duke d'Aumale, with the rest of the lieges, have lost five thousand men in a late conflict with the King of Navarre. There be letters written into England, but as yet not confirmed, that the Duke of Parma should be poisoned at the Spa.

Cannon Row, my house, this 21st of May, 1589.
Your Lorship's assured loving cousin, and
faithful friend ever to use,

H. DERBY.†

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
and cousin the Earl of Shrewsbury, one of
her Majesty's most honourable Privy Council,
and Knight of the noble order, haste these.*

No. CCXXX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 3.)

SIR FRANCIS DRAKE AND SIR JOHN NORRIS
TO THE PRIVY COUNCIL.

May it please your Lordships,
DESIRING to satisfy her Majesty and your Honours in our fervent desire to accomplish our duties by all means possible, we departed from Canshan Bay on Friday the 17th of April, hoping that if the wind were contrary it would come fair

* Son and heir to Lord Hunsdon.—See a full account of him in papers of 1599.

† Henry Stanley, fourth Earl of Derby and Knight of the Garter. This nobleman was employed in several embassies of ceremony but never held any high office of the state. He died in 1594.

ere long, and that lying in the main sea, out of the harbour, we might be in more readiness to take the next prosperous wind, which it pleased God to send us on Sunday following, about eight o'clock in the morning, and so continued a very great gale until the Wednesday at four o'clock in the afternoon, at which time we made first land with the Cape of Ortegall ; but the weather being misty on the land, and we not being able by day to rejoin the Groine, for we could bear no further eastward, we lay at Hull all that night. The next day, before morning, we set sail, but, by reason of a sudden calm, we could not come to anchor in the Groine before three o'clock in the afternoon, in the open view and danger both of the castle, and the rest of the forts of the town ; which notwithstanding, (forasmuch as we saw two gallies, and certain ships at anchor, under the succour of the castle, of which one was of a very great burthen, called the galleon St. John, wherein went the Admiral Ricaldes in the last year's expedition for England, and was now put in readiness with the rest to be employed, as we are credibly informed with many others which daily they did expect to arrive here from St. Andrew's, and other parts, about the end of this month, and soldiers upon pain of death commanded to embark accordingly, to make a new invasion on some of her Majesty's dominions ; and forasmuch as we were likewise informed that a great provision of all sorts of munition and victuals was there in readiness for the intended journey) because this import-

ant service could not otherwise be effected, we presently landed within the space of three hours, about seven thousand men; with which, had not the rain and stormy weather letted, we meant that night to have attempted the taking of the base town, which is strong by reason of the seat thereof, and a wall with a dike which encloseth it from sea to sea, and well defended with certain companies of old soldiers left upon the last year's return of the fleet under the conduct of Don Juan de Luna, (a captain of good parentage and experience, and employed last year as captain under the said Ricaldes in the galleon) and succoured by great shot from the higher town, forts, and castle, and from the ships, wherein the enemy had planted much ordinance. We lodged that night within musket shot of the walls, and determined the next night after it should be assailed by *escalade* and by water with boats, ; which was well performed of all parties accordingly, and within less than an hour the town was won, with loss of five hundred Spaniards, or thereabouts, and of our men but twenty. Divers prisoners were taken, to the number of eighty, whereof three or four are of some account ; namely, the abovesaid Don Juan de Luna, other two gentlemen, his companions, and Juan de Vera, the King's commissary for musters ; whom we purpose to exchange for English in the gallies, or elsewhere according as we shall see cause. Immediately after the town thus taken, the enemy set the great galleon on fire, and we possessed the rest of the ships, but the gallies escaped the night before.

In this town, and in the country adjoining, there was great provision of wine, which by estimation cannot be less than six thousand pipes at the least, reserved, spent, and spoiled ; there was likewise store of rusk, biscuit, powdered beef, and dry fish, casks, cables, and great plenty of other provisions, which hath much relieved the soldiers, and spared our store aboard : there is reserved, whole and unbroken, 150 brass pieces, and a ship load of Spanish pikes, muskets, and callivers, which were very lately brought hither out of Barbary, and provided for the invasion.

We were no sooner arrived here but the wind came contrary, and so it continueth ; wherefore, finding by the examination of certain prisoners that there is yet good store of munition and victuals, and other provisions for the said invasion, remaining in the magazine in the higher town, rather then to lose time, and to spend our own, we have daily sent some of our companies in foraging, some ten or twelve leagues into the country, and with the rest we besieged the higher town ; and, after four days battery with two demi-canons and two culverings, with great difficulty a little breach was made, whereat, and at another which was made with a mine, which threw up a round tower near adjoining, an assault was attempted ; but the gentlemen and leaders very suddenly and valiantly mounting on the top of the breach, some part of the walls not then fallen overthrew those that went upon it, and with the fall buried such as were at the foot of it ; which unfortunate and unlooked for

accident was the cause the town hath not been entered and taken, so much were the soldiers ex-animated thereat. The shipping and a good part of the provision destroyed, and being loath to hazard any more men for that town, (having already lost Mr. Spencer, Lieutenant of the Ordinance, and divers gunners and soldiers slain and hurt during the siege) and because there is little left for our further relief in these parts, and considering that this is no principal cause of our employment, we think it expedient the next fair wind to bear towards the coast of Portugal, where we understand the better part of the King's fleet to be preparing, and in great readiness ; and, if it shall please God to bless us with any good success, and shall receive such supplies out of England as are most necessary, we purpose to return to St. Andrews, where we find by experience we shall not be able to annoy any shipping but by taking the town first, as we alleged to some of your Lordships before our departure.

In this town is the Marquis of Cerralvo, being Governor General thereof, and of the whole kingdom of Galicia, whereof this is the chief state of the whole province. There are in the high town, besides seven companies of ordinary garrison, certothers, lately sent thither to be embarked in the fleet. The enemy hath sundry times offered himself in troops of two or three thousand, and being sometimes met and skirmished with, they will not abide, but fly with loss of store of their men. The records and instruments of the whole province are burnt and spoiled. There is such notable

spoil made in the base town, and all the country about by the space of twelve miles, that we think seldom hath been heard the like, and hath, no doubt, greatly hindered the enemy's preparations. If the merchants had been suffered to come hither with victuals for succour and relief, they might have returned laden with spoil, to their great benefit; wherefore we pray your Lordships if you shall so think it fit, that they may pass hereafter with such victuals, and other provision, as may be fit for the army.

At our arrival we wanted about thirty of our ships, with as many companies of our soldiers, whereof ten are come to us since our being here the rest, as we think, are by weather beaten back into England; whereof we have great want, and do pray your Lordships to cause their speedy repair unto us, and that the victuals appointed to be sent after for a supply may be hastened away, and directed to come to the Burlings, or the Rock, for we shall have great need thereof very shortly. The names of the companies and ships missing are in the schedule herewith sent. In discharge of our duties we are humbly to beseech your Lordship to cause such cannons, powder, gunners, soldiers, and other provisions desired, to be sent unto us with all possible expedition; which if it be denied, we protest unto your Lordships, we shall not be able to perform the service expected. And for as much as both by the sword, sickness, and other casualties, our men do daily decrease, we are also to pray your Lordships that twenty companies of the old soldiers of Flanders may like-

wise be sent unto us ; of which wants if we may be in time supplied by the help of God, we doubt not to do her Majesty that service as shall give her just cause to think her charges very well employed.

Touching the Earl of Essex, and what diligence we have used in accomplishing her Majesty's and your Lordships' commandment, we refer to the report of Sir William Knowles and Mr. Darcy, who have been made acquainted with all our proceedings in that behalf.

Even as this letter was almost ended, certain companies of the Flemings, being sent abroad a foraging, brought in a prisoner, who upon his life assured us that there were 15,000 soldiers assembled, and encamped very strongly at Puentes de Burgos, about five English miles from us, under the conduct and the commandment of the Earls of Altamira, and Andrada ; whereupon, on Tuesday the 6th of this present, we marched towards them with 7000 soldiers, leaving the rest for the guard and siege of the town ; and encountering with them, they continued fight the space of three quarters of an hour, and then we forced them to retire to the foot of a bridge whereon not above three could march in rank, and was above ten score in length ; whence, although they were there defended by some fortifications, and had the benefit and succour of certain houses and other places adjoining, they were followed with our shot and pikes with such courage and fierceness as, after some few volleys on both sides, they entered the

bridge, and were in the middle with the push of the pike forced to make retreat into their trenches by the further foot of the bridge, where they encamped ; which, also, being pursued, they forsook, and betook themselves to flight, abandoning their weapons, bag and baggage, and lost above 1000 in skirmish or pursuit. Had we had either horse on land, or some companies of Irish Kernes to have pursued them, there had none of them escaped, which cannot but be a notable dishonour to the King, and, in our opinions no small furtherance to the service intended. We lost not above two common soldiers, and one of the corporals of the field ; Sir Edward Norris, who led the vanguard, grievedly hurt with a blow on the head, and Captain Fulford shot in the arm ; Captain George shot in the left eye ; Captain Hinder wounded in three places of the head ; but no danger of life in any of them.

Thus it hath pleased God to give her Majesty the victory, which we have great hope to pursue elsewhere with like success, if we may be succoured with such necessaries as are needful ; if not, we can but do our endeavours, and leave the rest to the consideration of your Lordships, whom we humbly leave to the protection of the Almighty.

From the Groine, the 7th of May, 1589.

Your Lordship's humbly at commandment,

JOHN NORRIS. FRANCIS DRAKE.

*To the right honourable the Lords and others
of her Majesty's most honourable Privy
Council.*

No. CCXXXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. f. 9.)

LORD TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My bounden duty most humbly remembered. I was in great good hope that before this I should have been able to have advertised your Lordship my desired success in my suit for the reversion of your Lordship's offices, but as yet by no means can I procure any absolute answer from her Majesty; I have good comfort therein delivered, both to myself and to those my good friends who deal therein for me, but yet I am delayed. This other day I received a letter from your Lordship, sent me by Mr. Heron; most humbly than your Lordship for it, and also for the letter which your Lordship sent to my Lord Treasurer, wherein it hath pleased you to move him earnestly on my behalf, according to my humble suit. He was at Tybalts when he received your Lordship's letter, but the next day he returned to the Court, where he told me of the same, and shewed it to me. It is in all points agreeable to my desire, and his Lordship thinketh it very fit to be shewed to her Majesty; which he hath ever since carried about him in his purse, with intent to read it unto her, and thereupon to deal again earnestly with her, as heretofore he hath done, but, (by reason of the low country causes, which have these two or three days occupied her Majesty and the council, having given audience to four or five of the states who are now here) he could not find a fit opportunity to shew your letter, but I hope very shortly he will. This day

her Majesty goeth to Barnellmes,* where she is purposed to tarry all day to-morrow, being Tuesday, and on Wednesday to return to Whitehall again, and thence not to remove till the term be ended, and then either to Richmond or Nonsuch. I am appointed, amongst the rest to attend on her Majesty at Barnellmes. I pray God my diligent attendance there may procure me a gracious answer in my suit at her return, for whilst she is there may be moved to her but matter of delight, and to content her, which is the only cause of her going thither. I think my Lord Treasurer will go to-night to Tybaltes, and return again either on Wednesday or Thursday morning.

There is no certain news come from our navy since Sir William Knowles returned, or within two or three days after his departure from them when they sailed from the Groin, that I have heard of. I hear her Majesty was nothing well pleased with the attempt that our Generals made on the high city of Groin ; she would have had them have contented themselves only with the spoil of the base town there, where they found good store of wines, oils, and other victuals, and not to have proceeded any further as they did, for they summoned the high town, and began an undermine, and won a bridge of great strength ; but, as I hear privately, not without the loss of as many of our men as of theirs, if not more, and without the gain of any thing, unless it were honour, and the ac-

* Probably to visit Sir Francis Walsingham, who had a house there.

quainting of our men with the use of their weapons. I have heard that our Generals have these instructions ; that in case they shall find any great faction, and numbers of people in Portugal who will join with our men for the restoring of Don Antonio to his former state there, when they shall know that he in person is there, and what forces of soldiers are sent with him, then, at their discretions, to land at such places as they shall think meet ; but, and if it fall out that there shall be found no greater factions, nor forces to assist them, than the Spaniards found here in England the last summer to assist them, then they shall go along the coast to make spoil of ships, galleys, or whatelse may annoy them, and so on to the islands of the Terceros, or else whither they shall then find greatest likelihood to light of any good booty, or to do any exploit without great peril of their own overthrow. Howbeit it is assuredly thought that either they will perform as honourable exploits as hath been attempted these many years, or else in such attempts will leave their lives. I beseech the Lord God to prosper them. It is now said for certain that the Earl of Essex is joined with our navy.

There was one this other day who told that he came from our navy, leaving it on the coast of Portugal, naming the place where he said he saw five or six of the Dutch ships which are with ours perish, and this he constantly told, and affirmed to my Lord Treasurer to be true ; but after, my Lord Treasurer perusing the last letters from our Gene-

rals, found by their date the untruth of the fellow's tale ; whereupon sent for him again, and made him confess that he had forged the same, and that he had not been from the coast of England since our ships went ; so the fellow is appointed to stand on the pillory, and after to be whipped, for forging of false rumours and news.

A great bruit there was that the Duke of Parma was dead ; but the truth, as I hear it, is that, finding himself very ill disposed in his body, he is gone to the Spa, and himself giveth out that he greatly suspecteth himself to have received some poison, either in some meat or drink. In France things go very well on the King's part. Sundry great overthrows have been given of late to the Duke of Mayenne's side by the forces of the King of Navarre. The Master of Gray hath taken his leave of her Majesty, and carrieth letters from her in his own recommendation to the King of Scots. That King hath showed a public disposition to show mercy on the Earl of Huntley, which is nothing well liked of by the greatest here, as I have heard.*

* The Earl of Huntley, and some other Scottish nobles, had lately commenced an infamous treaty with the Duke of Parma, by which they engaged for no less than to make the King of Spain master of Scotland, in order to facilitate his favourite scheme of invading England. Some letters which contained the fullest evidence of their treachery were intercepted in London on the 17th of February, by the vigilance of Elizabeth's ministers, and she immediately transmitted them to James, who seized the conspirators ; but, owing probably to that indolence of temper the effects of which this Prince's eulogists have generally ascribed to a profound policy, dismissed them after a very slight enquiry, without any punishment except a short confinement. Even Elizabeth, whose unjust demand that ill-fated country had so often been forced to submit to, now remonstrated in vain.

It is now in consultation whether we shall enter into commerce and traffic with the Venetians or not, which, as I hear, is offered unto us.

I know I trouble your Lordship too long with my tedious scribbling ; therefore most humbly on my knees I will beseech your Lordship's daily blessing, and ever pray to God Almighty to preserve your Lordship in most perfect health, honour, and long life.

At Mr. Boswell's house, May 26, 1589.

Your Lordship's most humble and obedient
loving son,

GILBERT TALBOT.

It is now greatly doubted that Sir Walter Mildmay will very hardly recover, being now in a consumption ;* he lieth at Hackney. I have had one of my daughters here with my wife's aunt, Mrs. Wingfield, a good while, to be cured of one of her legs which was put somewhat amiss by the nurse's setting her to go too soon ; now, I thank God, she is perfectly well and strong : and, doubting lest Mary, my eldest daughter, should have one of the points of her shoulders somewhat more out than the other, I have sent down Bessy to my Lady, and desired her to send down Molly in her room, that I may have her here behind me, to be helped as her sister is, if there be cause.

* He died five days after the date of this letter.

No. CCXXXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 11.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,
I HAVE forborn with my hand to salute your Lordship a great while, but not with my mind to have you in good remembrance, and to hold firm my former disposition to love or to serve you as earnestly, as any man of any degree in England ; but I doubt not of your Lordship's opinion thereof, neither yet that the causes of my silence of late time, beside many infirmities in my hand, are unknown to your Lordship, which surely my good Lord I cannot with any striving with my nature avoid, so but that many times both by day and night, I am assaulted therewith ; for truly, my good Lord, in such cases men's losses are more set by luck, than contentations when we had possession of things after lost.* But, my good Lord, I confess I do averse my interlacing these matters with others more apt for me to write of to your Lordship.

My Lord, of late I received your letters of request to further your honourable and natural suit to her Majesty for my Lord Talbot, your son, wherein I am as desirous as yourself, setting apart your natural emotions, to further him, for so truly he doth merit all the favours that I can show, in that or in any other, and as soon as I can have any opportunity I will follow it very earnestly. My

* This obscure passage alludes to the death of Lady Burghley, on the 4th of April preceding.

Lord, the state of the world is marvelously changed, when we true Englishmen have cause for our own quietness to wish good success to a French king, and a King of Scots ; and yet they both differ one from the other, in profession of religion ; but seeing both are enemies to our enemies, we have cause to join with them in their actions against our enemies ; and this is the work of God for our good, for which the Queen and us all, are most deeply bound to acknowledge his miraculous goodness, for no wit of man could otherwise have wrought it. At this time the French King's party, by the true subjects of his crown, both Catholic and Protestant, doth prosper in every place. Of late afore the town of Sentliss, near Paris, the Duke of Longueville, with the assistance of Monsieur la Noüe,* (the Duke a catholic, and la Noüe a protestant) have in a battle overthrown an army almost of 10,000 men, led by the Duke d'Aumale, who was to have had the town of Sentliss, after a siege, delivered to him, with a sum of 30,000 crowns, at 4 o'clock in the afternoon ; but before 2 o'clock his army was overthrown, and he the first that fled ; many taken prisoners ; many great persons slain, and all the footmen slain. About the same time, also, the King overthrew all the power of the Parisian army with the Duke de Mayenne,

* Henry Duke of Longueville, and Count of Neufchatel, Great Chamberlain of France ; descended from the famous bastard Count of Dunois, grandson to Charles V. —— Francis de la Noüe, called for his bravery *Bras de fer* ; a Huguenot, but universally respected by the Catholics. He was killed in Britany in 1591.

who fled, and is now by the King besieged in Mans. The Duke of Montpensier* hath also had many victories in Normandy and Britany, which countries now are for the most part reduced to the King's obedience. The like success hath the Duke Montmorency† in Languedoc against the great rebellious Papistical town of Toulouse : Boulogne is now also free of the siege that was attempted. Thus your Lordship seeth what success the French King hath by Catholics being good subjects against Papists, being rebels. In like manner the King of Navarre hath had many good successes in recovery of a number of rebellious towns, which he hath also rendered to the King ; with whom he hath been, and such entertainment betwixt them as both Catholic and Protestant have greatly rejoiced.

In the Low Country some good fortune may happen, in that the Duke of Parma and the King of Spain are not in terms of trust one to the other ; and yet I am not glad to hear that the Duke is said to be either sick or dead, and it is somewhat strange that I should be sorry for his death, for I fear a worse may take his place. In Scotland, the King may

* Francis de Bourbon, Duke of Montpensier, and Governor of Normandy. The translator of Sully erroneously ascribes these actions to Henry, the son and successor of this Prince, who was then but fifteen years old.

† Henry de Montmorency, one of the most powerful of the Huguenot party, third Duke of that family, and Governor of Languedoc, afterwards made Constable by Henry IV. He bore the first military character of his time, and was almost equally distinguished as a statesman, though we are told that he could neither write or read.

now have his will upon his Spanish confederated Papists, and yet I see that the secret friends of the two Earls, Huntley and Bothwell, labour the King to be remiss in his actions against them ; nevertheless I think they are about this time attainted of treason.

Thus, my Lord, I fear I have wearied your eyes with reading my evil handwriting ; sure I am that my hand is also wearied.

From a poor lodge near my house at Theobald's,
27th of May, 1589.

Your Lordship's always at command,
W. BURGHLEY.

The Queen is at Barn Elms, but this night I will attend on her at Westminster, for I am no man meet for feastings.

To the right honourable my very good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of England, and one of the Lords of her Majesty's Privy Council.

No. CCXXXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 456.)

SIR THOMAS FITZHERBERT
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Very good Lord,
With all humble duty I crave leave in lowly wise to open my griefs unto you. I suppose your Honour hath known me above fifty years, and my wife, that was daughter and heir unto Sir Arthur Eyre. I trust I have been dutiful unto my Lords your grandfather, your father and your Honour, and I have found your Honours all my good Lords, till

now of late your Lordship entering into the house of Padley found two seminaries there, all unknown unto my brother, as was confessed at their death, and is well approved since by good testimony ; since which time your Lordship also hath entered upon the house of Padley, and the demesnes thereof; seized all the goods of my brother's and mine that was in that house, amongst which I had certain evidences of a wood and meadow, under Levin House, called Faultcliffe, which, as I am informed, your Honour hath entered upon, and occupieth wholly to your use, though I have been possessed, and my wife's ancestors, thereof time out of mind. Very good Lord, these things are greater than my present poor estate can suffer, or in anywise bear, I paying her Majesty the statute of recusancy, being £260 by year, which is more than all my rents yearly rise unto. Loath I am to complain of your Honour any way, wherefore I complain me first unto your Lordship, hoping you will deal so nobly and charitable with me as I shall be restored to my house, lands, and goods, by your Honour, so as I shall be fully satisfied, and be able to pay her Majesty, and for ever bound to pray for your Lordship's life in all honour long to continue.*

From London, this 28th of May, 1589.

Your Lordship's daily orator.

* This letter, which gives us so remarkable an instance as well of the exorbitant power of the nobility as of the miserable situation of the Roman Catholics at that time, hath the following note on the back, in Henry Talbot's hand. "John Watson affirmed that he brought this letter from Sir Thomas Fitzherbert, which was received the 3rd of June." The latter probably durst not sign it, lest it should be produced in evidence against him.

No. CCXXXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 42.)

LORD BURGHLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

I HOPE this summer season hath set your Lordship at liberty of hand and foot, as presently it doth to me, though not able to go as others do ; and, for that my Lord your son is here a diligent attendant in Court, I doubt not but he doth advertise you of such occurrences as the Court yieldeth. The world is become of late very strange ; we Englismen now daily desire the prosperity of a King of France, and of a King of Scots ; we were wont to aid the subjects oppressed against both these Kings, now we are moved to aid both these kings against their rebelling subjects : and though these are contrary effects, yet on our part they proceed for our cause, for that we do is to weaken our enemies. The King of Scots wooeth the King of Denmark's daughter, but we could better like the match with the King of Navarre's sister.* My Lord, your son attendeth some good time to perfect his suit to the Queen's Majesty, who hath given good hope, but until she shall sign the book I dare not give assurance : but I will continue my endeavour as though the case were for my own. June 16, 1589.

Your Lordship's at command,

W. BURGHLEY.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of
England, and one of the Lords of her Ma-
jesty's most honourable Privy Council.*

* Catherine, afterwards married to Henry, Duke of Lorrain.

No. CCXXXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 75.)

LORD HOWARD

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. 1589.

My honoured good Lord,
HER Majesty doeth mean with her own hand to give you thanks, but she stayeth to make my Lord your son the carrier. In the mean time her Majesty hath willed me to give you her most hearty thanks, and say that she doth take it very kindly, and most graciously, the care that you should think of such a thing that she did so greatly want, and she commanded me to write to your Lordship, that in her life she never had any that she had a greater liking to. Her Majesty hath not yet ridden on him, but meaneth the next time she rideth to prove him. I am well assured that he will wonderfully please her ; for, my good Lord, the day of the remove, which was the 19th of this present, her Majesty commanded me to ride on him, and I assure your Lordship I could not give more commendations of him than he doth deserve.

As yet we do not hear anything from our army. Since Sir William Knowles came from the Groyne the wind has been very contrary, but now it is changed, and I hope shortly we shall hear, and your Lordship shall understand : I will be bold to advertise your Lordship when any thing shall happen worth the writing. The Duke of Parma, that was thought to be dead, is recovered, but very weak ; I think if he were gone we should have a worse in his place. I have received word, even as

I was writing from Sir Martin Forbisher, that by a ship come out of France, that the King of Navarre is with a great force within two leagues of Paris. The Duke of Montpensier is also come to besiege Rouen, and they be divided within the town, some for the king, and the other for the liege. The King is marching towards Paris, and is about Estampes, and thought by this to be joined with the King of Navarre.* And so, my good Lord, I commit you to the protection of the Almighty.

The Court at Nonsuch, the 21st of June.

Your Lordship's most assured to command,

C. HOWARD.†

*To the right honourable and my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Lord Marshal of
England, and one of her Majesty's most ho-
morable Privy Council.*

No. CCXXXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 22.)

Indorsed, "Minute of the Letter from SIR EDWARD NORREYS
To Mr. VICECHAMBERLAIN." 1589.

Sir,

I HOPE you will as well accept of my thanks for your letter from Spain as from Plymouth, since sooner I had no means to write. By Sir William

* Henry III. having temporized with all parties till he had brought himself to the brink of ruin, was now forced to unite firmly with the King of Navarre, and within a few weeks after, was stabbed in his chamber at St. Cloud, by James Clement, a monk, who was introduced under the pretence of delivering a letter to him.

† Charles Howard, second Lord Howard of Effingham, and Knight of the Garter, created Earl of Nottingham in 1596, which titles, having been held successively by his two sons, became ex-

Knowles your Honour hath understood of all tha
passed at the Groyne ; since which time it hath
pleased God to send great affliction of sicknes
upon us,* caused by the excessive store of wine
which our soldiers found in the Groyne ; which was
so much, and so dispersed every where, that it was
not possible by any means to keep the soldiers
from it.

It was thought fit, because we understood that
the King had placed strong garrisons in every
landing place near Lisbon, to land† at a place
called Penice, otherwise the young Rock : where
was made some offer to hinder our landing, but at
last they ran away, and most shamefully forsook
the castle ; which was very well furnished of all
things, especially of artillery, munition, and vic-
tuals, and itself impossible to have been taken.
There we thought fit to number our forces that we

tinct in 1681. This eminent person, who was equally famous for his bravery, magnificence, and strict honour, ended his unspotted life in 1624, at the age of eight-eight, having performed the most signal services to his country in the high post of Lord Admiral, which he held for thirty-two years. See more of him in the peerages, Art. E. of Effingham.

* Camden tells us that no less than 6000 men fell by sickness in this expedition ; and Captain Fenner, a naval officer who was present, and whose letter to Mr. Anthony Bacon is to be found in Doctor Birch's collection, says that of the 21,000 who went on this unfortunate enterprize, only 10,000 returned, and of the 1100 gentlemen of note who sailed 750 perished.

† In another letter (*misplaced in Vol. I. of the originals,*) which is copied nearly verbatim from this, Sir Edward Norris adds, "the Earl of Essex was the first that landed, who, by reason the billows were so great, waded to the shoulders to come ashore." A motive of envy probably inclined him to suppress this piece of information in the letter before us, which he knew would be immediately perused by the Queen.

could land, and found them not 6000 men ; yet with them my brother resolved to march to Lisbon by land, which was but twelve leagues, yet for heat, and weakness of our men, was compelled to make six days march of it. In that march the Spaniards did divers times shew themselves, but still ran away as soon as they were charged, still dislodging their camp as we came near them. And so my brother possessed himself of the west suburbs of Lisbon, which he held four days ; wherein he divers times beat the Spaniards, without loss of any men, except one day that some horse and foot, under colour of friends to the King, and crying vive Don Antonio,* were suffered to pass our guards, until they came under Colonel Brett's quarter, where, assaulting the guard, they killed almost forty men, but were suddenly forced to run away, with the loss of forty horse, and almost all the foot. There was Colonel Brett, after he had killed the chief commander of the Spaniards, and broken his pike, and most valiantly defended his men with his sword, killed with a musket shot. There did our soldiers find wonderful store of riches, in merchandize, and spices, and victuals, but for lack of carriage they were forced to leave all behind them.

After four days, my brother, seeing the walls

* Anthonio, called the Prior of Crato, a bastard son of Lewis Duke of Beja, of the ancient royal blood of Portugal. He had been elected King in the great struggle after the death of Cardinal Henry, in 1580, but was soon expelled by the Duke of Alva, and now joined this armament, with a few Portuguese soldiers, rather in malice to the Spaniards, his natural enemies, than with any serious hope of re-establishing himself on the throne. See former papers.

very high and strong (contrary to that which was told him) and no means to batter, his powder spent and no likelihood of being supplied by the fleet, and his men daily falling sick, without any hope from the Portugals, resolved to retire hither to Cascais, to the fleet; which he did without that the Spaniard did any thing seek to disturb, or fight with them. Within two days after, hearing that the Spaniards were assembled, eight thousand and four hundred horse, within two miles, he presently marched towards them to give them battle; but they presently, as soon as they had news that we began to march, dislodged, and retired to Lisbon. Now here do our victuals begin to fail, and our men fall daily sick; nor can the country serve us, so is it spoiled round about by the Spaniards; wherefore we shall be forced to depart, but whether our Generals will advertise, and I must leave it to their wisdoms. General Drake hath here taken sixty hulks, laden with corn and provision for ships. It is great hindrance to the King's preparations, but little good to us who cannot make bread of it. This castle, which is invincible, and well furnished with all things, did most cowardly yield after two culverin shots; which, if they had shot ten days, would not have made a breach as big as my head. Thus have I truly set down our journey.

No. CCXXXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 528.)

SIR FRANCIS WALSINGHAM
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

ALTHOUGH I had before the receipt of your Lordship's letter heard a report of the affray between Mr. Houghton, deceased, and the Baron of Walton, yet had I not so particular information thereof, as by your Lordship's letter I received ; I am sorry that such a disorder should happen in that country, and the rather for that the same is in the liberty of the Duchy. And where I find that your Lordship is very desirous to hear of the foreign occurrences, your Lordship shall therefore understand, that after the French King* had taken the town of Vendome, he went to Mans, which rendered itself to him by composition ; and thence repaired to Alencon, and Argentum, both which places he hath likewise won, and thereby clearly gained those parties to his obedience. Out of the Low Countries we hear that the King of Spain intendeth to bend all his forces that he hath there towards France, in assistance of those of the League ; and, to that end, hath made offer to them of Holland, and the rest of the provinces, of a very advantageous peace, whereby he may with the more roundness prosecute his enterprise in France. How it

* Henry IV. most deservedly called the Great, whom we have heretofore met with in these papers under the title of "the King of Navarre." He succeeded to the Throne of France after the assassination of Henry III. the last Prince of the family of Valois, August 3rd this year.

hath pleased God of late to bless our people in those countries with happy success against the said King's forces, your Lordship shall understand by the enclosed. Of late, certain of her Majesty's ships, being abroad in the Spanish seas, have taken some of the said King's Indian fleet ; but of them it chanced that the best did, in their coming home, and on this coast, sink ; valued to be worth one hundred or two thousand crowns. And so I humbly take my leave.

From London, the 14th of December, 1589.

Your Lordships to command,

FRANCIS WALSINGHAM.

No. CCXXXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 67.)

JOHN STANHOPE TO LORD TALBOT. 1589.

My Lord,

I MUST begin with thanks, and though it be all I have to pay you with at this present, yet I will owe you as much as if I had given you none at all, and be ready with the best service I can do you, to make you know how kindly I take your honourable remembrance of your poor friend for your Sherwood hind, which was baked, and used as well as might be ; and yet, as well as I love your Lordship you must not bereave my Lady of that is her due ; neither will I ever lessen any thing of that is her right, which is to be honoured and loved of all those who either know her worth, or have cause to make trial of her virtue ; and, were it not your Lordship might happily be jealous of my affection,

I would protest unto the world I know not a lady of more worth, nor one whose honourable favour I would sooner depend than on her constant disposition, so rarely found in her sex.

But, my Lord, let that rest for this time, and when I shall have told you all the news, I know you will think either the time very dead, or my intelligence very slender. The French King is at Caen ; my Lord Willughby,* with his troops, with him, and greatly esteemed of the King. He hath lately won divers towns in Normandy and Basse-Britany. The Duke of Parma is relapsed again, as they say, into his old state of sickness. The garrison of Bergen did a very good exploit on a convoy of Spaniards going from Antwerp. Our ships at sea have sped reasonably, for offending the enemy, but not enriched themselves by reason of some loss. The Earl of Cumberland is not heard of ; Sir Martin Forbisher at Plymouth ; but Sir Walter Raleigh's men have sped best of all. So, with my humble commendations to your Lordship and my Lady, I wish the increase of your honour and health.

This 22nd of December, Richmond.

Your Lordship's most humbly,
JOHN STANHOPE.†

* Perigrine Bertie, Lord Willughby, who had commanded in the Low Countries under Leicester, and was now sent to Henry's assistance, with 4000 men, and a present of £22,000,

† John Stanhope, of Harrington in Northamptonshire, third son of Sir Michael Stanhope, who was the common ancestor of the Earls of Chesterfield and Harrington, and of Earl Stanhope. He was at this time a gentleman of the Privy Chamber, and Mas-

My Lord, the Queen is so well as I assure your six or seven galliards in a morning, beside music and singing, is her ordinary exercise.

To the right honourable his very good Lord the Lord Talbot.

No. CCXXXIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 533.)

SIR GEORGE CHAWORTH
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

MAY it please your good Lordship to admit me an importunate suitor for the continuance of your Lordship's honourable favours towards my cousin Thomas Leake, in the trial of a great part of his inheritance, to be made at the next Derby assizes, which doth no less concern him than the much dismembering of his demesne at Hasland. I am the more bold with your Lordship herein, as well for that my said cousin found great good by your Lordship's most honourable dealings upon my former suit, at the impannelling of the jury* for

ter of the Posts, and in some favour with the Queen, who soon after knighted him, and raised him successively to the offices of Treasurer of the Chamber, and Vice-chamberlain of the Household. James continued him in these posts, and created him Baron Stanhope of Harrington ; but his only son, Charles, dying childless in 1677, the title became extinct. See more of him in the Peerage.

* This curious instance of the influence of a powerful individual over a court of justice will afford an apology for the insertion of a letter of so private a nature. It appears to have been usual too, for the Privy Council, and even the Monarch, to interfere on like occasions. See a letter in June, 1594, from the Council to the Judges then on the Northern circuit, directing them in the plainest terms to pack a jury for the purpose of acquitting a person indicted for a murder. See, too, No. LXIV. and LXVIII. of this reign.

the said trial, as for that this bearer, my godson and cousin german, hath married my said cousin Leake's sister, who yet standeth his heir apparent; and so may redound to my said godson's good, which I wish as much as any near kinsman and good friend can to one that bath not deserved the contrary. By your Lordship's yielding unto this my humble suit, your Honour shall give great cause, both unto me, and my said cousin and godson, (as in all duty I am most bounden) to be most ready, willing to do your good Lordship the best service we may; wherein if it shall any way please your good Lord to command my said cousin, I dare give your Honour my word for his assuredness, in all sincerity to do his best; and so, humbly commanding me and my service unto your good Lordship, I so take my leave.

At Annesley, this 7th of January, 1589.

Your Honour's humble at command,

GEORGE CHAWORTHE.*

*To the right honourable my singular good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Lord Lieutenant of
the Counties of Stafford, Derby and Not-
tingham.*

* Sir George Chaworth, of Annesley in Nottinghamshire, Knight, only son of Sir John Chaworth, of Annesley and Wiverton, by Mary, daughter of Sir William Paston. He died on the 4th of March following the date of this letter, leaving issue by his wife, Anne, daughter of Sir William Paston, nephew of the before-named Sir William, an only daughter, who married Sir William Cope, of Hanwell in Oxfordshire, and carried into her husband's family such parts of the estate as were not intailed on the male line. That of Annesley, with the mansion-house there, devolved on a cousin, Sir George, afterwards Viscount Chaworth, who will be mentioned in another place.

No. CCXL.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 544.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My noble good Lord,

EVEN as of late, when your Lordship was encumbered with your wonted enemy, I could not but participate of your pains without your privity, so now must you give me leave, as your friend, to be glad of your recovery, and to solicit our old friendship with a new remembrance. And albeit it may now go well with your Lordship which I wish from the bottom of my heart, yet can I not but report something unto you touching mine own estate. Truly, my good Lord, the winter season hath cast so many besides the accustomed afflictions upon my body, that I rest altogether, as yet, disabled either to stir abroad, or to do the least exercise which was permitted to be done by me the years past; but, seeing it to recount these griefs little avail- eth to the cure thereof, I will spare to make further mention of them at this instant, hoping that the spring once overshotten, I shall be able to take your part in setting the gout at defiance. And, for that I find warmth doth breed me some ease, supposing that the self-same things which are employed towards me that way cannot be hurtful to your Lordship, I have sent you a small rug by this bearer, to wrap about your legs at times convenient; which your Lordship must accept as I present it, and as though our country wools were much finer, and our workmen more curious; and, withal, your Lordship shall receive

a case of Hallomshire whittles,* being such fruits as my poor country affordeth with fame throughout this realm. Thus, commending me right heartily to your good Lordship, I leave you to the tuition of the Almighty, desiring at your best leisure to hear from yourself of your welfare.

From Handsworth,† the last of January, 1589.

Your good Lordship's assured friend,

G. SHREWSBURY.

I have sent your Lordship likewise a box of ointment, which doeth me some ease, though it work no great cure; and I use it in causing the same to be chafed with a man's hand upon the place grieved. If it do you the good which I could wish you, let me know so much, and henceforth I will not fail to send you thereof as you shall need for the receipt, at your pleasure.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
my Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of
England.*

* Hallomshire, an ancient district of Yorkshire, of which Sheffield, still famous for its cutlery, was the capital. Whittles were small knives—

“A Shefelde thwitel bare he in his hose.”

CHAUCER—*Reve's Tale.*

† Hansworth, or Hanesworth, a manor about four miles south of Sheffield, now belonging to the Duke of Norfolk. The Earls of Shrewsbury had a mansion-house there, of which no traces remain.

No. CCXLI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 37.)

—• TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right Honourable,

I HAVE received your letter of the last of January upon this fourth day. My Lord, our news of France are well amended. The Rutters, being three thousand, the Lance knights,† being six hundred, which were interrupted upon their journey in Lorren, are now entered France, and joined with Marshal D'Aumont,‡ being a leader of one of the King's armies. The King himself is risen from Honfleur,§ which he hath taken, with fifteen hundred horse, and hath made a long march upon the sudden as far as the town of Meulan,|| which was besieged by the Duke of Mayenne; and upon his coming the Duke of Mayenne retired, and left his artillery, and fain to take for his rescue, a town and a castle four leagues off, where the King hath followed him, and there hath beset him; and the rest of the King's forces are commanded presently to march towards Paris, from which we do expect good news, by the Grace of God.

My Lord, from Scotland we say there is a bark

* The signature hath been purposely cut out.

† Reyters, or Ruyters, and Lansquenets: German horse and foot which served in the royal army of France.

‡ John d'Aumont, Marshal of France, one of the few good Catholics who joined the King of Navarre's uncertain interest, upon principles of true patriotism, as soon as that Prince succeeded to the Throne. He was killed at the siege of Comper or Camper, near Rennes, in 1595, aged upwards of seventy.

§ Honfleur, a port town at the mouth of the Seine.

|| Meulan, near Paris.

I landed in Galway, in the west part of Scotland, with sixty Spaniards ; forty of them being musketeers, and sixteen of them are gentlemen. Among them is one Seyton, brother to the Lord Seyton ; one that I believe your Honour may remember a long servitor to the King of Spain. They bring with them a present to the King of good value, to congratulate his marriage. Many of them are appointed to practise with the people there, and have brought with them good store of treasure they suppose. The King being so long away is here much scanned over, and especially his being so great and in company with so many of the Princes of Germany ; there be some dispatched over to have an eye to him. The matter of the Duke of Parma his preparation waxeth very cold ; himself ill at ease again. The preparation of Spain every day discovered to be less and less ; so that all these matters rest upon the success of France, upon whom the eyes of the King of Spain are settled chiefly, and so we are somewhat colder here in our preparations.

I do learn amongst those who have trust with my Lady your wife, she doth purpose to spend the next summer at and about London ; my Lord, if you could find the means, she might bring all her train with her, young and old ; and in like case that they should not come down again to your country at all, I would think it the better for your Lordship. My Lord of Warwick is like to go. His offices are already near bestowed ; Grafton upon the Lord Chancellor ; Butlerage upon the

Lord of Buckhurst.* For the mastership of the
Ordnance, my Lord Gray and Sir John Parr
strive. So, most humbly praying to God to ble—
your Honour, and all your family, with his gracie—
I take my leave.

From London, this 4th of February, 1589.

Your Honour's most humble and faithful poor
friend at commandment,

*Give this to the right honourable the Earl of
Shrewsbury, Earl Marshal of England, and
one of her Majesty's most honourable Privy
Council.*

No. CXXLI1.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. G. fol. 552.)

THOMAS MARKHAM
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right Honourable, my singular good Lord,
At my last attendance on your Lordship at Hans-
worth, I was so bold to promise your Lordship to
send you a much more convenient house for your
Lordship's fine bird to live in than that she was in
when I was there, which by this bearer I trust I
have performed. It is of the best sort of building
in Crooked Lane;† strong, and well proportioned,
wholesomely provided for her seat and diet, and
with good provision, by the wires below, to keep

* The Stewardship of the honour of Grafton, in which Warwick had lately succeeded Essex.—The obsolete office of Grand Butler (*Magna Pincerna*) of England, called here *Butlerage*, was granted to Lord Buckhurst in December, 1590, with 100 marks fee.

† The information, trivial as it is, that Crooked Lane, still fa-
mous for "this sort of building," should have established its re-
putation at so early a date, induced me to insert this letter.

her feet cleanly, &c. On Thursday last, Mrs. Blanche Parry* departed ; blind she was here on earth, but I hope the joys in Heaven she shall see. Her Majesty, God be praised, is in health. My Lord Treasurer, by mean of some present grief, keepeth his chamber ; the gout and wind in his stomach is the cause. The rest of the Lords be in health, which God continue your good Lordship long to live herein ; and so, with my humble duty, I humbly take my leave.

From Westminster, the 17th of February, 1589.

Your Lordship's most bounden,

THOMAS MARKHAM.†

On Wednesday se'night, as I am sure your Lordship hath heard my Lord of Warwick had his

* Daughter of Henry Parry, of Newcourt in Herefordshire, and Chief Gentlewoman of the Privy Chamber, and Keeper of the Queen's jewels. She died Feb. 12, 1589-90, unmarried, and in the eighty-second year of her age ; was buried in St. Margaret's church, Westminster ; and left large donations to that city, and to the parishes of Bacton and Newton, in her native country, and other places.

† Thomas Markham, ancestor of the Ollerton branch of that ancient Nottinghamshire family. A manuscript in the College of Arms, of the beginning of the last century, denominates him "*Niger Murkham* ;" but the reason for that appellation is not known. He was the only son of Sir John Markham, of Cotham, by his third wife, Anne, daughter and co-heir of John Strelley, and relict of Sir Richard Stanhope, of Rampton. The Earl of Shrewsbury was distantly related to him, and, notwithstanding he had been on very ill terms with the father, who had dissipated most part of his great fortune, took the son under his protection, brought him to Court, and procured for him the place of Standard Bearer to the Queen's Band of Pensioners, the only public situation in which we find him. He married Mary, daughter of Sir Rice Griffin, of Dingley in Northamptonshire, and had issue, Sir Griffin, who was ruined by the part he took in Essex's insurrection ; Sir George, who succeeded to his father's property, and mar-

leg cut off;* since which time he hath amended, but not so fast as I would wish.

*To the right honourable his singular good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCXLIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. N. fol. 161.)

Orders set down and agreed upon by the right honourable the Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of England, and Lord Lieutenant of the County of Hertfordshire, for the better arming, and more speedy furnishing of the soldiers therein as well horsemen as footmen, by virtue of her Majesty's commission of Lieutenantancy to him directed the day of

1589.

For the Deputy Lieutenants.

FIRST, that before the 26th day of March, they do make a general view and muster of all the able men within the shire, from the age of sixteen years and upwards ; wherein they are to have an especial care to make their books so perfect as, upon any sudden occasion, they may from time to time make a present levy of such able and serviceable men as from the Lord Lieutenant shall be commanded and appointed.

Item. To make perfect books of all armour, and warlike weapons and furniture within the

ried Judith, daughter of John Wythernwick, of Claxby in Lincolnshire ; Charles, and Thomas, twins. This family ended in two co-heiresses, the daughters of George Markham, of Ollerton and Claxby, Esq., who were lately living ; Mary, relict of Marmaduke Tunstal, of Wycliffe in the county of York, Esquire, and Catherine, a nun at Dunkirk, lately a member of the convent at Pontoise, near Paris, which was dissolved in 1787.

* In consequence of a wound which he received by a poisoned bullet in 1563, at the siege of Newhaven, or Havre de Grace, of which he was Governor. It occasioned his death three days after the date of this letter.

shire, as well private as common; whereby the better appears what number of soldiers upon any occasion may be armed and furnished within the shire, over and besides the ordinary trained bands.

Item. To look carefully to the furnishing and well-keeping of all the store of powder, match, and bullet, appointed to be distributed into sundry places of the shire, for the sudden and ready-furnishing of the shot.

Item. In like sort to call upon the Captains, carefully to look to the well and orderly keeping of the armour, and other warlike furniture of the trained bands, whereby the same may be in a readiness whensoever they shall be called for.

Item. That no soldier that hath been enrolled in any of the Captain's trained bands shall be discharged out of the same in respect of the livery or service of any nobleman, except he was the household servant of any nobleman.

Item. That no man wearing the livery of any nobleman as a retainer* shall be excepted or dis-

* Retainers were a sort of dependents, who were at this time only employed to grace their Lord on great public occasions by adding to the number that appeared in his livery, which they bound themselves to wear. They had formerly, however, been used as instruments of violence and oppression, and the great man, in return, afforded them his aid in their lawsuits and petty quarrels; but, the inconveniences of this custom appearing as the feudal system became better defined, its objectionable parts were removed by several early statutes, and the retainers became mere feathers in the cap of nobility. The privilege of retaining could not be exercised without an express licence from the Crown (see No. XIX. of this reign,) by which the retainers were sometimes exonerated of all forfeitures, losses, or penalties, to the King, his heirs, and successors, by force of any statute, &c. and we may presume from this passage that they were once exempted from military services.

charged from any musters or warlike services, except he be the household servant, or a keeper of any house or park for a nobleman.

Item. Whereas many times divers of her Majesty's servants, and sundry merchants of London having houses and farms in their own possession within the said county, have heretofore refused to pay and contribute towards any taxations and assessments, reasonably rated upon them amongst their neighbours, according to the quantity of the lands which they do occupy in their own hands ; whereby the greater burthen hath been layed upon the poorer sort of those towns and parishes where their houses and livings are ; it is therefore ordered by the said Lord Lieutenant, that henceforth no servant of her Majesty's, nor merchant of London, nor any other person or persons whatsoever, except the Prelates and Lords of the Parliament, shall be forborne and expected out of any charge or taxation for and towards setting forth of soldiers, repairing of arms, or any such other public ordinary charge and service in the country ; but that they, and every of them shall, from time to time pay all such sums of money as shall be indifferently taxed and assessed upon them, amongst their neighbours, according to the reasonable rate and value of such lands and livings as they and every of them shall use and occupy, by themselves or their servants, in any towns or parishes within the shire aforesaid, whereby, as they shall reap a gain and profit amongst them, so, also, as reason requireth, they may in neighbourly sort help to bear the burden.

Item. That from time to time there be careful Order taken by the Captains of the lances and light horses, that once in a quarter of a year at the least, they do view and muster their bands; whereby all things may be in the better readiness, if upon any sudden occasion they shall be used. Wherein they are to take such favourable courses as they do perform the same with as little charge and trouble to the country as may be; which may best be done by making their views and musters in sundry places of the shire, by small troops together, and so as the horsemen be not charged to come above six or seven miles to their view.

Item. That all the horsemen, and all the shot of the foot bands, be presently furnished with their cassocks, if any be wanting.

Item. That you take order with the Justices of the Peace, and others of good living and ability, that every of them do provide to have in readiness a petronel, on horseback, furnished with cassocks of one colour, and other furniture, to attend upon the Lord Lieutenant upon any occasion of service, or otherwise to be employed at his Lordship's direction.

Item. That you shall give present order that all and every person and persons charged with the finding of any armour or weapon for and towards the furnishing of the several bands within this shire, that they shall, at all and every the days of musters and trainings, or other times of her Majesty's service, upon warning given by the Captain or other known officer, speedily deliver unto every

of the soldiers appointed to use and wear
same, all the said armour and furniture, well
sufficiently trimmed, buckled, dressed and sco
upon pain that every one making default th^t
not only to forfeit for every offence, but also
suffer such other corporal punishment as t^t
Lord Lieutenant, or two of his deputies,
seem convenient.

Item. That (for the better keeping and o
ing of the said armour and weapon, with
furniture, within the trained bands of the :
whereby the same may be in a readiness a
for service) the serjeants of every Captain's
for the shot, and the vintiners* for the armed
shall have rolls delivered unto them by their
tains, as well of the names and dwelling place
all such as are charged with the finding of ar
and weapon for furnishing of the soldiers in
of their divisions, as also of the common ar
and weapon ; which once in six weeks they
duly view and peruse, whether the same be cle
and orderly kept ; and, finding any part th^t
defective, they shall then charge the owner th^t
very speedily, by a day, to mend the same
which day if it shall not be well performed,
he shall thereof presently inform his Cap
whereby he may likewise impart the same
some one of the Deputy Lieutenants, that by
present order may be taken therein. For w

* The vintiner (*vintinarius - vigintinarius,*) was an i
officer who had the charge of twenty archers or billmen.

their pains, truly and diligently performed in this service, the serjeants shall have yearly three-pence for every shot, and the vintiner as much for every armed man, as well pike as bill, which shall be collected by the constable of every town, at the general charge of the townships; which shall be equally divided into four parts, and so quarterly paid unto them. And, if any default, or negligent dealings shall be found in any the said serjeants or vintiners, that then every of them so offending shall be turned out of his place, and shall besides suffer imprisonment by the space of twenty days without bail or mainprise, at the discretion of the Lord Lieutenant, or two of his deputies.

Item. All the cavalry, with their furniture in each serjeant's charge, to be safely kept together, either by some of the substantialest inhabitants in that division, or else in such other place as shall seem meet and convenient for the same, at the appointment of the Deputy Lieutenants, or two of them.

Item. To take order that the beacons from time to time be well repaired, and that every thing be in readiness for the necessary use of them.

FOR THE CAPTAINS.

FIRST. That they do carefully provide able and sufficient men to take charge of the necessary places and offices under them, being men well-affected in religion, and of honest and good conversation.

Item. To have an especial care to make choice

of able and meet men to serve under them as soldiers, which they shall sort to their armour and weapon according to the stature of their bodies.

Item. After such choice made, and every one sorted and well appointed unto their armour and weapons, the Captains shall presently make a perfect roll indented of the names as well of all the officers under them, as also of all and every their soldiers, and their dwelling places ; setting down also therein, how, and with whose armour, every of them are furnished ; the one part of which roll they are to deliver unto the Deputy Lieutenants, whereby they may out of the same make a perfect book thereof for the Lord Lieutenant.

Item. After the soldiers are so enrolled, none of them shall depart, or remove his dwelling out of the town or parish for which he is charged as a soldier, unless in convenient time before he do deliver good cause thereof unto his Captain, who shall presently signify the same unto some one of the Deputy Lieutenants (whereby, if upon examination of the same he shall give his allowance thereunto, they may presently take order for the furnishing of his or their places with another as sufficient) upon pain of every one departing, otherwise than as aforesaid, to be committed to the common gaol, there to continue twenty days, without bail or mainprise, as to the discretion of two of the Deputy Lieutenants shall seem convenient.

Item. Whereas by former orders from the Lords of her Majesty's Honourable Privy Council it was commanded that farmers, and others of the

best and wealthiest householders, should be named and appointed to be soldiers, because, as it was then conceived, that they would not only always be resident, and ready upon short warning to attend her Majesty's services, but also would for the better ease of the country bear their own charges ; now, for as much as by late experience at Tilbury it was found that small or no benefit grew thereby, but, also, that those rich men, which have been daintily fed, and warm lodged, when they came thither to lie abroad in the fields were worse able to endure the same than any others ; and, therewith, also, by their absence they received great loss in their crops of hay and corn, for lack of their careful attendance to the innning thereof (a matter, amongst others, very prejudicial to the commonwealth), it is therefore now agreed by the said Lord Lieutenant, that henceforth, if conveniently it may be without hinderance to the service, that all such kind of men be spared from their personal service ; so that every of them, heretofore or hereafter to be charged, do sufficiently supply their places, either with one of their sons, being able, or else with some other such able man (allowed by the Lieutenants) as they will have always in readiness whensoever he shall be called to serve her Majesty ; otherwise themselves, in their own persons, to supply their places.

Item. No Captain, petty Captain, nor other their under officers, shall, for any cause whatsoever discharge, alter, or change, any of the soldiers enrolled within the band, without the specia direc-

tion of one of the Deputy Lieutenants, or two of them.

Item. That no Captain shall depart out of the shire without licence of the Lord Lieutenant, or his deputies, or two of them ; in which time of their absence they shall leave such sufficient deputy or deputies to supply their places, as shall be allowed by the Lord Lieutenant, or his deputies, or two of them.

FOR THE SOLDIERS.

IMPRIMIS. That at every muster and training, or other martial service of her Majesty's, every soldier enrolled, upon warning given unto him from his Captain, either by any of his officers or by the constables, shall presently repay to the dwelling houses of such persons whose armour and weapon he is appointed to wear and use, being private armour, or else to such other place where the common armour shall be kept, and there they shall therewith orderly arm and furnish themselves, and with speed return to such place as they shall be appointed and directed by the said officers and constables ; and thence they shall go, armed and furnished, to the place either of musters or other service ; and, when the said musters or other services shall be ended, every of them shall also orderly and quietly return, armed, unto the houses where they received their armour and furniture, and there shall safely re-deliver the same, without any wilful hurt done by them unto any part thereof upon pain that every one so offending shall griev-

ously be punished, at the discretion of the Lord Lieutenant, or two of his deputies.

Item. Whereas heretofore the soldiers at all trainings and musters have very disorderly refused to wear and carry their armour, and other warlike furniture, from the towns where they dwell; whereby the constables and other the owners thereof, have been driven sometimes to carry the same in carts, and sometimes in sacks upon horses (a matter both unseemly for soldiers, and also very hurtful unto the armour by bruising and breaking thereof, whereby many times it becometh altogether unserviceable;) it is therefore ordered that every soldier, at all musters and trainings, shall have, over and besides eight-pence a day for his wages, a penny a mile for the wearing and carriage of his armour and weapon and other furniture, so that it exceed not six miles; provided always that if any of them shall refuse to wear and carry the same, that then the party so offending shall not only lose all his wages, but also further shall suffer four days imprisonment, without bail or mainprize.

FOR THE MUSTER MASTER.

FIRST. That from time to time, upon warning given unto them by the Lord Lieutenant or his deputies, he shall come unto the musters, and there diligently and carefully view and peruse as well the soldiers of every of the Captains' bands, as also all the armour and weapon, with other warlike furniture, whether the same be serviceable and allowable in

every point, and well fitted upon every of the said soldiers ; wherein if he shall find any fault, then presently he shall inform one of the Deputy Lieutenants thereof, whereby present order may be taken by him for the reformation and amendment of it.

Item. That after he hath perfectly viewed the soldiers, and orderly sorted their armour, as aforesaid, that then he shall assist the Captain in and about the training and instructing of the soldiers in martial services.

At Greenwich, the 10th of March, 1589.

W. BURGHLEY.

No. CCXLIV.

(Cecil Papers.)

WILLIAM DUNDAS TO ARCHIBAED DOUGLAS:

My Lord,

AFTER my very humble commendations of service, I thought good to advertise your Lordship according to my promise, of my coming to this country, where I arrived not so quickly as I trow your Lordship looked, because I rode sometimes out of the way to see the country, as to Cambridge and York ; and, because I had not much to do, I rode but at my own ease. I have seen the King's Grace, but not the Queen ; for things are beginning to be greatly altered here ; the Court wondrous solitary, and the patron of the Court of Denmark is greatly before the King's eye, and the eye of our reformators, by whom the King's house is diminished of a the best of his old ser-

vants, and sum of every office. They are presently in hand for the like censure in the session, and many other things are minded to, which I doubt not but your Lordship is informed at length, and more particularly by others than I am able to do. In the mean time every body, *apponentes manum ad os*, look to these novelties, and such other things as it shall please the King and the Chancellor to devise or command, for there is none here but he. Our Queen carries a marvellous gravity, which, with her patrial solitariness, contrary to the humour of our people, hath banished all our ladies clean from her.* As for my own state, I am entered into a world of plagues and cumbers, which menaces me ado for a long while; but, knowing that your Lordship will have the information of greater matters and other things, in particular, both by your own friends, and likewise by the two Ambassadors that are bound towards London, I will leave off further prattling unto your Lordship, and crave your pardon of that I have done, while your Lordship will bury under the desire I have to testify unto you my gratitude and goodwill, which shall evermore remain in wait of some good occasion to be employed in your Lordship's service, according as I am obliged by so many benefits; which, because they surmount the reach of recompence, shall make me deter so long as I live in goodwill; and I hope and persuade myself, that in such a

* This lady assumed a very different character after she became Queen of England, if the memoir writers of that time are to be credited.

number and multitude of persons as your Lordship hath been of your goodness and gentle nature beneficial unto in your time, there shall not by God's grace, any be found more mindful thankful towards your Lordship than I shall thought, after the substance of my power; wherefore if it might extend itself also far as some other may which are doubtful in like manner unto you your Lordship should have shortly proof of goodwill, and in more faithful manner than I am able to do at this time; and I will count it a great benefit to hear of your Lordship's welfare. In the mean time (which I beseech the living I may ever be prosperous, and that you may obtain your heart's desire in all your Lordship craves, likewise over them that are your Lordship's executors) I will take my leave of your Lordship for fear of being tedious unto your Lordship in a longer letter.

From Edinburgh, the 11th of June, 1590.

By your Lordship's most humble and loving servant, to be commanded at power,

WILLIAM DUND

To the right honourable Lord, Mr. Archibald Douglas, Councillor to his Majesty of Scotland, at London.

* William, eldest son of Archibald Dundas, of Fingask by Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Colville, of Cliesh, ancestor of Lord Colville. He married, in 1582, Margaret, daughter and heir of Sir David Carnegie, of Clouthie, but had no issue by her. This gentleman, and his father, are mentioned by the Scottish historians as persons highly favoured and trusted by James.

No. CCXLV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 92.)

THE BISHOP OF LICHFIELD AND COVENTRY
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable, my singular good Lord,
I AM bold according to my promise, to put you in remembrance by letters of some matters already passed between us in talk. It is an old saying, and as true as old, a thing well begun is half ended. It pleased your good Lordship, at my late being with you, to confer with me about divers points touching the good estate of this our shire, whereof yourself, next under her Majesty, is the chief governor ; and I hope, as you then begun them in good time, so now very shortly they will be brought to very good perfection, for on Tuesday last, at the general meeting of our Justices, which were more in number than ever at any one time I had seen before, and the same also of the best sort, I imparted unto them the honourable care that you have of the common good estate and welfare of this country ; whereat they take great joy, and render you for it most humble thanks, and will, I trust, every one of them, both follow in themselves, and further in others, your honourable advertisements and advice. And, for my own part, as I am one of the first amongst many, so, if mine example may do any good, I will be the first that will give the onset upon the execution of so good and commendable a matter.

Thus much for those common affairs that we had in conference ; now the chief and last matter

that we talked of, and a matter indeed both in conscience chiefly to be regarded of you, and in duty still to be urged and called upon by me, was the good and godly reconciliation of you together, I mean your Lordship and my Lady your wife. I humbly thank your good Lordship you were content then to take my motion in good part, and to account it for a good piece of mine office and charge to travel in such causes, as indeed it is, and therefore, I trust you will be as willing now to see me write as you were then to hear me speak in that matter ; and the more, because I speak and write as well of mere love and good will to yourself, as for any respect also of discharging my duty unto God ; and yet, also, you must think chiefly and principally that I speak and write to discharge my duty to God, and must take all that I do to precede, not as from a common friend and hanger on, but as from a special ghostly father, stirred up of God purposely, as I hope, to do good unto you both by my ghostly advice. My Honourable good Lord, I cannot see but that it must needs rest as a great clog to your conscience, if you consider the matter as it is, and will weigh the case according to the rule of God's word : I say I cannot see but that it must needs rest and remain a great clog and burthen to your conscience to live asunder from the Countess your wife, without her own good liking and consent thereto ; for, as I have told you heretofore, it is the plain doctrine of St. Paul that the one should not defraud the other of due benevolence, nor of mutual comfort and company, but

with the agreement of both parties, and that also but for a time, and only to give yourselves to fasting and prayer. This is the doctrine of St. Paul, and this doctrine Christ himself confirmed in the gospel when he forbiddeth all men to put away their wives, unless for adultery, a thing never suspected in my Lady your wife. I could bring forth many authorities and examples, both of the Holy Scriptures and other, profane writers, to prove that such kind of separations have always been holden unlawful and ungodly, not only amongst the people of God, but also amongst the Heathens themselves that never knew God ; and I could likewise shew what fearful judgment of God have followed such unlawful separations, and what great plagues have fallen upon not only the offenders themselves, but also upon their houses and children, and all their posterity after them ; but I shall not need to use any such discourse to your Lordship, because so wise, so grave, so well disposed as indeed you are of yourself if other evil counsellors did not draw you to the contrary ; who also shall not want their part in the plague, for, as the proverb saith, so experience proveth the saying to be true, *consilium malum consultori pessimum*, evil counsel falleth out worst to the council giver.

But some will say in your Lordship's behalf that the Countess is a sharp and bitter shrew, and therefore like enough to shorten your life, if she should keep you company. Indeed, my good Lord, I have heard some say so, but if shrewdness or sharpness may be a just cause of separation

between a man and wife, I think few men in England would keep their wives long ; for it is a common jest, yet true in some sense, that there is but one shrew in all the world, and every man hath her ; and so every man might be rid of his wife, that would be rid of a shrew. My honourable good Lord, I doubt not but your great wisdom and experience hath taught you to bear some time with a woman as with the weaker vessel ; and yet, for the speeches I have had with her Ladyship in that behalf, I durst pawn all my credit unto your Lordship, (and, if need be, also bind myself in any great bond) she will so bridle herself that way, beyond the course of other women, that she will rather bear with your Lordship, than look to be borne withal ; and yet to be borne withal sometimes is not amiss for the best and wisest and patientest of us all. But, peradventure some of your friends will object greater matter against her ; as that she hath sought to overthrow your whole house ; but those that say so I think are not your Lordship's friends, but rather her Ladyship's enemies, and their speech carrieth no resemblance of truth ; for how can it be likely that she should seek or wish the overthrow of you or your house, when not only, being your wife, your prosperity must needs profit her very much, but also, having joined her house with your house in marriage, your long life and honourable state must needs glad her heart to the uttermost ; if not for your own sake, yet for the issue of both your bodies, whom she loveth, I dare say, as her own life, and would not see by

her goodwill to fall into any decay, either of honour or any other good state of life or livings; although, also, I dare say she wisheth all good unto you for your own sake, as well as theirs, or else she would not be so desirous of your life and company as she is. And, therefore, I beseech your Lordship remove all such conceits far from you as are beaten into your head by evil counsellors, and rather think this unlawful separation, to be a stain to your house, and a danger to your life; for that God, indeed, is not well pleased with it, who will visit with death or sickness all that live not after his laws, as of late yourself had some little touch or taste given you of it by those, or the nearest friends of those, whom you most trusted about you. For my own part, I wish your Lordship all good, even from my heart; both long life and honourable state, with all increase of honour, and joy and comfort in the Lord to your own heart's desire; but yet both I and you, and all of us that are God's children, must think that such visitations are sent us of God to call us home, and if we despise them when they are sent, he will lay greater upon us. Thus I am bold, my good Lord, both in the fear of God and in goodwill towards yourself, to discharge the duty of a well-willing ghostly father, and if your Lordship accept it well, as I hope you will, I beseech you let me understand it by a line or two, that I may give God thanks for it; if not, I have done my part; the success I leave to God, and rest yours, notwithstanding.

standing, in what I may ; and so I humbly take my leave of your good Lordship.

From Eccleshall, the 12th of October, 1590.

Your Lordship's in all duty, to command,

W. COVEN. and LICH.*

To the right honourable my very good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury, Lord Lieutenant for the County of Stafford, give these.

No. CCXLVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 94.)

WILLIAM CECIL TO LORD TALBOT.

My singular good Lord,

If you had strived to have done me an honourable favour, you could not easily have invented a greater than in that fearful rainy morning in sending for my cousin Constable from Newark to Rufford, to your Lordship, being that morning appointed to take our journey towards London. My Lord, my grandfather hath often remembered, by occasion of some private conference I had with him, your Lordship

* William Overton, a Prelate who hath passed almost entirely unnoticed by cotemporary writers, though evidently a man of no mean abilities. He was born in London, in 1524 ; entered of Magdalene College in the University of Oxford in 1539, where he gained a high reputation as a preacher ; and succeeded Thomas Bentham in the Bishoprick of Lichfield and Coventry in 1580, having previously held several valuable preferments. He was much respected in his diocese on account of his hospitality, and for the good repair in which he kept his episcopal house of Eccleshall, contrary, saith the author of the Ath. Oxon. to the customs of married Prelates. That collection informs us that he was twice married ; first, to Margaret, third daughter of William Barlow, Bishop of Chichester ; of his second wife, and whether he had issue by either, we are ignorant, for no account of his family appears in the College of Arms. He died in April, 1609, and was buried in the church of Eccleshall.

and your honourable Lady, and doth take your honourable courtesy done to your poor neighbours of Newark Castle as an *assumpsit solvere*; whereof, for my part, I will ever keep grateful memory.

The news out of France by the post that came of Thursday night last are these. The Spaniards have won Corbeil Seine,* eight miles from Paris, with loss of a number of men; in revenge whereof they have utterly spoiled the town, and unfortified every stone. It is likewise advertised that the Duke de Mayenne will join with the King, and that the King is content to accept him for his loving subject, and that they will drive the proud Spaniard out of France. The Duke of Parma feareth to return the way he came, and striveth to go through Picardy, where the King, if he can, intendeth to fight with him. There came news of the death of the King of Spain,† and that he had sent to the Pope to obtain licence to marry his own daughter. The news of Italy is that the Duke of Florence‡ hath chosen a Pope, flat against the minds of the King of Spain, who, to stop his choice, and to elect another better for his purpose, sent his forces from Naples to Rome; and yet the Duke's prevailed, and chose for himself, whereby it appeareth it is good to be nigh hand.

* Corbeil, about sixteen miles from Paris; called here Corbeil *Seine*, to distinguish it from another town of the same name on the Somme, in Picardy.

† This was a false report. He lived till 1598.

‡ Ferdinand I. who had himself been a Cardinal. The Pope here spoken of was John Baptist Castanet, who succeeded Sixtus V. and took the name of Urban VII., a quiet man, remarkable only for his learning, and therefore altogether unfit for the purposes of Spain and the League.

The Turk, had not he been prevented by our Ambassador, intended to set upon the King of Poland with 60,000 men ; but, understanding her Majesty had great need of many things from the country necessary for her navy, he withdrew his force, though he was assured of victory, only for her Majesty's sake, who received great thanks from the King of Poland ; and the Turk himself hath written to her Majesty letters, with most great titles, assuring her that if she will write her letter to him, to require him, he will make the King of Spain humble himself unto her. He so threatened invasion to those of Marseilles, that, thereupon, they have yielded to the King of France, otherwise he vowed to have spoiled their city. This morning came other news, that the Spaniard should be arrived at St. Mallowes with 20,000 men.

I pray your Lordship, esteem my news as those which in Venice are fraught in the *Gazetta*; if it be more worth I shall be glad; and so I humbly commend me unto your Lordship, and my Honourable Lady, taking my leave.

From my lodging in Westminster, this 23rd of October, 1590.

Your Lordship's every way to be commanded,

WILLIAM CECIL

To the right honourable Lord Talbot, at Rufford dd.

* The first periodical collection of news was printed at Venice every month, and sold for a small copper coin then called a *Gazetta*, whence the name.

† Eldest son of Sir Thomas Cecil, son and heir of Lord Burghley. He was born in 1566, and died Earl of Exeter, and Knight of the Garter in 1640.

No. CCXLVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 115.)

THOMAS KERY TO LORD TALBOT.

Yr humble duty remembered. It may please your good Lordship I have been here at London all, or the most part, of this term, so as I cannot write to your Lordship of the truth of the news that be here at this time: and yet I do adventure to write to your Lordship such as is rumoured, be they true or false, for that I would very fain do your lordship all the service I were able.

We say here in London that the Duke de Layenne is killed, and we look hourly for news of the inning of Dunkirk; a plot laid by one Medkirk,* who was a soldier in the town, and born under the tates; whose father lives in England, pensioner to her Majesty, and came hither with the Earl of Leicester thence, being a man greatly favoured by the Earl, and therefore not greatly loved of the tates; but what will be the end I leave to write until it be revealed by the act done, which is here well hoped. It is written from Bristow that there were 9000 Spaniards landed in Britanny;† that there was some resistance made at their landing; but of any other particulars hereof we hear not. It is said Corbeil is won by assault, to the great loss of

* Among the military persons who were knighted at Cadiz in 596, by the Earl of Essex, we find a Baldwyn Metkirk; probably his person.

† At Blavet in Britany, where they took the town of Henneion, and some other sea-ports.

the Prince of Parma's* soldiers, and himself hurt, and his horse killed under him.

Forbisher is returned long since, without any great thing done by him. Of Sir John Hawkyns and his fleet we yet hear no news. My Mr. Manners is very ill of the yellow jaundice; very faint in body, and more faint in heart, for he thinks he shall die hereof, for that his father died of the same disease. If he do die of it, (as by Lady it may be feared) I am sure I lose £100 I should have had for fallowing and finishing his fee farm; which if I do, I will lay it upon my Lord Talbot, for that it was for his cause that I lost the fruits of that labour, which may be some comfort to your good Lordship that I do commit so good trust unto you. We say now again that Mr. Wotton and Mr. Killigrew shall be Secretaries, and that shortly, but what will be the end I know not. No Comptroller spoken of, and Sir Francis Knowles is gone home to his house with a quartan ague on his back, so as it is thought he will scarce return to Court. I do not doubt but here be many of your Lordship's followers that will write to your Lordship more particular than I do, or can do, and yet I would not be inferior in duty to your Lordship to the best of them; if I had better stuff your Lordship should

* Alexander Farnese, Duke of Parma and Placentia, son of a natural daughter of the Emperor Charles V. He had served, when very young, under his uncle, Don John of Austria, and succeeded him in the government of the Netherlands, whence he was now detached by Philip II. to join the armies of the League. He died suddenly at Arras two years after, in the prime of his life, and justly reputed one of the first Generals of his time.

ive it. Sir John Perrot* is not yet cleared, nor
ke to be. Marry I think no great matter will
ll further but his great disgrace happily from the
ouncil board, and some fine in his apparel and
ntenance. He seemeth not to be any way a
isoner. My good friend Mr. Scudamore con-
ueth sick of his quarten. The Lady of Essex†
me this last week to Walsingham House, waited
on like the Countess of Essex. I never knew
y Lord Treasurer more lusty and fresh in hue
an at this hour. Her Majesty is at Windsor.
f her coming hither no word. Marry it is thought
 Westminster or St. James, the remove will be,
gainst the 7th of November, and not before.

Thus sorrowful, I cannot write to your Lord-
hip aught worth writing for your Lordship's own
articular, and glad to hear of the great favour
ntinued to your Lordship and my right honour-
ble Lady your wife, by your right honourable

* Sir John Perrot, formerly Deputy of Ireland, where he had performed signal services. This gentleman was supposed to be the son of Henry VIII., by Mary, wife to Thomas Perrot, of Handstone in Pembrokeshire, Esquire. He died in the Tower two years after the date of this letter, under conviction of high treason, the principal charge against him being that he had spoken injuriously of the Queen; but Camden tells us that he was undermined by the malice of Chancellor Hatton. He was a man of a singular character, subject to violent fits of anger, which he always vented in the grossest abuse, accompanied with horrid execrations. Elizabeth herself is said to have been sometimes the personal object of these furious effusions.

† Frances, only daughter of Sir Francis Walsingham, and widow of Sir Philip Sidney; lately married to the Earl of Essex. Elizabeth was highly offended because this match had been made without her knowledge, and, perhaps, for other reasons.

father, I pray God for the increase thereof, and humbly remain in your Lordship's service.

London, in haste, this 23rd of October, 1520.

Your Lordship's ever to be commanded

THOMAS KERY. —

*To the right honourable his very singular good
Lord the Lord Talbot.*

No. CCXLVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 473.)

RICHARD BRAKINBURY TO LORD TALBOT.

My most honourable good Lord and Landlord, —
If I should write how much her Majesty this day did make of the little lady your daughter, with often kissing (which her Majesty seldom useth to any) and then amending her dressing with pins, and still carrying her with her Majesty in her own barge, and so into the privy lodgings, and so homeward from the running, you would scarce believe me. Her Majesty said (as true it is) that she is very like my Lady her grandmother. She behaved herself with such modesty as I pray God she may possess at twenty years old. My Lady Marquess did take only care of her.

These sports were great, and done in costly sort, to her Majesty's liking, and their great cost. To express every part, with sundry devices, it is more fit for them that delight in them than for me

* Thomas Kery, or Kerry, Clerk of the Privy Seal. He was the son of Humphrey Kerry, of Worthyn in Shropshire, a gentleman of a very ancient house in that county, by Christiana, daughter of William Ambler, and married, first, a daughter of — Brynne; secondly, Margaret, daughter of William Hull; but is not stated to have left issue by either.

who esteemeth little such vanities, I thank God. Then the nineteenth day, being St. Elizabeth's day,* the Earl of Cumberland, the Earl of Essex, and my Lord Burgh, did challenge all comers, six courses apiece ; which was very honourably performed. The French Ambassadors, as the Viscount Turenne and the Leger, was at all these sports. Since the Viscount's coming he hath been very well entertained at Windsor by her Majesty, and here in London by my Lord Chancellor (whither the Queen went secretly, as she thought) but from the first to the last the Earl of Essex doth lodge

* The observation of this day as a Court festival seems to have been one of those absurd pieces of flattery which were so common in this reign, and is perhaps nowhere mentioned but in the letter before us. Elizabeth was so insignificant a saint as to have no peculiar service allotted to her in the ancient rituals, except a short solitary lesson on the 19th of November, and the reformed breviary of Pius V. deprives her even of that, and denies her a place in its calendar. The miracle to which this lady owed her canonization was thus recited in the lesson—"A comely young man, too gaily habited, coming to visit her, Elizabeth admonished him to despise the vanities of the world. The young man answered her ; Madam, I beseech you pray for me. If thou wouldest have me pray for thee, said Elizabeth, go thou and do likewise. So they began to pray at some distance, till the young man, unable to endure the fervour of her devotion, began to cry aloud that he should be destroyed by it ; whereupon her maidens running to him, found him all on fire, so that they could not touch his clothes, but were fain hastily to withdraw their hands, with such a vehement heat did he burn : Elizabeth hereupon ceased to pray, and the young man, inspired by this divine warmth, went into the order of the Franciscans." (*Reflections upon the Devotions of the R. C. Church. London, 1674.*) Our Queen, who resembled the saint only in her name, and in her fondness for practising on the weakness of comely young men, was silly enough to connive at the public recollection of this wretched legend, for the sake of the wretched compliment which her courtiers had founded on it.

him, and the best about him, and defrayeth his diet. He goes away about the 23rd of this month, and so to Germany, where God send him aid, for his Master has great need of it, for the leaguers and enemies enter his country, very dangerously for his state, and not a little for us, for they already are entered into Britain with 4000 more Spaniards. They enter also by Languedoc ; and the Duke of Savoy of that side, and the Duke of Lorrain, with Swiss, by that part ; and the Duke of Parma lies in the heart of France, doing daily great harm to the country ; but yet of late the King's party hath taken again Corbeil, of a sudden, by the same breach they lost it, and all the great ordnance, and other munition that was in it ; but the chief good is they found in it, ready to relieve Paris, 1000 oxen, 4000 sheep, and 20,000 quarters of grain ; besides, the Duke de Nemours * did take another town of great importance for the King. The Duke Epernon is coming to the King with all his forces. These news pleased the French here more than all our sports did.

Her Majesty returns to Richmond the 24th day of this month, and there tarry Christmas. My Lord of Essex is in good favour. My Lord Ormond† hath been very sick, but now well recovered,

* If the Duke of Nemours is meant here, it is a mistake, for that nobleman was in the service of the League, and commanded in Paris during the present siege. The Duke of Nevers attached himself to the King after the death of Henry III. and probably was the person intended.

† James Butler, ninth Earl of Ormond and Ossory. This nobleman, contrary to custom of his countrymen at that time, lived much in England, and died at his house at Limehouse near London.

and was at these triumphs Earl Marshal, and bare the rod. I most humbly beseech my humble service to my most honourable good Lady your Lordship's wife, and to my Lady her mother, and so God bless you all as my chief friends.

London, November 20, 1590.

A most humble and true tenant till death,

RICHARD BRAKINBURY.*

*To the most noble and the right honourable
Lord Talbot at Rufford, or elsewhere, give
these.*

No. CCXLIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 208.)

JOHN STANHOPE TO LORD TALBOT. 1590.

My good Lord,

I ASSURE your Lordship to my remembrance, I have not risen any morning since I received your letter, but with a mind to write to your Lordship before night; but, as the fool of Gotham, that though he did nothing but say over his message which he had to deliver, yet when his horse stumbled he forgot it quite, and instead of delivering his errand

* An old courtier of the second rank, descended from a very ancient family in the Bishoprick of Durham, of which Sir Robert Brakenbury, Lieutenant of the Tower, whose name always occurs in the dismal story of the murder of the young Princes, was a younger son. He is thus described in a visitation of Durham made in 1575; "Richard Brakenbury, Gentleman Usher to Queen Elizabeth;" and was the fifth son of Anthony Brakenbury, of Denton, by Agnes, daughter and co-heir of Ralph Wycliffe, of Wycliffe in Yorkshire. He is mentioned by Mr. Anthony Bacon, in a letter of July 10, 1596, in Dr. Birch's collection: "The Earl of Lincoln," says Mr. Bacon, "departed this day to Yarmouth, in his way to the Landgrave of Hesse, accompanied with old Mr. Brakenbury, to direct him for ceremonies and compliments, &c." He married Mary, daughter of Jaques Masery, of Rouen in Normandy, but had no issue at the time of the visitation abovementioned.

he told the party that his horse was to blame for stumbling, so I can tell you I am to blame, and make half a dozen as foolish excuses as that ; but, my Lord, without ceremony or thanks, though both be due, and courtiers can tell how to use them, if it please you to accept such news are now most current, and yet not to believe all, though the Master of the Posts write them, you shall have such as they are.

The Queen for health is wondrous well, God be thanked ; this day coming from Windsor, where on Sunday last she entertained the Viscount of Turenne openly ; though he had access to her in her gallery overnight, divers Lords and Ladies being by. He is very welcome, in all open shows, and if his errand do not too much importune a present supply of money I think his entertainment shall be the better ; though in truth her Majesty be not without good telling how she and her estate be interested in the French King's prosperity or fall. This night, God willing, she will to Richmond, and on Saturday next to Somerset House, and if she could overcome her passion against my Lord of Essex for his marriage, no doubt she would be much the quieter ; yet doth she use it more temperately than was thought for, and God be thanked doth not strike all she threats. The Earl doth use it with good temper, concealing his marriage as much as so open a matter may be ; not that he denies it to any, but, for her Majesty's better satisfaction, is pleased that my Lady shall live very retired in her mother's house. The favours of the

Court be disposed as you left them, and I assure you never a man that I know hath cause to brag of any. My Lord Treasurer hath been long ill of the gout, and so continues. Our new maid, Mrs. Vavasour,* flourisheth like the lily and the rose.

Out of France it is certainly reported that the Duke of Parma hath sent for all the forces he can make in the Low Countries, whether to bring him home or rather to inhabit there with him is in question. The Spaniard, they say, nestles where he once sets his foot. In Britanny, those 4000 Spaniards that landed there spoil all about the country, and demand of the Duke of Mercœur,† the town of Nantes, St. Malos, and Brest; which he hath refused to yield them, but saith if they can win Brest, which holds for the King, or any other town that holds for the King, he is content they shall hold them, but of the towns in his own possession he will deliver none, alleging they have garrisons in them already. They say the Bretons grow weary of the insolence of the Spaniards there, but they are like to have supplies daily out of

* Mrs. Anne Vavasour, a lady of a Yorkshire family. She was one of the Queen's maids of honour, and a very beautiful woman, but the subject of much mirth and scandal among the courtiers, on account of her attachment to the old, but gallant, Sir Henry Lee. I have seen an epitaph on that gentleman, alluding to this connection, so wittily pointed that I am sorry an obvious consideration obliges me to decline inserting it here.

† Philip Emanuel de Lorrain, Duke of Mercœur. Henry III. not long before his death, had given him the government of Britany, and he now took advantage of the national confusion to set up an ancient claim of inheritance to the sovereignty of that province. This accounts for his refusing to admit the forces of the Duke of Parma, under whom he served, into the towns mentioned here.

Spain. There is a speech that a base son of the Duke of Alva's is coming into France, by the way of Navarre, with another army; and the Duke of Lorraine hath bought one town by treason on the frontiers of France, and is besieging another; against whom the King of France, they say, is gone with 2000 French horse, and 800 cyters, and 1000 shot on horseback, to join with the Duke of Nevers, who went before with 4000 foot. Our men have good speed in the Low Countries for sconces* and poor villages, but they were disappointed of Dunkirk. It will be known ere long what the Queen will do; men be in readiness, and very willing, but when it is concluded I will advertise your Lordship. Sir John Hawkins came home without prize, or sight of enemies: but, since his coming to Plymouth, a little ship of his which he thought had been lost, hath brought home a prize, which will acquit the charges of his journey, and hath in her four backs of coin, and a whole barrel of coined money. Divers other poor merchants have brought to Weymouth, prizes, as they say, some worth £100,000, some £10,000, some more or less. This is the sum of all my news, saving that Mrs. Mackwilliams prayeth me to present her humble commendations unto you, and withal, desireth you that if my Lady move you in a suit for her, your Lordship will not deny it. My Lord, I can but love you, and be ready to serve you, and that I assure you I am very constant in; and, if you will not

* Small forts.

laugh at me, I will say I hope to see you at Rufford before Christmas end ; and so pray your Lordship to pardon my rudeness, and to command him who will ever be ready to serve you.

JOHN STANHOPE.

*To the right honourable his very good
Lordship, the Lord Talbot.*

No. CCL.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 159.)

FRANCIS NEEDHAM TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

It may be please your Lordship,
SINCE the writing of my last letters, by Anthony Bradshaw, (entering into consideration with myself, both of that which I have vowed and promised unto your Lordship, and the speedy use your Lordship is necessarily to have for the disposing of your Lordship's business here, together with the commandment received from her Majesty) I have dealt both with Mr. Vicechamberlain and Mr. Fortescue, to press her Majesty very earnestly that if it shall not please her to appoint unto me some such place as whereby I may both be protected under her favour and enabled to live, I may take some other private course, or less expence, and frame my life accordingly ; which they have promised to procure as soon as this weighty business of the dispatch of the Viscount,* and swear-

* Henry de la Tour, Viscount of Turenne, afterwards Duke of Bouillon. The following extract from a tedious letter of private business from the same Mr. Needham, in vol. H. of the Talbot Papers, will explain the motive of this nobleman's visit to the English Court ; which is not spoken of in any piece of history that I have examined. " There have been sundry jealousies conceived

ing of the Secretaries, shall be finished, both which will be this day, or before her Majesty departed hence. The one I even now left ready, taking his leave, the other to be done this night or to-morrow morning. Hereunto so soon as I shall have received answer I will not fail either myself to repair down to do my duty unto your Lordship, or to attend such direction as it shall please your Lordship to command me ; wherein if I may understand your Lordship's pleasure I shall the better know how to carry myself for my repair or abode. The resolution for Secretaries lieth between Mr. Robert Cecil and Mr. Wilkes ;* your Lordship can easily

here of the Viscount of Turenne his coming, for that some suspected (by reason that all the gentlemen of Kent were commanded to attend the Sheriff to receive him, and Sir Richard Baker sent from London, where he intended to have lain this winter, to lodge him the one night, and Mr. Leonard the other; the Queen's coaches and barges both sent; the Lord Cobham to meet him at Rochester, and the Earl of Essex at Gravesend) that the French King was secretly in his company; but the comfort he should find here could no way countervail the hazard he should have sustained at home; and the great honour done to this nobleman was in respect of his long and constant profession in religion, as well as for his place and calling, and the love he beareth to this Estate, which deserveth no less than he hath. He is lodged in York House. His coming is for that, in respect of the great credit he hath in Germany, being rich, and a great man of war, the King sendeth him to treat with the Princes for a levy this next summer for his relief, wherein the King hath great need both of her Majesty's assistance in hand and further credit; which will be an unseasonable motion, though it be most needful; but, considering how things stand, we could rather like to maintain our own people than to be at so great expense upon so faint and faithless a warring people, &c.

* The place of Secretary was kept vacant for six years after Walsingham's death by the Earl of Essex's ineffectual efforts to procure the restoration of the unfortunate Davison; Sir Robert Cecil, who in the meantime conducted the official business, was at

judge whose creatures they are, and the choice were happy if they happen to run one course ; the one in respect of the great helps he shall have from his father, himself being aowardly personage ; the other a well experimental gentleman, and of good understanding, and great dispatch, and no less courage.

There came since my last, news from Monsieur Gourdan, from Calais, that the King hath given a great overthrow to the Duke of Parma near Chateau Thierry, besides Meaux. We hear not whether the Duke was there in person, but he hath lost 4000 men ; though I doubt not but he hath been well beaten, and some of his best men slain, because the advice came from Gourdan ; yet I doubt somewhat of the number, because they are no men of name slain.* Belagny, Governor of Cambray,† is said to have taken men into that peace for the King's behalf.

I trust now these new assistances are added to the Council matters will receive more speedy re-

length formerly appointed in July, 1596. He was Lord Burghley's youngest son, afterwards Earl of Salisbury, and Lord Treasurer to James I. Sir Thomas Wilkes had been a Clerk of the Council, and was much employed in foreign negotiations, particularly in the Low Countries and in France, where he died in March, 1597-8.

* This was a false report. The Prince of Parma, it is true, was at this time encamped near Meaux, and the King of France having posted his army between that city and Paris, some slight skirmishes had happened : but the latter, by imprudently changing his situation soon after, disabled himself from molesting his adversary, and in consequence of this false step was obliged to raise the siege of Paris.

† John de Montluc de Balagny, bastard of John de Montluc, Bishop of Valence, heretofore mentioned as a Commissioner at the treaty of Edinburgh in 1560.

solution ; and yet, be it said to your Lordship, I fear me if her Majesty doth carry no good hand, as it is to be hoped she will, or do not draw these two to serve her turn diversely (as she knoweth how to use them) there may some cause of discontentment be ministered in time to come. The pique and manner of proceeding with Sir John Perrot yieldeth matter to either side to work on, and hath given to my Lord Treasurer some inward cause of dislike, for that Sir John was very suddenly again restrained, and his papers and books in my Lord Treasurer's house, and at his other house, searched and carried away by my Lord Chamberlain and Lord Buckhurst, which was done without making his Lordship privy thereto, but hath greatly appalled his Lordship, and disquieted him in his sleep all that night. What my Lord of Essex hath done in his suit, which is changed to the Justiceship in Eyre, I will leave to the report of this gentleman and others ; and so for the present humbly take my leave.

London, this 24th of November, 1590.

Your Lordship's most humble to command,

FRANCIS NEEDHAM.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCLI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 215.)

RICHARD TOPCLIFFE TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My humble duty done to your good Lordship, although I be not one of the first of those who have acknowledged gladness that it hath pleased God to

set you in the seat of your noble ancestors,* which I have long expected you should win, by degrees of time, yet am I, in heart, with the foremost of your Lordship's plain friends joyful thereof, for the service of God, of my Queen, and of my country's good; for I do not doubt but your virtues and your zeal have been equal heretofore with the best of your degree; then is there expectation that the same will swell as degrees rise upon you, and authority shall increase. For my part, if you will licence me to honour you and love you still in that plain manner I have done, I shall not leave any faithful part or duty unperformed that shall become one of my profession to one of your state; and I was never so fit to offer and perform so much as now I am; for I, that was entangled by many obligations not long since unto Leicester and Warwick, (never for that lucre which was the lure to many followers) now am I a free man, and all bonds be cancelled by their deaths, and I at liberty to love whom and where I list; owing no man so much as your Lordship's self, if it please you so to esteem of me so as you give me leave and freedom never to dissemble with your Lordship, and fit it is that some of plain disposition should be entertained among many smilers that this world will afford unto Princes. Give me leave, my good Lord, to say and write what I see, hear, and know by experience. At such an alteration of a house as now hath chanced by your father's death, there is ever

* Earl George died on the 18th of November, and was succeeded by his eldest surviving son Gilbert, heretofore styled in these papers, Lord Talbot."

great expecting towards the rising of the sun ; for as people do see the clearness of the morning, they will guess of weather all the day following ; so will they divine of men's natures by good signs, past and present, or things come. I wish, therefore, all God's good blessings upon your beginning, that the good hope of our court, our country, and commonwealth, may continue upon this alteration ; that the world may say he that begins well will end well ; and, for my part, I doubt it not.

Let me remember your Lordship that you are a Prince (alone in effect) in two countries in the heart of England, more dangerously infected than the worst of England to my knowledge. There, and every where else, bad weeds will seek to shroud themselves under great oaks, (whose policies I trust your Lordship will discern, now when God hath so abundantly blessed you, whom I knew so virtuous, honourable, and circumspect, when you were lower) and bad men cannot hide where they receive comfort ; neither will God suffer the practices of the wicked to lie hidden, as lately hath burst out the lewd dispositions of that dangerous family of the Fitzherberts in that country, in whose three houses hath been moulded and tempered the most dangerous and loathsome treasons* that this

* Many circumstances relative to this persecuted family are to be found in the Talbot Papers, but nothing to justify this heavy accusation. It appears, indeed, that they were obstinately attached to the religion of their ancestors, which, by a hard construction of the laws against the Roman Catholics, might nearly amount to treason. Mr. Topcliffe's furious prejudices against the professors of that persuasion tend perhaps to render the charge yet more doubtful.

age hath heard of, and some scarce yet come to common view ; and their helps and hopes their old and new papers betray, and by how many means they and their friends sought to have corrupted, and crept under the shadow of your noble father, whom they had no power to enchant, which turneth greatly to his honour ; yea, it appeareth they devised to have cunning dissembling Papists preferred to his service, to serve their turns, who might have betrayed a man of the deepest watch. Of such, my dear Lord, for the particular love I carry to you, and for the old honour my foregone friends have borne to your house (which died not in me when your father used me most unkindly) suffer me to wish your Lordship to take heed, and beware that they come not in fair skins and prove adders ; with some good outward quality, and therefore may allow liking, and have an inward infection that in time shall poison a household. God keep your Lordship from such serpents, and such as know you thoroughly doubt not of your Lord's constancy ; you are able to discern colours good from bad, and not unable to stand by yourself. I will never leave to honour your Lordship if you will licence me in this sort to love you, who, upon a sudden, end my tedious dream upon some hasty occasion.

The 8th of December, 1590.

Your Lordship's ever at command,

RICHARD TOPCLIFFE.

To the right honourable my singular good
Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury.

No. CCLII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 229.)

JOHN STANHOPE TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My Lord,

WITHIN few days after the Queen heard of my Lord your father's death, I heard her openly say she would send to you ere long ; how it was liked by some I know not, but ten days since she told me that one had been in hand with her to move her to condole with your Lordship (using that word) by letter, and sending some gentleman unto you, whereto she said she had answered that it was not her manner to send in that sort to any but to absolute Princes, of equal dignity with herself. I told her then that I thought her gracious manner had ever been in like cases, to choose persons to send such comfort as their estate required, and themselves were worthy of ; and I was sure it would be most comfortable, and for many respects acceptable to you, if it pleased her to witness to yourself and your country the account she made of you, by any such remembrance as should best please her to afford you. Whereupon she agreed on a form of a letter, such as she would write unto you, and sent by Sir John Wingfield ; which it pleased her to impart unto me, and withal to will Sir John to expect her pleasure. She fell in further speech of the Lieutenancy committed to my Lord your father, and by him executed to her good liking. I told her I thought my Lord's sickly estate and age committed the whole care to your Lordship. "Even so mean I to do again," quoth she, "for

Derbyshire and Nottingham; Stafford and Warwick," saith she, "I think my Lord of Essex affects, and I would," quoth she, "he was fit for them." For the justice of Eyre, it seems she had promised it to my Lord of Cumberland* when it fell, for so she saith ; but I do not believe he shall have it till his return from sea, who is going to the Indies, in concert with Sir Walter Raleigh. The letter to your Lordship again was deferred, though very earnestly solicited by Sir John Wingfield, and such means as he made. When I pressed her for it she said she would now dispatch it, for her hand had been so sore for a month she could not sign at all. I told her there was no order given for the writing of it, and said it should be most precious of her own hand ; but she thought her hand would not endure it, and so sent for Mr. Windebank† to direct him in sort as she would have it. God be thanked she is better in health this winter than I have seen her before. Her favour holdeth in reasonable good terms to the Earl of Essex.

I hope you shall hear that my cousin Robert Cecil shall be sworn Secretary before Christmas ; whether Mr. Wotton,‡ or who else, is yet uncer-

* George Clifford, third Earl of Cumberland of his family. He died in 1605.

† Thomas Windebank, a Clerk of the Signet ; father of Sir Francis Windebank, Secretary of State to Charles I. This gentleman, whom Elizabeth often admitted to her most secret Councils, happened to be present at the memorable dispute with the Earl of Essex in 1598, which ended in the manual chastisement of that nobleman.

‡ John Wotton, elder brother of the famous Sir Henry, and his equal in parts and accomplishments. Elizabeth knighted him soon after, and intended to have placed him among her ministers, but he died in the prime of his age, about the year 1592.

tain. Foreign news I send you, such as they are; and humbly pray you to retain him in your favour who will ever be most ready to do your Lordship service.

This 9th of December, Richmond.

JOHN STANHOPE.

To the right honourable his very good Lordship the Earl of Shrewsbury.

No. CCLIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 107.)

THE EARL OF HUNTINGDON
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

As I was sorry when I did have the first news of your honourable father's end, so, with others, I was glad to know how fit a person God in mercy hath appointed to succeed him. Your Lordship hath just cause to understand it to be the Lord's doing, and therefore I have no doubt but you will ever remember to give unto him that which is due, then shall God and his church be honoured and comforted, the Prince and commonwealth well served and profited by you, in such sort as best agreeth with a man of your place and calling, to your own great honour in earth, and your everlasting comfort in Heaven, which is the mark we all shoot at, and most miserable is he that at last misseth it. In this rude plain sort I am bold heartily to salute your Lordship, this bearer by his coming to me offering me the occasion; and so, resting at

your Lordship's devotion, I commit you to the protection of the Almighty.

At London, the 6th of January, 1590.

Your Lordship's assured cousin,

H. HUNTINGDON.*

No. CCLIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 257.)

JOHN STANHOPE TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

THIS bearer will not be kept from your Lordship ; what his errand is I know not, nor would have written by him but that he sweareth if he should come to your Lordship without my letter, you would say he were run away. On Sunday was se'night, Mr. Ratcliff, your Lordship's man, was with me to know what I heard of your Lordship's suits wherein my Lord of Buckhurst† should deal with the Queen, and, because my said Lord was then in Sussex, I, having that very day an opportunity, desired of her Majesty to know whether my Lord of Buckhurst had remembered your Lordship to her. She told me he had had little speech with her these three weeks ; so, entering into further speech, she seemed in manner content that you should have the

* Henry Hastings, third Earl of Huntingdon, and Knight of the Garter, who died in 1595. This letter, selected from many on the same subject, is inserted as an example of the style then used on such occasions.

† Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst. He had been a sort of favourite since the death of Leicester, his adversary, but held no public office of importance at this time. He succeeded Lord Burghley, as Treasurer.

Justiceship of the Forests. This last week my Lord of Buckhurst came to the Court, with whom I have spoken every day, and he telleth me in truth he has yet had no leisure. I told him what the Queen said to me, and he faithfully promiseth to do his uttermost, and will attend for the first opportunity, and I assure your Lordship seemeth to be most willing and ready to friend you, but this day he had done nothing, for within this hour I asked him the question.

Yesterday Mr. Edmund York returned from the French King, who is before Chartres with his army of twelve thousand of all sorts, and, having battered it while Mr. York was there, Mr. York thinks by this he hath the town, which will greatly dismay them of Paris, for that they are specially relieved thence and Orleans. If the Duke of Parma enter France presently, as it is thought, then the French King saith he shall not be able to abide in any certain place to make head against him for want of footmen, and therefore requireth of her Majesty 4000 foot, and he will meet them at their landing with 6000 good shot, 5000 Swiss, and betwixt 4000 and 5000 horse, and then be able to make head to the Duke of Parma, and to fight with him. The Viscount Turenne is not looked for in France till the latter end of June at the soonest with his Ruyters. They say there are no more forces yet landed in Britain, and it is hoped Sir John Norris, who is gone back into Holland, shall be in Britany before any more Spaniards come there; and the French King is con-

tented that the Queen shall put in such garrisons into any of his maritime towns there as she shall think good. The Duke Montmorency, being now Constable of France, is gone into Provence to make head against the Duke of Savoy's power, and hath sent to Arles to be received there as a Peer of France, Marshal, and Constable. The Duke of Epernon* hath done good service of late to the King in Picardy, where he remains about his charge with very good troops. Ostend is threatened to be besieged by the Duke of Parma before his going into France.

My Lord Thomas Howard† hath kissed her Majesty's hand, and is gone down to his ships, Sir Richard Grenfylde being his Vice-admiral, and they and their partners I assure your Lordship make a very goodly fleet; God send them good speed, and a safe return. My Lord of Cumberland is not

* John Louis de Nogaret de la Valette, Duke of Epernon, one of the favourites of Henry III. The French Historians contradict each other strangely in their accounts of this nobleman's character and conduct. The Duke of Sully, and others, hint that he had some foreknowledge of the detestable assassination of Henry the Fourth, while some writers celebrate him as a pattern of loyalty to that great Prince.

† Second son of Thomas Duke of Norfolk, and afterwards Lord Howard of Walden, in right of his mother. He now commanded a small squadron bound for the Azores, to intercept the Spanish Plate fleet, which he accordingly met with there, and engaged with an almost romantic bravery; nor was the valour of his Vice-admiral, Sir Richard Grenville (called here Grenfylde), who died of his wounds soon after the action, less remarkable. This nobleman, whose great genius fitted him for all employments, was appointed Lord Chamberlain, and afterwards Treasurer, by James I. who also created him Earl of Suffolk, and from him the present Earl is descended.

yet ready. Sir John Perrot and Sir Thomas Williams were this day committed to the Tower. Her Majesty, God be thanked, is in good health, and the most of your Lordship's good friends here. Now, since I have ventured to commit thus much news to a fool's carriage, I humbly pray your Lordship I may entreat you to present my humble duty to my very good Lady, to whom I will be ever ready to do my best service, and most glad to hear of both your good healths: and so, with my humble duty, rest now and ever at your Lordship's commandment.

From Greenwich, this 10th of March, 1590.

Your Lordship's most humbly,

JOHN STANHOPE.

P. S. Good my Lord if the fool Jenkin be drunk, which I fear, let him be whipt home.

*To the right honourable his very good Lordship
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCLV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 319.)

SIR HENRY LEE TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very honourable good Lord,
FROM the beginning my affection was too great, so since my care, to give you justly any occasion now to have your Lordship any way to doubt, or hang in suspense, of my love, duty, or well-meaning to you; for towards the meanest I have ever had a special care to do what becometh me, and shall I neglect, by reason, what I have learned (and dearly

paid for, in the place where I have spent many of my days and years) to your Lordship ; whom the world knows I have professed to love, and in myself have avowed to serve, and of right may farther challenge (by your courtesy) some more than general interest in me. Your father by his special favour tied me ; and shall I loose myself from his son, who the world hath great expectation of, and I persuade myself to have some interest in. It was never my meaning, and I know truth will never hinder your better love and judgment both of me and all the world. For all things your Lordship hath been wronged in I am most sorry for.

Two days past, as I came from Copthall, from the visiting of Mr. Vice-chamberlain, who hath been lately exceedingly troubled with the gout, I received your Lordship's letter ; and here to make some little pause is not amiss, considering how much you are beholden to him for his love and friendship, which he sticketh not to show at all times, and in all places, where either your name or occasions come in question ; a property not to be in all men, and (if your estate and calling be not farther privileged) much to be embraced in such a man—not least now, as the world goeth.

For matters of Court, all is as I last wrote. Her Majesty, God be ever thanked for, exceeding well ; no alteration, nor men better pleased that are laden with ambition, or expect better places ; an excellent time to qualify such intemperate heats.

This is only determined, that Sir Harry Unton,* a right proper young gentleman, is certainly appointed to go presently into France, for which he speedily provides. How the state of Sir William Kelly stands now in Bohemia cannot be unknown to you ; he is fast, and forthcoming, and not like to fly with golden wings, as to be fettered in chains of worse substance. Mr. Dyer is likewise stayed, by commandment keepeth his chamber without any indignity. The Emperor lately spoke with him, with the greatest allowance of his wisdom, temper, and discretion. Her Majesty hath sent one Webb into those parts, truly to know how those causes stand, and to procure Mr. Dyer's delivery. Greediness of gold is ever waited on with danger and many mishaps, with fears and unquiet rests ; a part of that too much wished-for metal creepeth from envy, and walketh at liberty, when the other are most without liberty, either of body or mind. From too much or too little, God ever defend me, and to walk in a mean, my good Lord, will be too great a privilege for your poor friend. My Lord North is departed the Court without being a Councillor, for which he hath lived in hope and great expectation ; some cross, out of doubt, to his great mind. The States in the Low Countries yet proceed well ; they lie now before Gruningen ;† their fortune I fear is

* Sir Henry Unton, a young gentleman of considerable abilities and excellent character, who was appointed to this embassy through the interest of the Earl of Essex, and died in France, in March, 1596. See many letters from him to the English ministers, during his residence there, in Murdin's Cecil Papers.

† Probably Groeningen, the capital of the province so called.

too good to continue so, and their over much quiet maketh me fear our overmuch trouble. Spain greatly provides both by sea and land ; Savoy gathers mightily, and Parma is neither weak nor rich : for want of pay his company is greatly dis-tempered, and, as it is here certainly believed, the King's Indian fleet is not yet returned, upon which good or evil success much of this summer's actions will depend. My Lord Thomas hath met with one of them, from which some part of his gain is sent home ; by that ship and others he certainly understands that they are not past.

Here is speedy provision for the sea ; six of her Majesty's, and many merchants are making ready. Here hath been speech of some blow should be given to Sir John Norris ; if there hath been any it is of no great force, but he is returned from Morlaix* to the town he first won, which is no great good sign. Her Majesty is out of temper. It is not known whether my Lord of Essex goeth into France with these four thousand new appointed or no. My Lord Borought† is sent for ; thought to have the leading of them ; yet, in my judgment my Lord of Essex will have his will, he is so fully bent to perform it.‡ The French King hath written

* Morlaix, a port of Brittany.

† Thomas Lord Borought, a military character, of some consequence at this time. He was employed in an embassy to Scotland in 1594, was afterwards Governor of the Brill, and in 1597, Lord Deputy of Ireland, in which post he died towards the end of that year, leaving his widow and children in very poor circumstances.

‡ The siege of Rouen was the object of this expedition, in which Essex commanded, as was expected. It was not conducted, however, with that spirit which suited his humour, and he returned full of disgust, and complaining that the French had deceived him.

very earnestly for him, and to her Majesty the French Ambassador here persuadeth as earnestly his stay at home, as one that may much more further his master by his presence here than his force there. There will be somewhat to do in every place ; God keep her Majesty safe, and we quiet.

I am an evil intelligencer, therefore I leave much of greater consequence to the performance of Mr. Brakenbury, who hath means to know more, and great care to leave no part of his love and duty unperformed. If here occurs ought else worth the advertising your Lordship before my departing this town, I will not fail thereof, nor in any other thing wherein I may do you service. So beseeching the Highest to send your Lordship and my Lady your heart's desire, I humbly take my leave.

From the Savoy, the 21st of June, 1591.

Your Lordship's humbly at command,

HENRY LEE.

To the right honourable his very good Lordship the Earl of Shrewsbury, at Worsop, or elsewhere.

No. CCLVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. M. fol. 378.)

SIR CHARLES CAVENDISH

TO THE COUNTESS OF SHREWSBURY. 1592.

Madam,

THE Frenchman by whom I should come to that salt of gold is gone to Cambridge, and I doubt will be a good time before his return ; but making relation to Mr. Dyer of your opinion thereof, he

exceedingly extolled it ; said he would once more help to four grains of it ; and, redoubling his words, he said “once or twice more ;” he saith the pearl should be taken fourteen days together, every day ten grains, and then to be left off six months ; with many other circumstances of the coral and the rest. Sir Walter Raleigh saith he hath but little left, but hath sent you two sorts. It is said he is determined to go into Ireland, for Sir Thomas Heneage shall be Vice-chamberlain and my Lord of Essex hath taken cold, and keepeth his chamber. Because I would have the box this night with you I cease from foreign news.

From Oatlands, this Tuesday, about one o'clock.
Your most assured loving brother to command,

CHARLES CAVENDISH.*

No. CCLVII.

(Cecil Papers.)

JAMES MORICE TO LORD BURGHLEY.

Right honourable, my very good Lord,
THAT I am no more hardly handled I impute, next unto God, to your honourable goodwill and favour ; for, although I am assured that the cause I took in hand is good and honest, yet I believe that

* Sir Charles Cavendish, Knight, third son to the Countess Dowager of Shrewsbury, by Sir William Cavendish of Hardwick. William, his son and heir, was created Duke of Newcastle, &c. and the Countess of Oxford, mother to the late Duchess Dowager of Portland, was the last of his line.

The date of this letter is not very material. I believe Sir Thomas Hencage was appointed Vice-chamberlain in 1592, and have therefore placed it in that year.

besides your Lordship, and that honourable person your son, I have never an honourable friend. But no marvel, for the best cause seldom find the most friends, especially having many, and those mighty enemies. I see no cause in my conscience to repent me of that I have done, nor to be dismayed, although grieved, by this my restraint of liberty; for I stand for the maintenance of the honour of God and of my Prince, and for the preservation of public justice, and the liberties of my country, against wrong and oppression, being well content, at her Majesty's good pleasure and commandment (whom I beseech God long to preserve in all princely felicity), to suffer and abide much more. But I had thought that the Judges Ecclesiastical, being charged in the great Counsel of the realm to be dishonourors of God and of her Majesty, violators and perverters of law and public justice, and wrong doers unto the liberties and freedoms of all her Majesty's subjects, by their extorted oaths, wrongful imprisonments, lawless subscriptions, and unjust absolutions, would rather have sought means to be cleared of this weighty accusation than to shroud themselves under the suppressing of the complaint, and shadow of my imprisonment.

There is fault found with me, that I, as a private person, preferred not my complaint to her Majesty. Surely, my Lord, your wisdom can conceive what a proper piece of work I had then made of that. The worst prison had been I think too good for me, since now (sustaining the person of a public counsellor of the realm, speaking for her



Majesty's prerogatives, which by other I am bound to assist and maintain) I cannot escape displeasure and restraint of liberty. Another fault, or error, is objected ; in that I preferred their causes before the matters delivered from her Majesty were determined. My good Lord, to have staid so long I verily think had been to come too late. Bills of assize of bread, shipping of fish, pleadings and such like, may be offered and received into the house, and no offence to her Majesty's royal commandment (being but as the tything of mint) ; but the great causes of the law and public justice may not be touched without offence. Well, my good Lord, be it so ; yet I hope her Majesty and you of her honourable Privy Counsel, will at length thoroughly consider of these things, lest, as where heretofore we prayed from the tyranny of the Bishop of Rome, Good Lord deliver us, we be compelled to say, From the tyranny of the Clergy of England, good Lord deliver us.

Pardon my plain speech, I humbly beseech your Honour, for it proceedeth from an upright heart and sound conscience, although in a weak and sickly body ; and by God's grace, while life doth last, which I hope now after so many cracks and crazes will not be long, I will not be ashamed in good and lawful sort to strive for the freedom of conscience, public justice, and the liberties of my country. And you, my good Lord, to whose hand the stern of this commonwealth is chiefly committed, I humbly beseech (as I doubt not but you do) graciously respect both me and the causes I have

preferred, and be a means to pacify and appease her Majesty's displeasure conceived against me her poor, yet faithful, servant and subject. And so, being sorry that I have troubled your Honour with so many words, I humbly take my leave, beseeching God to preserve your Lordship in all honour and felicity.

This 1st of March, 1592.

Her Majesty's humble prisoner, your Lordship's
most bounden;

JAMES MORICE.*

* James Morice, a lawyer of some eminence, and Attorney of the Court of Wards ; son and heir of William Morice, by Anne, daughter of —— Isaac, of Kent. He possessed considerable estates in Essex, which had been purchased by his father, particularly the manor of Chipping Ongar, where he had a mansion-house called Bansons, which formerly belonged to the family of Harpur. He was Recorder of Colchester, and represented that town in the parliaments of the 27th, 28th, 31st, and 35th of Elizabeth. On the 27th of February preceding the date of this letter he made a furious speech in the House of Commons against the conduct of the Bishops, and the Ecclesiastic Courts, and proposed two bills to remedy the evils of which he had complained. His imprisonment for this excess, which produced the spirited appeal before us, was probably of no long continuance, for in October following, we find the Earl of Essex, who was the great patron of the Presbyterians, recommending him to the Queen for the vacant office of Attorney General. "Her Majesty," says the Earl in one of his letters published by Doctor Birch, "acknowledged his gifts, but said his speaking against her "in such manner as he had done should be a bar against any preferment at her hands." Mr. Morice married Elizabeth, daughter of George Medleys, by whom he had a son, John, and three daughters, Mary, Elizabeth, and Anne. He died February 2nd, 1596, aged 48.

No. CCLVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 609.)

THE EARL OF DERBY TO THE EARL OF ESSEX.

I HAVE received your Lordship's letter, and though I may fail in the true knowledge of some words, yet I know I do not fail in the understanding of the matter. You write out of your bed ; laid there of a lameness got from your honourable labours, wherein, had the fitness of my present fortune sort-ed with my desires, I had accompanied you, but triumphs and burials are mere contraries. For her Majesty's pleasure of making a Chamberlain of Chester, her will must be my law, and so she make no other my disgrace will be the less.

I perceive your Lordship finds by some of your Lordship's servants in these parts that I have of late showed some dislike of some of them, which they seem to be sorry for, and I think it but a seeming ; willing by your means to recover my favour, which hardly by any means they can ; and yet, if by any, by your's before any. If I mistake not your Lordship's letter, you write that in the questions which fall out every day in this country, I may perhaps have cause to incline to you more than another. Truly, my Lord, before these ques-tions were, I did no less than show as much ; and yet your Lordship hath (let me speak, with your patience) retained some of those parties since they made questions with me, and with my father that is now dead ; but I know your judgment and noble humour is both too good and too great to press me for them, and assured I am you will leave me to

my own liking, and betwixt us make a difference. Your Lordship moves me that you may hear from me of what offences any of you shall commit towards me ; promising that he that doth not use all dutiful respect unto me must look for correction at your hands, and so you challenge that for your sake I should therefore use them with favour. Truly my Lord, you shall pardon me for complaining, since I can right myself ; and yet I take it a kind and honourable offer that you promise their reprobation, whose injuries time, by other mouths than mine, shall bring to your knowledge. I perceive your Lordship hears that my bailiff hath forbidden Latham, and other your servants, for coming on my ground, which makes you jealous that I think ill of them ; it is true he forbade them, and by my command, for hunting or hawking on my ground, nor is the matter anything but in guilty offending consciences ; your Lordship doth no less at Wanstead then keep your pleasures to yourself ; the Earl of Leicester, when he lived, did so at Kenelworth, the Lord Chancellor at Homeby ; all men of any note at their chiefest houses, and I mean to do so at Latham. Your Lordship wisheth that Sir John Savage, Sir Randal Brereton, Sir Edward Phitton, or any of them, may hear them. Truly, my Lord, I will not capitulate, or make a day of holding,* with fugitives from my house, who follow you for no love, but to be borne out against me ;

* i. e. A day of trial between party and party; as we say *holding a sessions*, *holding an assize*, &c.

in which I hope and believe your wit so good in your honour so great is resolved not to countenance against your kinsman (of like quality to yourself) men so badly humoured, so basely natured, and so vilely conditioned, as, being false to my ancestors, and others their former masters, cannot be true to you.

My Lord, in what we have in love professed to each other I call you to remembrance, and, as you love me, whose love may ten times more steed you than such under groom's service, favour them not. They will speak few truths, and, true it is, it were better they were buried than any jar should grow between us, which without wronging me in these kinds cannot be, though they covet it much ; but I know you too well, and I hope ere long you will know them so well as you will make them know me and themselves ; and thus I answer your Lordship's letter, and doubt not but you will answer the love I bear you, and the hope I have in you to make no equal account between them and me.

Your Lordship's faithful and affectionate loving friend and cousin,

FER. DERBY.*

From my house at Latham, Dec. 19th, 1593.

* Ferdinando Stanley, fifth Earl of Derby. This young nobleman's character hath passed entirely unnoticed. His letter abounds with good sense, high spirit, and sweetness of temper. An untimely death, the strange circumstances attending which will be fully described in a succeeding paper, undoubtedly defrauded him of a conspicuous situation in the history of his country. The Earl succeeded his father, to whose death he alludes in the beginning of his letter, on the 25th of September, and died April 16th following.

No. CCLIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 633.

THE EARL OF ESSEX TO THE EARL OF DERBY.

My hand is bad when it is at the best, and therefore when I wrote in pain and disease I could not but put you in pain to read it. My first letter was written to shew how unwillingly I would have any in my service that should deserve your disfavour, and to offer you the best course I could for your satisfaction, but I see they are not to be reconciled to your favour, and you will be, you say, righted by yourself; therefore I will leave you to your own way. There are some points in your Lordship's letter, which I cannot leave unanswered.

You say I retained some of them since they had question with your Lordship and your father; I know the time, but know not the questions; only Bolds, whom I then knew to be in your disfavour when Sir Thomas Gerard was hurt; but he was by Sir Thomas preferred to me long before, who is so much my friend as without question I should take any man upon his word; yet Bolds I had known in my Lord of Leicester's service, and never heard but well of him. You call them fugitives from your house. I know not why it is not lawful for any gentleman born a freeman to make his own choice of his master, or why your Lordship should think in that point to have more privilege than all men else, when I think that there is not any of your coat in England that hath all depending on him that have served his house. You say they follow me but to be borne out against you (wherein I see no ground of your opinion,) and protest them.

selves were causes that I sought your favour for them. You call me to remember what we professed in love to each other, and as I love you you say I must not favour them. They now are, and have been a good while, mine ; if I keep them I must in their good causes defend them, and if I discharge them I must see more fault in them than I see yet. If this be cause of jar the fault is yours, whose the first profession of friendship was I cannot but write plainly ; your Lordship left me your friend and shall find me so, if it be not with conditions of disadvantage, for which I will buy the affections of no man living. If your Lordship give no more cause of unkindness by being jealous of me, or bitter against my friends and servants than I will by bearing out any man that shall have your deserved ill-will, I shall be ever as I professed.

Hampton Court, January 17th, 1595.
Your Lordship's affectionate cousin and friend,

ESSEX.*

No. CCLX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 659.)

WILLIAM HAMOND TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right Honourable,
SIR Horatio,† coming late to town from the Court yesternight, sent for me this morning early, with

* Robert Devereux, second Earl of Essex of his house, Knight of the Garter, and at length Earl Marshal of England. This nobleman's letters are strongly expressive of that generous but impetuous temper which marked his character : his history is too well known to need a recital here, and an account of his family may be found in the peerages, under the article "Viscount Hereford." He was beheaded February, 25th, 1600.

† Sir Horatio Palavicini, according to his own spelling, Palavicino, a Genoese, who was much employed in money transactions

whom I was by break of day to confer with him about the pecuniary matter. He is sorry his affairs are so disordered, and his payment out of the Exchequer so uncertain, whereby he is hindered of furnishing your Lordship according to your expectation, and according to his own desire ; for he is thereby not only barred of possessing the money he purposed should serve your Honour's turn, but also utterly discouraged from dealing almost at all in pecuniary negotiations, lest the show of having much money should greatly prejudice his estate ; yet, that your Honour may see he is most willing all he can to pleasure you, though his froward fortune hath made him at this time altogether unable to stand you almost in any stead,

between Elizabeth and her neighbour states. Many letters from him, written in Italian, are preserved in the Talbot Papers. He is said to have been collector of the Pope's dues in England in the reign of Queen Mary, after whose death he suddenly abandoned the interest of the whore of Babylon, and, remaining in England, piously appropriated to his own use such portions of the latter lady's property as then happened to remain in his hands. We may infer from some hints in the letter before us that he was every way qualified for an exploit of this nature. It appears in Lord Burghley's notes of this reign that he was sent to the King of France in a public character in July 1590, and was married at Frankfort, probably to a foreigner, April 27th, 1591. A letter in the Sydney papers informs us that he died in July 1600, leaving a son, who was given in ward to Sir Robert Cecil. His widow was married soon after his death, to Sir Oliver Cromwell, K. B. the respectable uncle of the Usurper. He purchased the manor of Babraham, in Cambridgeshire, with its mansion-house, and built a villa in the Italian style, at Little Shelford, about two miles thence. These have shared the common fate of the family houses of that day. The former was pulled down and sold piecemeal, about twenty-five years since, by Mr. Jones, the father-in-law of Major General Adeane, the late owner of the estate of Babraham and member for the county ; the latter by a Mr. Finch.

he hath dealt with Mr. Meynard to aid him in the provision of this £3000 against the second of the next month. He finds him very backward to disburse any money upon bond, or any other security but only lands ; neither will he deal with lands in way of mortgage, for years, or any long time, but only for two or three months, or some such short time. If, therefore, it stand with your Honour's good liking to make a conveyance of Kingston* to Sir Horatio and his Lady, (for to himself alone he will not have any lands pass, for mortality's cause) after the rate of £7000, for that is the uttermost they value it at, and withal to pass it in this absolute sort ; that if the money thus laid out by them for your Honour's use be not repaid on May day next, that then they fully enjoy and possess the lands as their own ; but if repayment be made at the three months' end, then your Lordship to receive your lands back again, defraying all charges and considerations whatsoever are to be paid for procuring the money, and drawing the writings requisite for the finishing and ending of this business. If, I say, your Honour like of this course, and will write to any of your friends here resident, viz. Mr. Roger Mannors, or some such like gentleman, to entreat him to be bound for this £3000 till such time these covenants they require be performed,

* The manor of Kingston Lisle, in Berkshire, which came into the Talbot family, by the marriage of John, the first Earl of Shrewsbury, with Margaret, daughter of Richard Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick. Their eldest son was created Baron, and afterwards Viscount Lisle, but his only son dying without issue, those titles become extinct.

which they guess may easily be done in twelve or fourteen days, then will they take order the £3000 be in readiness, either just at the day, or within two days after. Mortality, and not doubt of your honourable dealing, moves them to be circumspect in not parting with so great a sum before they have some security. Sir Horatio saith he would desire no other security but your Honour and Sir Charles if it rested wholly on him, but because Mr. Meynard is drawn to this by him, he must demand such as will best content him. These conditions, perchance, may seem hard unto your Honour, but the times affording no better, they are the better to be borne. He saith, besides, that his surveyors have certified him £500 will be the most the lands will ever yield, yearly rent,* without racking and oppressions, which are no course for such mean men as they be to take; neither would Mr. Meynard, but for him, have agreed to give above ten thousand marks for the purchase. Thus much he willed me to write. I perceive, by him, it sticks still in his stomach his former conditions in passing the lands were refused. He saith though he had died, yet should his heir and executors have so been bound that by his death no danger should have ensued to your Lordship; if, therefore, your Honour be to be commended in being so wary in let-

* It appears here that fourteen years purchase was then the current value of landed property. It is entertaining to look back on the embarrassment of a young man of fashion, and the tricks of a money lender, at the distance of two centuries; and to find the latter, like Foot's Jew in the Minor, borrowing of a friend, to supply the necessities of his noble client.

ting go your lands he thinks it will be but small commendation to him so negligently to part from his money without any assurance ; he seeth others deal not so freely in their bargaining as he doth ; the sum he saith is great, and not to be disbursed upon my word that your honour will send security, especially your Lordship being so far off, for who can tell what may happen in the mean time before the assurance can be sent for. He talks not like himself since he joined himself with Mr. Meynard, neither was he wont to make those doubts and questions that now he doth. If your Honour can devise how to handle his Italian head (which is at this time full of fetches and devises) in giving him assurance, I dare assure your Lordship he is able of himself to furnish you, howsoever in policy he joins Mr. Meynard with him. The charge of a conveyance will be great, and I marvel he would urge it for so short a time, but I take it, it is in a mere good will he bears to Kingston, though he dissembled it. I was commanded by him to send this message in post haste. This messenger hath had of me fifty shillings for his charges down to your Lordship ; hitherward back again he is to be pleased and paid by your Honour. No more, but God be your Honour's protector.

January 26th, 1593.

Your Honour's most humble servant,
WILLIAM HAMOND.

No. CCLXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 210.)

Translat d'un Pasquelle semé par les rues à Rome, intitulé, " Le Caquefaguisme* doctrinal, et Confession de la Foi Espagnolle, ou, le Doctour Pantalon, et Zani, son Disciple ; enseignent que toute Foi, toute Espérance, doit ce fondée sur le très puissant Roi Philippe, et sur tous les Apôtres de la Sainte Ligue ; et qu'il ne faut faire comme les Bourbonnois, Anglois, et Protéstant, qui croient en Dieu seul, obéissant plutôt à Christ qu'au Pape. Composé à Rome, du Reverend Père Juvenal Bourget, Jesuite, et envoyé à tous les Seigneurs et Dames Anglêterre, par

" CHARLES CYPRIAN."

Pantalon. Zani, vu que j'ai soin de ton ame, et que je vois que tu ne fais non plus le signe de la croix de la main dextre, et que tu ne prends plus de l'eau bénite entrant en l'Eglise, et que tu ne dis non plus tes Pater-nostres au matin ; je voudrois bien savoir en quel Diable que tu crois.

Zani. Patron, quand j'ai au matin invocqué le Créateur de pastes, et salué la Sainte Vierge du flacon, et satisfait à mon très cher ventre, je mets toute ma foi, toute mon espérance, à la Sainte Ligue, et en ses bénits Apôtres, et je ne veux point faire comme les Bourbonnois et Anglois, qui croient en Dien seul.

Pantalon. Quelle bête est cette tienne Sainte Ligue, et quelles créatures sont ses Apôtres ?

Zani. Quelle bête, Diable ! C'est une très belle putaine, forcée des Princes, confessée et absolue

* A whimsical compound of *cquiet*, title-tattle, or gossip, and *faguin*, paltry; a parody of the word *catechisme*.

des religieux, payée des peuples ; et ses Apôtres sont Pape Sixte, sans penser en Christ; le Père d'Espagne, le fils de Savoy,* sans le Saint Esprit, la Maisen de Lorraine, avec la Maison de Guise, méchant France en chemise.

Pantalon. Recitez moi de grâce le symbole de ces Apôtres affin que nous croions que tu es devenu un grand docteur en l'Eglise des pastes.

Zani. Je crois en ce très puissant Roi d'Espagne, créateur de la terre neuve comme de la vielle, archidomteur des Lutheriens comme des Turcs, Seigneur de France comme d'Angleterre, Empereur et Monarque non tant du monde que de l'immonde: Je crois en son fils et fille, l'infant avec toute son infanterie : Je crois en ce très généreux son beau fils Général Bossû de Sauoye et de Piedmont, qui par sa rare vertu est monté au signe de Gemini avec l'Infant, et passé pour le signe de Capricorne : Je crois en ce généreux notre Messie le Duc de Parme, mort et enseveli, qui descendit aux enfers : Je crois en cette très grande et grosse teste (avec peu de philosophie) du Maine :* Je crois en la Sainte Eglise de Lorraine, autant Apostolique comme Chrétien.

Pantalon. En combien d'articles est parti ce symbole, et quelles sont ils ?

* Charles Emanuel I. Duke of Savoy, married Catherine, second daughter of Philip II. of Spain. He is afterwards called, on account probably of some deformity in his person, *Général Bossu de Sauoye et de Piedmont*.

† Charles de Lorraine, Duke de Mayenne, who had commanded the armies of the League. This Prince was reconciled to Henry IV. in 1596; before which time, and after the death of the Duke of Parma, in 1592, this singular piece was undoubtedly written.

Zani. En douze, à savoir, ambition, hypocrisie, envie, tyrannie, calumnie, trahison, simonie, sedition, ignorance, malice, témérité, et rébellion. Ceux-ci sont les plus dignes dégrés pour entrer en l'Eglise et Paradis de la Sainte Ligue et de ses Apôtres.

Pantalon. Quelle est l'intention de la Sainte Ligue et de ses Apôtres ?

Zani. L'intention est très bonne : imitant Dieu en sa création ; car aussi que le Créateur tout fait pour sa gloire, ceux la aussi font tout pour leur gloire.

Pantalon. Comment sont ils entrées en cette bénite entreprise, et comment sont ils entrées en France ?

Zani. Ils ont procédé comme les trois sages d'Orient, feignant de venir adorer Christ, et le planter en France, portants trois dons, à savoir, peste, guerre, et famine ; étants guidés par l'étoile de présomption et hypocrisie.

Pantalon. Combien et quel fruit a porté en France cette tienne Déesse appellée Ligue ?

Zani. Elle a concue une chimère, engendrée un scorpion ; a semée ivroie, a recuillie éspoins ; a composée un labyrinthe, a gaigné confusion ; a émue de bruit, a recue la rage ; a trouvée le doux commencement, et trouvera la fin amère.

Pantalon. Comment finira elle donc ?

Zani. Elle ira voir son cher père Lucifer et sa sœur Proserpina, avec tous ses parens de Lorraine, car elle a tant de faveur en ce pays là qu'ils la recevront plutôt en France.

No. CCLXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol 713.)

Indorsed, "Touching the Death of the EARL of DERBY."

April, 1594.

THE 5th of April, 1594, his Honour fell sick at Knowsley; on Saturday he returned to Latham, and, feeling himself worse, he sent to Chester, for one Doctor Case, who the week before had given physic to his Lady. On the Sunday his Honour had cast seven times before the Doctor's coming; the colour of his vomits was like soot or rusty iron, the substance gross and fatty, the quantity about seven pints, the smell not without some offence; his Honour's water, in colour, substance, and smell, not unlike his vomits. The same night he took a glister, which wrought five times. On Monday morning he took one drachm of rhubarb, and half an ounce of manna, in a draught of chicken broth, which wrought nine times. On Tuesday, because of his continual bleeding by vomits, he was most earnestly intreated to be let blood, yet by no means he could be persuaded thereunto, wherefore that day only fomentations, oils, and comfortable plaisters, were applied. On Wednesday, by the appointment of all his doctors, he took another glister, which wrought six times; and on Thursday he took another purge, which wrought with great ease nine times. The same night he took some diascordium, which somewhat staid his stomach from vomiting; the which never ceased, more or less, in all the time of his Honour's sickness. On Friday he took a Diaphorecion, or

a medicine to make him sweat ; but he could not sweat, although internally and externally all helps of art were used. That night his water staid on a sudden. On Saturday all means were used to provoke water, as a glister, drinks, fomentations, oils, poultices, plaisters, and syringes, but nothing prevailed ; on Sunday and Monday was used a catheter, which the chirurgeon often sucked, but no water appeared ; on Tuesday nature declined and his Honour most devoutly yielded his soul to God.

In all the time of his sickness he had fifty-two vomits and twenty-three stools. The original cause of all his diseases was thought by the Physicians to be his long and over violent exercise which his Honour took four days in the Easter week, wherein he vehemently distempered the whole state of his body. His Honour's diseases apparent were vomiting of rusty matter and blood, yellow jaundice, swelling of the spleen, melting of his fat, staying of his water, the hiccup. His Honour took Bezoar stone, and unicorn's horn.

A Brief of such Reasons and Conjectures which caused many to suppose his Honour to be bewitched.

I. On Thursday night, being the 4th of April, 1594, his Honour cried suddenly in his sleep, started out of his bed, sought his Lady, whom he thought in a dream to be dead.

II. On Friday, in his chamber at Knowsley, about six o'clock at night, there appeared a man, tall, as he thought, who twice crossed him swiftly,

and when he came to the place where he saw him, he fell sick.

III. The same night he dreamed that he was stabbed to the heart, and wounded in many other places of his body.

IV. There was found in my Lord's chamber, by one Mr. Hallsall, an image of wax, with a hair drawn through the belly thereof, as he reported upon his oath.

V. One Jane, a witch, demanded of one Mr. Goulborn, his Honour's Secretary, whether my Lord felt no pain in his lower parts, and whether as yet he made any water; and at that very time, as it is thought, his Honour's water staid.

VI. All physic wrought well, and yet he had no ease; his diseases were many, and his vomits violent, and yet his pulse ever remained good and perfect.

VII. He himself in all the time of sickness cried he was bewitched.

VIII. He fell into a trance twice, not able to stir head, hand, or foot, when he should have taken physic.

IX. In the end he cried out against witches and witchcraft, reposing his only hope of salvation upon the merits of his Blessed Saviour.

X. One of the witches having said well the Lord's Prayer, and being forced to call upon the name of Jesus, that if she had bewitched his Honour she might not be able to say it, again before the examiners she said all well, till she came to *Dimitte nobis debita nostra*, which by no means she

could say or repeat, although it was often rehearsed to her.

No. CCLXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 733.)

Indorsed, "A Copy of a Letter from the Lords of the Council to Mr. Justice BEAUMONT, and Mr. Baron EVANS, Justices of Assizes in the Northern Parts; signed by the LORD TRESURER, LORD of ESSEX, LORD ADMIRAL, LORD COBHAM, LORD CHAMBERLAIN, LORD BUCKHURST, MR. VICECHAMBERLAIN, SIR ROBERT CECIL. June, 1594."

AFTER our hearty commendations. Whereas one William Jones, gentleman, coming to a place where a man of his, and another gentleman, his friend, were violently set upon and assaulted by one Thomas Barber of Rotheram, and his accomplices, and seeing his said friend in danger of his life, did in his defence draw his rapier, and by ill-hap killed the said Barber, much to his grief, as we are credibly informed; for as much as the said Jones is a stranger in that country, and therefore likely to be overswayed in the matter when it shall be brought to trial, and that we are informed that the former part of his life was never contentious or quarrelsome, and that there are such worthy parts in the gentleman as deserve regard of them, these shall be to pray you very earnestly to patronize his cause so far forth as to see that in the empanelling of the jury, or any other ways he be not injured; and in case the verdict go against him, whereby you must be driven to give judgment on his life, yet that you will reprieve him for a convenient time, that her Majesty may, if it please her,

extend her gracious favour to him. And so fare you well.

No. CCLXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 186.)

Indorsed, "A Copy of a Letter written by me, and sent by two of my Servants, the superscription whereof was thus—To my Brother MR. EDWARD TALBOT. The Messengers, THOMAS COOK, CHARLES PERSAL, Gents."*

WHEREAS I understand that you have said that I have made a fraudulent lease, or deed, or both, I say that you have therein lied in your throat, and shall do so as often as you shall so say or think. If herewith you shall find yourself aggrieved (in such sort as in the honour of your birth you ought) I will not fail to be found, with two gentlemen only, or with more or fewer, and in such an indifferent place, on such a day and hour, and with such weapons and garments, as these two my servants shall conclude with you ; and, further, I could wish you would bring so many of my known enemies as I could be glad to encounter with gentlemen of like quality and number, hearing that you are lately combined with some of them.

Written at Sheffield Castle, June 22nd, 1694.

GILBERT SHREWSBURY.

The instructions to my two servants were these ;

First, That they should deliver my letter unto him, and then that they should accept of any reasonable appointment by him, of place, time, com-

* The motives to the curious correspondence which follows are more fully explained in letters of the 13th of July from the Earl of Shrewsbury to the Earl of Essex and the Lord Admiral.

pany and furniture ; but, if he shall refuse to appoint any, then to propound unto him these following.

The company to be two gentlemen apiece.

The furniture ; rapier, dagger, a short gauntlet, and no other weapons ; ordinary garments, and no other.

The place, one mile south from Doncaster, which is from his house at Pomfret eleven miles, and from Worksop, whence I shall come, twelve miles.

The day, Wednesday the 26th of June at 9 o'clock in the forenoon.

And if he will neither send me any appointment, nor like of these propositions, then tell him that, forasmuch as I hear that he means to go towards Northumberland on Tuesday next, that I mean, God willing, to be in the place aforesaid, accompanied only with six gentlemen, on Monday next at 11 o'clock forenoon.

GILBERT SHREWSBURY.

No. CCLXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 188.)

EDWARD TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

WHERE your Lordship writeth you understand I should say you have made a fraudulent lease, or deed, or both, and thereupon you give me undeserved and unfit words, and also a challenge to fight with you, (a course little expected by me to proceed from a man of your place and wisdom) so do I plainly answer your letter thus. First, my

words were these ; that if your Lordship had made a lease whereby the freehold were put of yourself, and then you suffer recoveries to the prejudice of the entail, wherein I am the next yourself in remainder, that such a lease, to such a purpose, my counsel thought would prove fraudulent ; now if any have given you to understand otherwise, I desire to know the man, that I may call him to such an account as best beseems me. How far it pleaseth you to dislike of these words, so far must I be sorry that you now will urge them into extremities ; and yet must and will ever justify in honourable sort what I have spoken. Secondly, as touching your challenge, I flatly refuse it ; many good and sound respects (which it seemeth you have forgotten) so moving me ; and will defend and prosecute my honour and causes in fitting and orderly manner, which course I hold the best betwixt you and me. Lastly, your Lordship doth mistake, as in the rest, that I should combine myself with your known enemies ; for neither have I done so, to my willing, neither do I know by whom you mean ; and so I cease.

From Pontefract, June 23rd, 1594.

Your brother,

EDWARD TALBOT.

*To the right honourable, my brother, the Earl
of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCLXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 187.)

Superscribed, "The Copy of my second Letter, in answer to his of the 23rd of June, 1594."

WHEREAS you write that I have given you a challenge to fight with you, I answer that you therein lie, for I only gave you the lie in your throat; and where you say it to be a course little expected by you to proceed from a man of my place and wisdom, you shew your simplicity in conceiving that such men should be insensible of injuries. For the next point, I suppose fear makes you shroud yourself under the opinion of your counsel learned in the law. I was exceeding loth to be drawn by you unto this height, and now am somewhat troubled to see by your letter that you take a lie in the throat for a challenge; as though fear should make you take black for white, and flatly to refuse a challenge before it be given. To conclude, whereas you write I do mistake that you should combine yourself with my known enemies, therein you do also lie; for I am sure I heard so much, and that was all I wrote thereof, and therefore can be no mistake in me; and, having here again laid divers lies justly upon you, in expectation of more honourable effects in you, I will be in readiness as these my servants shall acquaint you.

Written at Worksop, the 23rd of June, 1594.

GILB. SHREWSBURY.

This, under, was also delivered to him by my two servants, first by word, and after by writing under their hands, after he had refused all that was moved unto him, viz.

Sir,

Our Lord will be this present day at the fore-named place at eleven o'clock, with not above seven persons in his company, and there will stay until one o'clock, and no longer, except he understand from you of your resolution to meet him there, and then will he stay till such time as you shall set down for your coming thither.

TH. COOKE. CH. PERSALL.

Lastly, he sent me his second letter, dated the 24th of June.

No. CCLXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 190.)

EDWARD TALBOT TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

It seemeth to me, as well by your first as second letters that your Lordship is very desirous and willing to urge a quarrel against me ; and that every report, how untrue soever, which may be told unto you, hath that free passage and credit with your Lordship that you can be well pleased to hold them for good, before any question either be demanded, or matter examined, wherewith I must by you be charged. How I could, or would, digest these things at the hands of any other than yourself, my actions no ways degenerate from my birth, shall I hope gave both sufficient testimony to the world, and discharge to my reputation. And, where you say I write that you gave me a challenge to fight with you ; I do still conceive that in substance it is no less, and therein will refer me to your letter, together with the instructions which

your servants delivered me. Neither do I hold or take it for a disgrace to receive the lie at your hands, seeing I have ever for flat resolution set down never to enter into hostilities with your own person. For my law matters, which are great, and greater than ordinary, I must confess I am willing to shroud myself under the opinion of my learned counsel, but to think, as you write, that I either do or will deny for fear what I have at any time spoken, shall well be found, whensoever I shall have just cause of action against any of like quality to myself, to be by you more hardly censured than you have reason. Let this, therefore, satisfy your Lordship for conclusion, that as ever I will be ready to defend my person and reputation against whosoever shall offer me violence, so can I never consent, by private appointment, to give you meeting in any hostile manner or degree; and so I leave you.

From Pontefract, this 24th of June, 1594.

Your Lordship's brother,

EDWARD TALBOT.

To my brother, the Earl of Shrewsbury.

No. CCLXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 192.)

THE EARL OF ESSEX
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. 1594.

My Lord,

I SEND this bearer of purpose to you, and with this letter of mine another of my Lord Admiral's. What is in his letter I know not, but I know he

writes upon the same ground that I do. The ground is this, complaints have been made to the Queen of your proceedings with your brother Edward Talbot. Your letters have been sent up, I mean the originals, and the copies of his to you. They note your Lordship's urging of quarrel, his avoiding of it. They persuade the Queen to think you are violent, which they tell her is dangerous in great men. They shew her his meekness and Christian patience, to give him advantage if any matter happen of either side, I mean by friends or servants. The Queen hath told and shewed me all, and willed me to advise you from these courses; and this is all the story of this matter. I know my Lord Shrewsbury too well to offer him counsel, of 27 years' old ;* but I will act as a watchman for you in your absence; tell you that I discover a great jollity in some of your enemies upon this occasion. They think that either you will proceed so far as you will give yourself disadvantage, or else that this day will make the Queen alienated from you; and therefore you see you have cause to stand upon your guard. I pray you, for my satisfaction, write freely, and as freely dispose my credit, fortune, and hand, to serve you with each; for when I see you do not so I will be less kind to you than I am. I wish to you as to myself, and rest your Lordship's most affectionate cousin and true friend,

ESSEX.

Greenwich, this 7th of July.

* The Earl of Essex's age at this time.

I desire to have my service commended to your noble Lady, and my love to Sir Charles.

To the right honourable my very good Lord and cousin, the Earl of Shrewsbury.

No. CCLXIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 200.)

LORD HOWARD

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. 1594.

My most honoured good Lord,

It pleased your Lordship in your honourable love to me, at your last being here at the Court, to acquaint me with the differences betwixt your Lordship and your brother, and of the course they did hold of unkind dealing towards you; now, my honourable Lord, I do hear that of late it hath proceeded on so far, and the unkindness is grown so great betwixt your Lordship and your brother, as that your Lordship hath challenged him to the field. My honourable Lord, your most honourable favour and love that you have always shewed unto me doth make me, in the abundance of my love and affection to you, presume to write unto you my opinion. How true this report is I know not, and I do hope and persuade myself that it is not so; but if, in the want of their discretion, they have any ways either of them forgotten themselves, yet my Lord, in your wisdom remember yourself, and let not any of their follies (in what sort so ever it be, not touching you in the honour of your person, which they nor any of them dare in word or deed ever attempt) make your Lordship to venture the

touch, and the endangering of the overthrow of your most noble and worthy house. I protest before the Lord I hold your Honour so dear, and I do love you and it is so much, and to the maintaining of it, as that I would set my foot by yonrs to venture my blood and life with any ; but in this case of nature, betwixt brothers, there can be no honour gotten or saved, for in the world it will never come to that question ; and what danger may grow by it is much, for let it be that neither of your own blood should be touched, which God defend there should, yet if any of the partakers should be slain, how dangerous a thing it would be I leave to your Lordship's judgment ; and yet I know where unkindness hath thus been betwixt brethren, their furies hath been so great as they have passed the sense and reason so far of men as, without the use of like reasonable men, it hath been the loss of both lives. The Lord defend that ever this should happen to so honourable a person, and such a house as yours is.

My honourable Lord, I hope, and doubt not, but you will take this my bold writing even as it is, truly from the abundance of my love and affection to you ; and how much the grief would be unto me, and as many as doth love you, that your enemies should have any such advantage of you as they would be glad to have by this course, yourself can best judge. My comfort is yet that this is but false report ; but, howsoever it be, I know and presume your Lordship will take this from me as from your most assured true affectionate friend,

yea even from him that loveth you and your honour as himself. And so, remembering my humble service unto my honourable Lady, I leave to trouble you, but never leave to love and honour you both. God bless you both, and your's, under his protection.

Your Lordship's assured true friend, and ever ready to be commanded,

C. HOWARD.

Greenwich, this 7th of July.

To the right honourable and my especial good Lord, the Earl of Shrewsbury.

No. CCLXX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 206.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD HOWARD.

My dear noble Lord,

YOUR letter, which I received by my Lord of Essex's footman, this bearer, is so full of tender respect of my good, and of grave and prudent counsel, as if I never had had due proof before of your honourable and affectionate love to me, the same would have fully persuaded me thereof. What hath passed betwixt my brother Edward T. and me of late, I have appointed my servant Kidman to shew unto you. The causes that hath urged me to this extremity are so many as the recital of them in particular would contain a larger discourse than were fit to trouble your Lordship with at this time; yet these briefly—His wicked faithbreaking with me in all that he infinitely protested unto me in the lifetime of my father; his vain brags

and false reports spread abroad by his own mouth throughout Northumberland and Yorkshire in Lent last, that I had forfeited my present estate to him in all the lands I have in possession at this day, by my cutting off, or going about it, the intail made by my father; and lately, his report that a lease which I made of all my lands was fraudulent; with my certain knowledge of a general opinion that is conceived in these parts, that what injuries soever, or by whomsoever, shall be offered unto me will and must be borne. These, with others, did so stir me that I could not forbear to do as I did, esteeming his injuries and indignities to me to be greater (and further I confess they proved unto me) than if the same had been done by any other. It were sufficient for them to proceed by ordinary course of law, and not to let their tongues run at random, without all care of truth, discretion, or reason.

Your Lordship may see by his gentle answers what small cause of doubt there is of any mischief to happen betwixt ourselves, so as what honour might be won or saved thereby is not like to come in question; but the course hath been ever held an honourable way for trials of truths, without exception to blood or kindred, that ever I heard of. As for our friends and servants, I assure your Lordship for mine I both have and will take all the care that lieth in me that none of them shall meddle in any sort therein, unless ourselves be present actors. What constructions may be made by some of my enemies I know not; but I hope your Lordship

will favour me with your best conceit and interpretation. This story is so unpleasant as I am loth to hold your Lordship any longer therewith ; I will therefore here leave it, taking, I protest, in as kind part your Lordship's faithful affection and favour unto me as you can imagine, and as great comfort and contentment I take therein. In all things I wish to your Lordship as I do myself, and better can I not to any. My wife thanks your Lordship greatly for your favourable remembrance of her, and desires to be remembered to your Lordship and my Lady, your wife, in all affectionate goodwill, and so I beseech your Lordship, do the like from me also to her.

At Worksop, July 13th, 1594.

Your Lordship's most faithful and affectionate true friend.

No. CCLXXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 204.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY
TO THE EARL OF ESSEX.*

My very good Lord,

I DO now write to you of a matter which of all others I wish might have been handled amongst ourselves, whom it only concerns, but in such sort have my peevish brothers used it as it is now made common ; and though your Lordship have some notice thereof, by means, as it seems, of their parts, yet my servant Kidman shall deliver unto you true

* Indorsed, "A copy of a letter written to my Lord of Essex, in answer of one he wrote to me of that matter, July 13, 1594."

copies of all my proceedings, and shew you the originals of my brother his answers unto me, lest they should falsify any thing, whom I find false and malicious in everything ; and, since it is by them discovered, I will also lay open unto your Lordship the occasions.

In my father's life time both my younger brothers, by most vile means, did not only procure unto themselves a greater portion of my father's lands than he left to my present possession (all which, in effect, they may freely dispose of at their pleasure) but also caused the most of that which descended to me to be so intangled with entails and such conditions of forfeiture, as have not been seen, and can hardly be performed ; and when soever my father's unkindness against me lessened then my brother Edward always used the matter so as my father was verily persuaded that he would be at my devotion, and that he would ever help me to work mine own will ; and he hath very often and especially during the time of my brother Henry's greatest credit with my father, in a dissembling shew of extraordinary kindness, voluntarily used many vehement oaths and deep protestations to secure me in that behalf, and to assure me that he would never enjoy anything from my father which should not content me ; ever wishing me to take no other care but how I might work my desires by his joining with me in all things without exceptions ; laying heavy curses upon himself if he did not take part with me in making all those things void wherein he should be joined. My father

being dead, the deep oaths which they both took of their griefs that they had so much forgot themselves heretofore towards me, and the vows and protestations that they made that what they had should be at my devotion, drew me to conceive that I should thenceforth find kindness and comfort in them ; and, also, to the great prejudice of my estate, to compound unadvisedly with them for the executorship, and other things of great moment, at such a rate as I protest upon my soul and honour I lost, as I verily think £10,000 by that bargain, at the least. All this notwithstanding, and that I have suffered them to enjoy all that they have without interruption, yet they have dealt directly contrary to all these their oaths and protestations ; for, first, when I moved them to perform on their part that which we agreed on after our father's death, my brother Edward flatly refused, and my brother Henry, making some show of forwardness thereto, was withdrawn by my brother Edward, and might not do it, as he confessed, without Edward's consent, in respect of a secret combination betwixt them ; and, as soon as they understood of some recoveries by me acknowledged, they were not only content by lawful and ordinary courses to preserve their estates in remainder after me, but Edward would needs make solemn, though secret, entries hard by my nose, and seal a lease on the ground for the trial of my forfeiture, and use all other means most spitefully to dispossess me of all those lands which I now possess. Neither would all this yet satisfy his cankered mind, but he

must also use the liberty of his speech almost in all companies ; braving me with public reports of my cutting off the entail made by my father ; of my forfeiture of my present estate in all my lands to the next in remainder, which was himself ; and of the stirs that he would make against me ; whereupon I sent him word of his rash and false reports, letting him understand that if he forbear not to utter the like hereafter, it touched me so deeply that I could not but take it in the highest degree of unkindness, and so would. Not long after, he and his brother coming to me in London, I said the very same unto them both, in the hearing of my uncle Roger Manners, and Sir Charles Cavendish, wishing that hereafter they would forbear the like reports ; since which time my brother Edward hath continued his accustomed slanderous speeches dishonouring me further with surmises of deceitful and fraudulent deeds and devises made and used by me, with many other unkind courses which were too long to trouble your Lordship with.

Now that I have imparted unto you at large my just occasions and reasons to proceed with him as I have done, I do charge you in the sense of your own honour and feeling of worldly things, not as a saint but as a man, weigh these injuries, and forget not the former villainies I have borne of others, which have encouraged all my foes, and brought this general conceit into men's minds, that whatsoever can be offered me, by whom, or how intolerable soever, yet will and must it be endured by me ; weigh these things I say rightly, and I will

nothing doubt of your censure. I presume that the whole course of my life, and as many as have well known me, will free me from being of a quarrelsome disposition, which my heart detesteth; yet not so that I will be branded with a foul note of senseless sottishness; and, howsoever mine enemies, in the pride of their wits, and in the jollity of their present fortunes, do descant upon my actions, as to call my desire that a multitude oppressed should be relieved popularity;* to term it covetousness and oppression when I raise on my own lands anything near the rate that others use, towards payment of my debts, and to my own maintenance; and to christen my just defence of my honour, under this intolerable provocation, Violence; yet I will ever be assured firmly to hold this ground—ever to be true to my Queen, my country, my friends, and myself; and will always not only hazard, but lose my life, rather than endure my allegiance to my Sovereign, or my honour and reputation in the world, to be touched; and, as I doubt not but my brother's weak and base refusal in honourable sort to justify himself shall by my enemies be termed patience, so do I verily think that my peaceable sustaining his misuses would have been urged as a strong argument of disability to do her Majesty any good or honourable service, for he who is senseless of his own reputation will never be forward in any public service.

* Alluding to his violent opposition against certain encroachments of Sir Thomas Stanhope, and others, on the fishery of the Trent, abundance of papers relating to which may be found in Volume H. of the Talbot MSS.

I hope of your best constructions in these things, if they come to her most royal Majesty's ears ; but my greater hope is in her own most clear and princely judgment in points of honour, whereof she can best judge, for that she is endued with most ; but this is no matter of state, and therefore needless for her to know, or to think on if she did. Here I will end, and wish you all the honour that your own heart desireth, and so rest your Lordship's most faithful true friend and cousin.

G. SH.

No. CCLXXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 763.)

ROGER MANNERS TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My Lord,

THIS bearer, Mr. Brassbridge, can inform your Lordship what is done touching the redeeming of my cousin John Leek's land, for the relief of my cousin Markham, and for aught I can perceive there will be little good done before your Lordship's coming to London, by whose presence and countenance this matter I hope will take better effect. For myself, here is my Lord of Rutland, Mr. Capel and his wife, &c. Here we hunt, hawk, and be merry. Upon Monday we go to my Lord Willoughby's, and tarry there till Wednesday ; and then to Belvoir ; and so upon Saturday hither again, to the end of grass time. But now I must tell you our journey to Belvoir is something doubted ; for that her Majesty taketh evil the sudden

marriage of my Lady Bridget,* and, as I am informed, mindeth presently to send for her, to be in a sort committed. Mr. Tyrwhit is gone already to the Court, and by this time I think hath received judgment. Thus a good matter is marred with evil handling ; but where youth and women bear the sway, and deal without advice, such accidents commonly happen. For myself, I am glad I was no way privy to their actions, and so can but wish all well. Now, my Lord, I beseech your Lordship to recommend my duty to my honourable good Lady, and hold me still in your favour, which I will ever deserve.

From Uffington, this last of August, 1594.

Your Lordship's assured to command,

ROGER MANNERS.†

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury, these be d.d.*

No. CCLXXIII1.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 222.)

ANTHONY ASHLEY
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My good Lord,

THOUGH my return from these parts must be very speedy, yet, in my duty, I have thought good to let your Lordship understand how the world goeth

* Lady Bridget Manners, sister to the Earl of Rutland, married Robert Tyrwhit, of Ketilby in Lincolnshire, Esquire. See more of their stolen match in a subsequent letter from Mr. Manners.

† Roger Manners, of Uffington in Lincolnshire, third son of Thomas, first Earl of Rutland ; great uncle to the Earl mentioned

when I left the Court on the second of this month. In Ireland no doubt your Lordship hath understood that our forces sent to the succour of the fort of Inniskillin were defeated, about 60 slain, as many hurt, and two ensigns taken ; whereby the Lord Deputy is forced to go in person to the relief of that place.

Immediately upon the delivery of the sword to this Deputy,* being the eleventh of the last month, the Earl of Tyrone† voluntarily came in, and made this submission enclosed, which, because it is very effectually penned, and, of consequence, worthy understanding, I have sent your Lordship, praying that, after the perusal, you would vouchsafe to return it enclosed in some of your's, lest unhappily coming to light, the hand may work my hurt ; though of yourself I know you are honourably careful to burn such letters as I write unto you, though they be not of such matter as, upon rightful understanding, may prejudice. After the sub-

here ; and uncle to the Earl of Shrewsbury, his sister Gertrude having been the first wife of Earl George. He was one of the Esquires for the Body to Queen Elizabeth, and seems, by the many applications which I find in these papers were made through the channel of his interest for places, pensions, &c. to have been highly in her favour. The records of the university of Cambridge inform us that he was a liberal benefactor to Corpus Christi College, to which he gave four scholarships, and a considerable sum towards repairing and ornamenting its chapel.

* Sir William Russell, youngest son of Francis, second Earl of Bedford. He succeeded Sir William Fitzwilliams.

+ Hugh, Nephew of Shan O'Neil, the great Irish rebel. He had been created Earl of Tyrone by Queen Elizabeth. He revolted again soon after this submission, and was an incessant plague during the remainder of her reign.

mission thus made, he was presently dismissed and employed about some services for that state, wherein there is good hope he will prevail. It is advertised that already he hath a desire to come over into England, which must needs be well taken. Sir Walter Raleigh is in good hope to return into grace,* and is now purposely at London, which giveth cause of discontentment to some other.† I had thought to have attended on your Lordship in person, had my business permitted, which (with that I understand you will be shortly at London, to make your long abode) I trust shall excuse me. If your Lordship can spare any venison out of the parks that were this year freed from restraint about Needwood, our cheer will be the better at my father's, and in my journey homewards, which I purpose to undertake about Wednesday or Thursday next. And so, most desirous to do your Lordship my best service, I humbly take leave.

From Okeover, September 8th, 1594.

Your Honourable good Lordship's humbly
at commandment,

A. ASHLEY.‡

*To the right honourable my singular good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

* He had been in disfavour for the last two years, and was for a time imprisoned in the Tower, on account of an intrigue with Mrs. Elizabeth Throckmorton, a daughter of Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, and one of the Queen's Maids of Honour, whom he afterwards married.

† Meaning Essex.

‡ Anthony Ashley, son of Anthony Ashley, of Damerham in the county of Wilts, by Dorothy, daughter of John Lyte, of Lyte's

No. CCLXXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 787.)

ROGER MANNERS TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

I most humbly thank your Lordship and my Lady for this fat stag, which is very well baked, but that the pasties be so great that I have no dish will hold them. Mr. Bucknal thanketh your Lordship for the stag's head, which he is contented shall be placed on his head whensoever he doth marry ; in the mean time he will place it not in the stable, but upon the entry of his house, in stead of a porter, and so he saith it shall be a monument.

Touching the matter of my Lady Bridget's marriage, her Majesty taketh it for a great offence, and so, as I hear, she mindeth to punish ; accord-

Carey, in Somersetshire. He owed his introduction into public life to the Earl of Essex, under whom he was Secretary to the Council of War in the expedition to Cadiz, and behaved himself there, as the Lord Admiral wrote to Lord Hunsdon, both wisely and valiantly. He was one of the Knights made by the Earl immediately after that action, of which he brought the first intelligence to Court, but is said to have used some treachery in his private account of it to the Queen, depreciating the merit of Essex's conduct, in order to exalt that of his great adversary Raleigh. It is certain, however, that from this time he became one of the Earl's most bitter enemies, and his promotion was consequently obstructed ; nor had he better fortune in the following reign, though he continued a regular attendant at Court. Sir Anthony Welden's scandalous pamphlet, the only book of that time in which I find his name, informs us that James furnished him, in his old age, with a young wife from Buckingham's kindred, and adds to that trifling piece of intelligence a charge against his character which I do not choose to repeat. His first wife was Jane, daughter and heir of Philip Okeover, of Okeover in Staffordshire, by whom he had an only child, Anne, who married Sir John Cooper, of Rockburn in Somersetshire, from whom the Earl of Shaftesbury is descended. Sir Anthony Ashley died January 13, 1628.

ing to her pleasure *flat*. I am now not discontented that my credit is no greater with the Countess, unless her Ladyship would be better advised : she hath almost marred a good cause with evil handling ; and, truly, she never vouchsafed to send to me in that cause, nor once to speak to me thereof when I was last with her Ladyship, so as I am ignorant what course she holdeth therein ; and yet my Lady Bridget, in her journey to my Lady of Bedford's, did vouchsafe to take a lodging in this poor cottage, where she was to me very welcome, and when it shall please them to command me, I shall be ready to do them service. I thank your Lordship for your Irish news. I am so long a countryman as I am clean forgotten in Court, and seldom hear thence, wherewith I am nothing displeased ; and yet about a fortnight hence I mind to go towards London, and to go by my Lady of Bedford's, to see my Lady Bridget. Thus, recommending my duty to your Lordship, and my honourable good Lady, I wish to both all honour and contention.

At Uffington, September 20th, 1594.

Your Lordship's most assured to be commanded,
ROGER MANNERS.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord the
Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCLXXV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 791.)

DOCTOR JOHN BENET
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable, and my special good Lord,
I DOUBT not but your Lordship hath long since
been advertised of the death of the most reverend
Archbishop of York ;* by means whereof the see
and province of York, yea, the church of England
and by consequence the whole church of God, hath
received no small loss ; your Lordship is bereaved
of a most loving and fast friend ; myself am de-
prived of a singular and most gracious patron, my
chief support and countenance in this world. His
Grace requested your good Lordship to be one of
the overseers of his testament, with a small token
of remembrance, and appointed myself one of his
executors, unworthy, and most unhappy in that
respect ; for, on the one side, his goods (for aught
I know, or yet can find, God is my witness) will
not suffice to bury him answerable to his calling,
pay his debts, and discharge those small legacies
which he disposed by will, nor amount near to that
proportion ; so as, if I take the business in hand, I
shall be sure of a most troublesome, thankless, and
reproachful office. His charge in hospitality, his

* John Piers, translated from Salisbury to York in 1588. This Prelate's biographers speak highly of his exemplary conduct, and not contemptuously of his learning ; but his poverty, that frightful feature of the primitive church, hath escaped their observation. He died unmarried, at Bishopsthorpe, Sept. 28, 1594, and was buried in York Cathedral, in a chapel, on the east side of which is a small neat monument, erected to his memory, as the inscription states, by this Doctor Benet.

charity to the poor, his natural kindness to his poor kindred, his careless regard ever of worldly matters, will, I hope, make this unfortunate event not seem strange to discreet and well affected persons, although, which is my exceeding great grief, it will be in some sort scandalous to the world, and hardly escape the sharp censures of some men. On the other side, if I, having been brought up, advanced, and countenanced by him while he lived, shall now refuse to undertake this burthen when he is dead, of performing his last will and charge, the world will accuse me (and I shall not altogether excuse me to myself) of ingratitude, which of all vices I most detest. Good my Lord, for God's cause, and the honourable estimation your good Lordship had of him while he lived, and his unfeigned love of your Honour again, vouchsafe to advise and direct me what I shall do, and how I shall carry myself in this unlucky action ; and let me, I most humbly beseech your Lordship, find your lawful favour and honourable countenance in my courses, so far forth as shall stand with honest duty ; which I do the more confidently hope for, because I have so often, and so many ways, without any desert of mine, received exceeding great courtesy and benefits at your Lordship's hands already ; and, even so, expecting some comfort from your Lordship in this my comfortless estate, and humbly craving pardon for my boldness in writing, I recommend in my prayers to God your Lordship, and my special good Lady, and vow my

best service, while I live, to be at both your Honour's commandment.

At York, this first of October, 1594.

JOHN BENET.*

*To the right honourable and my special good
Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCLXXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 841.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY,
TO THE JUSTICES OF DERBYSHIRE.

AFTER my very hearty commendations. Your letters of the 29th of January came not to my hands until the third day of this present March, which was very long in coming, considering the matter contained therein required more speed ; but, immediately upon the receipt thereof, I sent to the

* John Benet, Doctor of Laws, Prebendary of Langtoft, in the church of York, and Vicar General in Spiritualities to the Archbishop; knighted in the following reign, and appointed Chancellor to Anne of Denmark, and a Judge of the Prerogative Court of Canterbury. He was a Commissioner in 1604, to treat of the union then projected with Scotland, and, in 1617, was sent to Brussels, to expostulate with the Archduke concerning a fashionable libel on the conduct of James and his Court, which had lately been published in that city, and to require that the author might be punished ; but the suspected person, Erycius Puteanus, was suffered to escape before Benet arrived. In 1621 certain malpractices were detected in his judicial conduct, and he was committed to the custody of the Sheriffs of London, and afterwards to prison ; fined £ 20,000 and deprived of his offices. He died in indigence and obscurity, in the parish of Christchurch in Southwark, in 1627.

Sir John Benet married Anne, daughter of Christopher Weekes, of Salisbury, and had by her three sons ; John ; Thomas, L.L.D. and a Master in Chancery, both of whom were Knights ; and Matthew. Sir John, the eldest, had six sons, of whom John, his heir, was created Lord Ossulston, and at length Earl of Tankerville ; and Henry, the second Earl of Arlington, a busy statesman throughout the reign of Charles II. and the first and last by whom that title was enjoyed.

officers of her Majesty's household, the Cofferer, the Clerks Controllers, and the Clerks of the Greencloth, letting them understand that, notwithstanding the smallness and barrenness of our country, and the largeness of our offers to the undertaker of provision,* yet he had refused to deal any longer therewith, alleging that the best cattle that he could possibly provide in that country had been this year turned back upon him, so as it was fitter for some other man, dwelling in some other shire, to be the undertaker, than any of our country, &c. according as you wrote ; offering unto them that sum, vid. of £160, if they would, by their direction to any other, discharge us for this year. Whereunto they all (being by chance in the counting house together) answered that they would in

* In lieu of the ancient purveyance. This species of taxation, the original pretences for which now hardly existed, having suffered many checks as monarchy became more limited, was settled on a new footing in the inland counties about the middle of this reign, when the Justices of the Peace were empowered to treat with the officers of the Green Cloth for the quantity and price of the provisions demanded for the royal household, instead of their being wrested from the people by the Purveyor. The price, however, rarely amounted to half the value at market, but the country was now certain of receiving the full sum agreed for, and the regulation gave to this hated impost somewhat of the flattering air of a voluntary contribution. Elizabeth, who had often been besought to commute all purveyance for an annual payment in money, was too fond of her prerogative to waive its operation in any instance where her authority remained unquestioned ; and this will account for the refusal of the Earl's offer of £ 160 which, as it was the sum at which the provider farmed his office of the county, must have been above the value of the cattle required. What little remained of this, and some other unpalatable kingly rights, were wisely relinquished by Charles II. in 1661, at the request of his Parliament, which returned the compliment by granting him a perpetual excise.

no sort deal therewith, and said that this year, by reason of the great proportion of victuals for her Majesty's ships, and great navy that is to go to the seas, and general dearth and scarcity through the realm, the prices of cattle are far above that was wont, and so the undertaker not able to perform the composition as heretofore ; and for the smallness of the beasts that are bred in Derbyshire, they said that was nothing to purpose, for that the size of every beast that is to be spent in the Court is set down in certain ; as every ox to be five feet and eight inches in length ; so as if there be not of that size in our own country, we must cause them to be bought in Lancashire, or elsewhere. They also declared that her Majesty not long since gave express commandment to my Lords of her Council to write down letters into every shire of the realm (which they did) that the composition should hold, which her Highness did to avoid the bad dealing of the Purveyors with the meaner sort of her subjects, conceiving that the better sort would make better shift for themselves than the rest could ; assuring me that what shire soever shall break the composition, it will be very offensively taken ; and thus much I received yesterday from the said officers.

Now my opinion is that by no means we should break the composition, but procure the same to be undertaken with all the speed we may ; and if now at our assizes at Derby you can find out any man who will undertake it who is very able and sufficient, then to compound with him as you can ; if for

£160, as Millward did, it were best; if not, then to add some increase thereto, though it be somewhat more charge to our country, which of necessity must be when it cannot be helped. Howbeit if you cannot find out any other who will undertake it at so reasonable a rate, and so sufficiently as Mr. Millward will, then, if you so think good, you may deliver this my letter inclosed to the said Millward, which I have thought good to write to him, and is unsealed for you to peruse; but I earnestly pray you that by one means or other the composition may hold, and some undertaker or other presently procured, which is fit to be speedily done, for that the 10th day of May next the provisions are to be delivered. Thus, leaving it to your best care, I take my leave, and commit you to the protection of the Almighty.

From my house in Broad Street, in London, this
7th of March, 1595.

No. CCLXXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 143.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO
MR. JOHN MANNERS AND SIR HUMPHREY FERRERS.

AFTER my very hearty commendations, &c. I received your letters this morning by Captain Cuney, Sir Thomas Gerrard being then also here with me, whereby I perceive you have levied and pressed 150 men, and gathered £462. 10. in money; whereof for armour and weapon £300, for every soldier to have in his purse, five shillings, for conducting of them to Plymouth ten shillings a piece,

and to the Captain himself, for his charge and pains, £50 ; all which I think you have performed with great good judgment and discretion, and so both Sir Thomas Gerrard and the Captain do conceive thereof : and yet they do protest unto me that, since their going from this town last, they find such a difference in the prices of armour and weapon, as they are not able to furnish that proportion by £ 50 so cheap as they then could have done, and I do partly know it myself to be most true, by some experience that lately I had of the prices of those things. I am, therefore, earnestly intreated by them both that I would move you to add unto the £462. 10. the odd £40, to make it up £500, which would be taken very thankfully, and therefore I make bold to persuade you thereunto, although none wish the ease of the country (which I know to be many ways greatly charged) more than myself. And for the repayment again of the £300 for the armour, in case that service do not proceed,* both Sir Thomas Gerrard and Mr. Cuney have faithfully promised either to restore that said

* The service here meant was the expedition to Cadiz, in which Essex commanded the army. The information given us by this letter of the charge of furnishing 150 men, and of the manner in which the necessary sum was divided and appropriated, render it interesting. It should seem that the money was literally a free loan ; for the Earl, in a former letter to the same persons, dated March 24, says, “ I am intreated to desire you to make the country thoroughly to understand the great importance of this service, and to persuade them to deal freely and liberally therein, which, *for that it is to proceed voluntarily of themselves*, will be so much the more acceptably taken by her Majesty and their Lordships.”

sum, if that journey proceed not, or else the armour and weapons which he shall now buy with that money, undiminished or harmed ; for he saith that the money being once disbursed, as of necessity it must needs be within this two or three days, the money cannot then be had again, but all the wares (the armour and weapon I mean) shall not fail to be restored to us.

I am also desired by them, that whereas at Captain Cuney's coming from you he took order for the stay of the men for ten days longer than was formerly appointed, he now desireth that they may not fail to be all in readiness against the twentieth day of this month of April, to set forwards, and by that day himself will either return to Derby, there to receive them, or else to discharge them. And, lastly, whereas he told me that divers men were taken which if you had had more time and leisure should not have gone, but more sufficient in their rooms ; they earnestly desire now that in this respect of time, that what may be supplied, which I pray you forthwith give present order to be performed accordingly. And so, writing this in haste, for the Captain meaneth to send away this letter unto you with speed, I take my leave, and commit you to the protection of the Almighty

Broad Street, April 13, 1596.

G. SHREWSBURY.

No. CCLXXVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 853.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO LORD BURGHLEY

My very good Lord.

AT my coming hither to Dover I found here one ship of the Queen Majesty's, called the Advantage, of about some 180 tons, though she be reckoned somewhat more, and one small pinnace, called the Advice, of 50 tons, or thereabout; these only are left for our transportation* over to Dieppe, and for hoys, or other boats, to carry over horses and stuff, we find not so many here as of necessity we are to use; and although, as we hear, there are enough of such at Sandwich as would serve our turn, and that we have also sent thither for them (but by no means can procure them hither, and yet have used the best help of Mr. Fane, the Lieutenant of this castle) yet the Mayor of that town will not send them. And for Sir H. Palmer, he is not yet returned from Flushing, whither he carried the Duke of Bouillon, in one of her Majesty's ships called the Antelope, of 400 tons, or thereabout; and in another of her Majesty's ship's called the Adventure, which is of 350 tons', or thereabout, Sir Robert Sidney was lately transported over. The wind hath been good for our passage ever since we came hither, but being no better provided we are forced to stay, and in case the wind should alter, we

* The Queen had lately concluded a treaty offensive and defensive with Henry IV. of France, and the Earl of Shrewsbury was sent to Paris to witness the ratification of it by that Monarch, as well as to invest him with the Order of the Garter.

should perhaps tarry here we know not how long ; wherefore in discharge of my duty I do impart thus much to your Lordship, to the end that if the wind do alter before we can set forward, the blame may not be imputed to me, but to those who should have provided sufficient shipping for us ; to whom both my Lord Admiral, and my Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, did write divers times, and myself sent my commission to Mr. Burrows more than a month since, and yet all hath not prevailed. I beseech your Lordship give me leave to refer their two Lordships, and my Lord Admiral and my Lord Chamberlain, to your Lordship's information hereof, for that it would be but tedious and troublesome to write one thing twice or thrice ; and so, wishing unto your Lordship all honour and health, I take my leave in haste, and commit your Lordship to the protection of the Almighty.

At Dover, this 17th of September, 1596.

*To the right honourable and my very good Lord
the Lord Burghley, Lord High Treasurer of
England.*

No. CCLXXIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 245.)

THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY TO SIR ROBERT CECIL.

Sir,

HAVING written to my Lord your father of all things that are come to my understanding since our coming from Dieppe, there is nothing left to advertise you worthy your reading, yet such as are I will be bold to inform you. And, first, for that it is the fairest news, the King hath sent the Duke

Espernon to Fontainebleau to his sister, to entreat her coming hither with all the speed that may, but they say she is melancholy disposed, and therefore her coming is doubted;* but there is here already the most of the great ladies that belong to the Court, and the Marquise Monceaux† arrived from Gaillon‡ on Thursday night in a litter, with small company. She cometh to make survey of the King's lodgings before his coming; for in it she is lodged, and, as it is verily thought, the King himself was not many hours there after her; for that day he went a hunting the stag, as was said, and perhaps lost himself in the woods, for to Gaillon he returned not that night. Here she shall be brought to bed, for they say she is very near her time; and

* Catherine of Navarre, afterwards Duchess of Lorrain. Her chagrin was owing to the following circumstance. A reciprocal tenderness had long subsisted between her and the Count de Soissons, of the house of Bourbon, to whom she had solemnly betrothed herself. Henry, who disapproved of the connection, had recourse to the mean expedient of indirectly persuading her that if she would give up the contract which they had executed, and engage not to enter into another without his approbation, his consent might easily be gained. The deceit proved successful, and the great Duke of Sully, who was chiefly employed in this dishonourable affair, apologizes very awkwardly for his conduct in it.

† Gabrielle d'Estrees, Marchioness of Monceaux, and afterwards Duchess of Beaufort; better known in the French histories by the title of "The Fair Gabrielle." She was now pregnant of a daughter, who was baptized Catherine Henrietta, and married Charles II. of Lorrain, Duke of Elboeuf. Henry never quitted her chamber on the day she was delivered, employing himself in airing her linen, and administering her medicines, which gave occasion to the courtiers to observe, even in his hearing, "Notre Roy est devenu sage femme de Madame la Marquise." This lady died in the spring of 1599, with strong suspicions of poison.

‡ Gaillon, a palace lately purchased by the King from the heirs of the late Cardinal de Bourbon, Archbishop of Rouen.

thus much for that great Lady, and when my good-hap shall be to see any great ones of her sex, which yet I have not but in windows as I came into the town, I will inform you at more large.

Here is daily with me Sir Charles and Sir H. Davers,* two discreet fine gentlemen, who carry themselves here with great discretion, reputation, and respect. God turn the eyes of her Majesty to incline unto them, agreeable to her own natural disposition, and then I doubt not but they shall soon taste of her pity and mercy. The Earl Bothwell,† being in this town, sent to desire to know if his coming to visit me would not be offensive. I answered that as touching my own particular I should be glad of his acquaintance, but, holding at this time the place I do, I did determine to know neither person nor matter, other than openly and accidentally, beside the things I have in charge;

* Sir Charles and Sir Henry Davers, or Danvers, brothers. They had fled from England on account of a murder, the particulars of which are not known, and during their abode in France gained the esteem of Henry IV., in whose army they had served, insomuch that he now sent a letter to Elizabeth by the Earl of Shrewsbury interceding in their favour. Having with much difficulty obtained her pardon, they returned; the elder to a more unhappy fate; for, lying under obligations to the Earl of Southampton, who had concealed him in his house for some time before his retreat to France, he was induced to follow that nobleman in the Earl of Essex's insurrection, and suffered with his confederates, after having offered £ 10,000 for his life. Sir Henry, who was the younger, was created Baron Danvers, of Dantzey in Wiltshire, by James, and Earl of Danby by Charles I.; but, dying without issue, the titles became extinct.

† Francis Stuart, grandson to James V. of Scotland, who had lately been driven from his own country, in which he had raised repeated disturbances. He died in Italy a few years after, in extreme poverty.

and therefore I desired him to spare his coming hither, choosing rather, I said, to offend in too much preciseness than in the contrary part. Nevertheless, lest he should have conceived that I had any direction from the State touching him, I protested that I did not understand of his being here until my coming to this town. Here is Mr. H. Constable ;* who, lest he should have intruded himself into my company, I desired Mr. Edmunds to let him know my desire he should forbear either coming, writing, or sending unto me, which he hath hitherto performed.

As I have written to my Lord your father, I hope I shall dispatch all my business here within these eight or ten days ; I beseech you, Sir, therefore, to procure my Lord Admiral, or in his absence yourself, to write to Sir H. Palmer to be at Dieppe on the 15th day of this October, with some two of her Majesty's ships, if the wind permit, or so soon after as may be ; and so I have written to

* Henry Constable, a Yorkshire gentleman, and a most zealous Roman Catholic, whose busy endeavours in favour of that persuasion had probably caused his barishment. A very sensible and pious letter from him to Mr. Anthony Bacon, a younger son of the Lord Keeper, may be found in Dr. Birch's Memoirs of Elizabeth, accompanied by some conjectures concerning his family, &c. which I forbear to repeat, because I can neither confirm nor deny them, as there were then so many families of his name in Yorkshire that it is not easy to determine to which he belonged. He afterwards came privately to England, but was soon discovered and imprisoned in the Tower till the Queen's death. It appears from the two letters which follow, that the Earl of Shrewsbury was on more intimate terms with this gentleman than he thought fit to own to the Secretary ; I have therefore placed them here, though they evidently belong to a later time ; no circumstance, however, being mentioned in them will enable us to ascertain their date with exactness.

Sir H. Palmer, by this bearer, but some direction from you in that behalf will do well, if so it please you. Thus, Sir, being unfinished of any other matter, until the King's arrival, and my audience, minister further cause, I will take my leave, and commit you to the protection of the Almighty.

Rouen, this 3rd of October, 1596.

Since the death of my cousin Strangwis there hath been none of our company sick, I thank God.

No. CCLXXX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. O. fol. 92.)

HENRY CONSTABLE
TO THE COUNTESS OF SHREWSBURY.

Madam,

I do hold myself beholden to your Ladyship for the advice you gave me, for that I find it more convenient to write unto your Ladyship, than to come unto you, or to make any other visits either by day or night, till I have a further liberty granted me; and though I cannot so well communicate to your Ladyship my desire, by letters as by speech, yet in general, I will tell your Ladyship that I hear the Council hath a purpose to banish me, which if it be so, I would desire, by my Lord's means and my other good friends, to obtain two requests; the one, that I be not absolutely banished, but so as upon my good deserts I may return; the other, that I may with the King's good liking, and some of my friends' recommendation, go with the Constable of Castile into Spain; for that the King of France (which sent my letters into England, for which I

am troubled, and heareth that his dealing with me is a blot to his reputation among those of my profession) will be my enemy. But, seeing the Lords direct other circumstances in this business that do import me besides, wherein I desire your Ladyship's advice, and that they be too tedious to write, I will only beseech your Ladyship to excuse my importunity, and to account me as you did, for him that doth honour your Ladyship more than any woman living ; and, with this protestation, I most humbly kiss your Ladyship's hand, and remain,

Your Ladyship's most humble and most
obedient servant,

HENRY CONSTABLE.

*To the right honourable, and his best Lady the
Countess of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCLXXXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. O. fol. 94.)

HENRY CONSTABLE
TO THE COUNTESS OF SHREWSBURY.

GOD is my witness that the miseries of France be not such as should make me once wish to return for any great benefit if it were not only for your cause and your's, and therefore, Madam, for the honour I bear to your perfections, forget all those imperfections which I observe in myself as well as your Ladyship doth, and know that I have taken every way notable profit by this journey ; for (finding my disposition more acceptable to this nation than my own) if by your favour I return, I will go about to ingraft an English humour into me ; and if I do not,

then may I freely follow my own natural disposition, and live contented with how little soever I shall have, serving no other mistress than God Almighty, who I know will love me if I love him, and in whose company I can be when I will.

I dare not importune your Ladyship with any weighty news, besibe such common actions as I reserve for my Lord's letter ; and, to say truly, the King's army being not yet joined, I have no further means of knowing any thing than from the mouths of our commanders, of whom I have the honour to be little cared for as I deserve. I most humbly kiss your Ladyship's fair hands, and remain for ever and ever

Your Ladyship's most affectionate servant,
H. CONSTABLE.

*To the right honourable his singular good Lady
the Countess of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCLXXXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 251.)

Indorsed, "Translation of the Copy of the Oath taken by the
"King for the Observation of the Treaty."

We Henry by the grace of God most Christian King of France and Navarre, do swear in the faith and word of a king, and promise, giving our hand, that we will observe and accord to all and every the points and articles imposed by the two treaties of mutual confederation, offensive and defensive, lately made betwixt us and the most high most excellent, and most puissant Princess, our most dear and most beloved good sister and cousin, Elizabeth Queen of England, our realms, estates, and countries, against the King of Spain, and his realms, estates, and coun-

tries : in approbation of which treaties, and articles of mutual confederation accorded on by our councillors and deputies, of the one part and the other, the 24th and 25th of May last, and after by us and our good sister ratified, we, in the presence of the excellent person Gilbert Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of the order of the Garter, deputed and sent Ambassador for this effect on the behalf of our most dear sister, do swear before God the confirmation thereof (our hands touching the holy Evangelists) and that on our part we will observe them in good faith ; and we promise, joining hands, that we will never go against the same in any point or article, directly or indirectly, and will hinder, with all our power, that the same shall be any ways violated ; so God be our help. In faith and witness whereof we have publicly signed these presents with our own hand, and to the same have made to be set and put our seal in the church of St. Ouen, at Rouen, the 19th day of October, in the year 1596.

HENRY.

The King's seal.

DE NEUFVILLE.

No. CCLXXXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 252.)

LORDS OF THE COUNCIL.

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

After our hearty commendations to your good Lordship. Her Majesty having received some certain intelligence of the great preparations the King of Spain doth make, pretending to make some at-

tempt on some part of her Majesty's dominions, and that to execute his purposes he hath already set forth some number of ships to the seas, her Highness hath, in her princely care for the preservation of this her realm and subjects, given direction to the Lords Lieutenants in all the maritime counties, and other counties adjoining, to have the whole forces, as well of horse as footmen, in those counties to be presently viewed, mustered, and put in readiness ; with other directions for the withstanding of such attempts as the enemy may happen to make ; and for that consideration it is thought meet that in all the inland counties there should also a present view and muster be taken, as well of the horse as of the foot, that her Majesty may have a view of the whole forces of her realm, and so dispose of the same as there may be occasion : These shall be, therefore, to require your Lordship upon the receipt of these our letters, to cause the enrolled numbers of that county to be presently viewed and mustered, both of horse and foot ; and such defects as have happened since the last certificate by the decease of any of the soldiers, or want of armour or furniture, to be forthwith supplied ; and to certify the same unto us, without fail at the furthest by the 22nd of this month of November. And where, by your Lordship's late certificate, there is a proportion of powder, match, and bullet, of the provision of the country ; we are to pray your Lordship's considering the doubtfulness of these times to increase the same to a greater quantity, both for the county and the towns corporate ; wherein

there shall be order taken that such proportion as your Lordship shall give order for to be provided shall be delivered to such as your Lordship shall appoint to buy the same, at reasonable rates, by her Majesty's officers that furnish the provision for her store at the Tower of London.

Her Majesty's pleasure is, further, that none of the principal gentlemen, or others of good ability, inhabiting within that county, shall depart out of the country, but reside on their dwellings, both to be ready for the service of the country, and for the relief of their neighbours; and that they be enjoined to furnish themselves with armour, weapons, horses, and other necessary furniture, according to their ability, for themselves and their servants. Moreover, as it is required that the gentlemen, and others of good ability, and that are well affected, should be furnished with armour and weapons, so it is thought meet to take all means from them that are evil affected to give any succour or hope of aid to the enemy; and therefore your Lordship is especially required to take into your charge and custody the armour of all such recusants as are within that county, and also such horses or geldings as they have that may be fit for service; wherein there is no meaning that the same shall be taken from them, but that they may be put into the hands of those of better trust, to be used as there may be occasion for the defence of the realm in these doubtful times; and the horses shall be kept by your Lordship, or at your appointment, at the charge of the owners, until you shall receive some other direction.

And whereas in these trouolesome times there are oftentimes certain persons, lewdly disposed, that do spread forth and give out false rumours and reports of malicious purpose, to trouble and stir up the minds of the people ; if any such happen to be given forth, and to come to your knowledge, your Lordship shall cause the author or authors of the same to be sought out, and to be committed to the common gaol, and to advertise us thereof, that they may receive further punishment as shall be thought convenient. We must not forget to put your Lordship in mind that such as furnish horses be severally enjoined to keep them in their stables, and in such sort that they may be in readiness and fit for service. And so, praying your Lordship to have special regard in the performance of these our directions, we wish your Lordship heartily farewell.

From the Court at Richmond, Nov. 6th, 1596.

Your Lordship's very loving friends,

| | |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|
| JO. CANT.* | THO. EGERTON, C. S.† |
| W. BURGHLEY. | ESSEX. |
| W. COBHAM.‡ | R. NORTH.§ |
| T. BUCKHURST. | W. KNOLLYS. |
| RO. CECIL. | J. FORTESCUE. |

To our very good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury, her Majesty's Lieutenant in the County of Derby.

* John Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterbury, eldest son of Henry Whitgift, a merchant of Great Grimsby, in Lincolnshire, (descended from a gentleman's family in Yorkshire) by Anne Dinewell, of that place. He was born there in 1530, and was educated in the university of Cambridge, where he became Master of Pembroke Hall, and afterwards of Trinity College, and at the

No. CCLXXXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. M. fol. 415. 1597. (a)

SIR ROBERT CECIL TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My good Lord,

I HAVE received by the hands of a servant of yours another letter, since it pleased you, from the woods, to answer my tedious letter by post. If

(a) Written on or about the 15th of April, 1597; for proof whereof the inquisitive reader may turn to Birch's Memoirs of this reign, vol. ii. 331, where he will find a letter from Lord Eure, who seems to have been as unwilling to remain in his office of Warden of the Marches, as the Earl of Northumberland to succeed him in it.

latter signalized himself in a dispute with one of the fellows, Thomas Cartwright, who had commenced Puritan, in order to revenge himself for a personal slight put on him by the Queen. Whitgift's future promotion originated in this contest. Elizabeth rewarded his endeavours in the defence of the Church with the Deanery of Lincoln, and soon after conferred on him the Bishopric of Worcester, whence he was translated to the Primacy, upon the death of Grindal, in 1583, and was soon after invested with the most complete authority in all ecclesiastical affairs whatever. The many excellent qualities displayed by him in this exalted public character; his wisdom; his learning; his sweetness of manners; his honest simplicity; his charity; his zeal for the established faith, and his moderation in discipline; are celebrated by most of our historians, and have employed the pens of more than one biographer. He died Feb. 29, 1603-4, as he had lived, for the Church; "Whilst the King began to find fault with some things used in the Liturgy," says Camden, "and thought it convenient that they should be altered, John Whitgift, the Archbishop, died for grief." He was buried at Croydon, in Surrey.

† Sir Thomas Egerton, Lord Keeper, created Baron Ellsmere, and Viscount Brackley, by James I. He died, very old, in 1616; justly respected and beloved for his faithful services to the Crown, and for his able, incorrupt, and spirited conduct in the high court where he presided. See more of him in the Peerages, Art. D. of Bridgewater.

‡ William Brook, Lord Cobham, eldest son of George, the third Lord, by Anne, sister and coheir of John Lord Bray. This

any thing of our Northern causes had been resolved, your Lordship should sooner have been advertised of it by me than of the idle occurrences before written ; but if I should make your Lordship privy to all our talk of presidents, Captains of Berwick, and changing of Wardens, and constituting lieutenants on the borders, I should make all the posts northward break their wind ; and therefore, in short, thus much your Lordship may know ; that the borders are ill governed, and the wardens threatened to be removed. And because their

nobleman, whose consequence was derived entirely from his birth and great fortune, was sent by Elizabeth at her accession to notify that event to the King of Spain, and soon after his return was appointed Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports. He continued in a moderate degree of favour at Court till the discovery of the Duke of Norfolk's overture of marriage to the Queen of Scots, when he was committed to the Tower ; whence he obtained his liberty by a full discovery of all he knew of that ill-fated affair. We find by letters in this collection, and by several scattered passages in other papers of his time, that he was always suspected, and probably with justice, of an attachment to Mary's interest. Elizabeth, however, continued to employ him ; sent him, in 1579, with Walsingham, to treat of a peace in the low countries ; and again, on the same errand, in 1589, with Henry Earl of Derby. She bestowed on him at last the honourable post of Lord Chamberlain, in which he died, Feb. 24, 1597 - 8. He married, first, Dorothy, daughter of George Neville, Lord Abergavenny, by whom he had a daughter, Frances, married successively to Thomas Copinger, of Kent, and Edmund Beecher ; secondly, Frances, daughter of Sir John Newton ; who brought him Maximilian, who died at Orleans without issue ; Henry, his successor, who was attainted for his concern in Raleigh's conspiracy, and made a wretched exit in January, 1619 ; George, who suffered death on the same occasion ; Sir William, killed in 1597 ; and three daughters ; Margaret ; Elizabeth, wife to Robert Cecil, first Earl of Salisbury ; and Frances, married first to Edward Lord Stourton, secondly, to Sir Edward Moore.

§ Roger, second Lord North, ancestor of the Earls of Guildford. He was appointed Treasurer of the household late in life, and died in 1600.

equality breeds emulation and contention, it was offered to the Earl of Northumberland to be warden of the Middle, and lieutenant, for the time, to countenance justice in the three shires ; like a proposed overture made by the Scottish king, who in respect his own wardens did decline justice, he was content (if the Queen would do the like) to constitute the Duke of Lennox to be a superintendent over the residue ; but, my Lord, this conceit hath spent ; and we, that love my Lord (whom he hath seriously importuned to keep him from it) have now delivered him from the imposition ; with which he is very well contented, and rejoices, I perceive, rather in his private life, than to be placed from the son, where he doubts his purse will be picked ; so as all things stand here at a stay, and the King having put on, in appearance, a full resolution to do justice, hath sent Sir John Carmichael, to see all pledges delivered which were intended, and likewise the Queen sends Sir W. Bowes to be correspondent on her behalf for the like. What will hereof ensue will shortly appear ; and the Parliament approaching, her Majesty will do somewhat surely for her honour in establishing officers northward.

Of our fleet's certain going we hear not ; but, by the promise of readiness, and by the state of the winds, I hope they will be on the coast before my letter arrives. Their land army is disbanded, for the most, or run away, and sick, but my Lord persists still in lying for the fleet, which God send he

may do to some purpose.*
 take my leave. I humbly rec
 to the noble Countess, and hop
 draw you both up, where you sh
 Your Lordship's loving an
 command,

The French King is like
 lose a battle, for the Cardinal
 the King is hopefully engaged i
 the mean while, the Cardinal
 State's army to take Berk, wh
 niards and 400 Wallons.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
 Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of the Garter*

No. CCLXXXV

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H.

THE BISHOP OF CA

TO THE EARL OF SHR

Right honourable, my very
 As I honour you and love you
 were such as I might have gra
 according to the contents of ye
 bero inclosed ; but, on the faith
 shop, I am at this present plun
 and danger, by reason of the int

* This relates to Essex's voyage to the
 mentioned sailed from Plymouth on the
 back to that port, by adverse weather, an
 17th of August ; and, after a variety of gi
 expedition produced nothing very remark
 tween the Earl and Raleigh, which termi
 batred.

want of corn in this country, as this bearer can truly inform your honour (myself having been driven ever since the end of April last to lay out weekly £8, or £9, or £10, and sometimes more, for bread and bread corn, wheat being at 30s., rye at 24s., and bigg at 16s. per bushel) that as I am most unable to satisfy your honour's request, so, unless it may now stand with your honour's good favour to help me out of present danger, by paying to this bearer, my secretary, the £100 due to my son by my very good Lord your honour's father at Candlemas last (which £100 my said son, being now visited with sickness, is willing to lend unto me till Candlemas next, to help me out of danger), I shall be utterly discredited ; for in truth there is a seizure come out of the exchequer against me, by my Lord Treasurer's commandment for non-payment of £146 due to her Majesty for the subsidy the 19th of February last, and to have been paid by me before the end of the last term, which sum, if the Sheriff of Cumberland be not answered before Bartholomew day next, he must and will, by virtue of the said writ, enter upon all my goods, to my utter disgrace ; and, to the end your honour may be persuaded that this is most true, I have sent by this bearer Mr. Thomas Hammond, his letter lately sent unto me, which will verify the same ; wherefore, my good Lord, I do instantly pray and beseech you to send the said money by this bearer to my son, who if he were not hindered by sickness would attend upon your honour for the

same. Even so, humbly taking my leave, I right heartily commend you to God.

Rose, July 22nd, 1587.

Your Honours most assured in Christ,

JOHN CARLISLE.

To the right honourable my very good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, give these.

No. CCLXXXVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. H. fol. 249.)

Society of the Middle Temple to the Earl of SHREWSBURY. Indorsed by the Earl, "This Privy Seal being brought unto me at Christmas 1597, in respect of the Prince d'Amore's keeping his Revels in that Inn of Court, I sent him, by the hands of Mr. Davies of that house, £30.

GILBERT SHREWSBURY."

RIGHT honourable Lord, we send you humble and hearty greeting. For as much as the ordinary expense of our public hospitality is such, and so great at all times, in the knowledge and view of all men of right understanding and consideration, and that, by new unexpected accidents of foreign charge and entertainments, the same is at this present so greatly augmented and increased, that without a benevolent largess and contribution of the members and wellwishers of this house the same cannot well be defrayed and discharged; these are therefore to request of your Honour as you tender the loves of us your fellows and allies, and the grace and reputation of this fellowship, whereof we repute and hold you a worthy and principal member and favourer, to lend us such a sum

of money as to your Honour shall seem convenient, in favour of our pretended extraordinary designs ; which we promise to repay unto you the thirtieth day of February next at our treasury, whence we bid you heartily farewell.

Your very loving friends,

MIDDLE TEMPLE.

To the right honourable Gilbert Earl of Shrewsbury.

No. CCLXXXVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 275.)

SIR THOMAS EDMONDS
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right Honourable,

I HAVE since my return hither let the King know that I had in charge from your Lordship to present your service unto him, and to thank him for the honourable mention which your Lordship understood by Mr. Secretary it pleased him to use to him of your Lordship, for the which that your Lordship doth acknowledge to owe him great obligation, and will be glad on all occasions to give him testimony of your like desire to do him service. He returned me many thanks, and said that he did much desire to conserve your Lordship's acquaintance and love, and that your Lordship's honourable disposition and good carriage, which he doth particularly affect, do make your Lordship much recommended, with other qualities. I told him that he made no untrue judgment of you, you being for such respected and reverenced amongst us, and that

the acquaintance which is begun between you is most worthy his entertaining. He prayed me to be the instrument thereof, and professed to desire much the same.

Now for general matters, and especially touching the King of Spain's inclination to treat with her Majesty, it may please your Lordship to understand that I find by all inquisition, both of the report of all such here as have negotiated with the said King's ministers, and by others that have in private conferred with the Spaniards here, and by the relation of those that come out of the Low Countries, that they do exceedingly desire a peace with her Majesty ; esteeming that otherwise their peace with France will not be of that profit to them for advantage against the Low Countries as they promised themselves, because they think they shall still find the party strong so long as her Majesty sitteth out ; and that people will be kept still in courage, and from disunion ; and that it is not unlikely France may be moved, finding the States' affairs to succeed well, to favour them hereafter underhand. It is most certain that the Cardinal's* necessity is great ; which, joined with his earnest desire to establish himself, doth make him passionately to seek a peace upon any conditions, knowing that if he do not work it before the King of Spain's

* Albert, Archduke of Austria, Cardinal, and Archbishop of Toledo, third son of the Emperor Maximilian II. He married the Infanta Isabella, daughter of Philip II. of Spain, whose nominal dower, the gift here mentioned, consisted of the Low Countries, and the districts of Franche Comte and Charolois, in France. Her father survived the marriage about four months.

death, he will have little profit of his marriage and gift. The King (that doth only seek to assure by all means his present quiet and ease) doth not yet otherwise apprehend the subsistence of those of the Low Countries than to leave them to their own fortune ; and desireth to draw her Majesty also into the peace, both to justify his first entrance,* and to secure himself by her union against any future events. Her Majesty hath, therefore, her election, whether she will also accept of a peace which will not be refused her upon tolerable conditions, or run further course with the States upon the consideration of common interest ; whereof, when you have there taken time enough to balance the reasons of present commodity against the suspicion of future inconveniencies, we

* Henry IV. in direct violation of the treaty of October, 1596, to which he had so solemnly sworn, (see No. CCLXXXII.) had lately negotiated a separate peace with Spain, and Sir Robert Cecil, whom Elizabeth had dispatched to Paris to remonstrate against it, was succeeded there by Sir Thomas Edmonds ; the treaty, however, was concluded at Vervins, and signed on the 2nd of May preceding this date. We may venture to suppose, although such a conjecture is entirely unsupported by historical evidence, that Henry's conduct was the result of a secret correspondence with Elizabeth ; for it is not likely that a Prince of his character should so wantonly break his engagement, and yet less probable that our fiery monarch would have submitted to such an affront without any expression of resentment. The question whether England should treat with Spain, occasioned violent differences in the Court. Essex was for continuing the war ; Burghley against it. The latter told the former, at the Council-table, that he seemed intent on nothing but blood and slaughter, and, taking out a prayer-book, prophetically pointed to the passage, " Men of blood shall not live out half their days." Sir Thomas Edmonds perhaps alludes to these disputes when he speaks of " intestine disorders ;" or possibly to the Queen's famous quarrel with the Earl of Essex, which happened about this time.

desire here to receive a resolution from you ; but we understand freshly that there be such other new intestine disorders among you, as make you to be held very schismatical and incapable to take any sound conclusion on any other practice.

The Spanish hostages are now gone, albeit the King hath not yet all his towns ; but, having received the principal piece,* he is content to shew to trust them in the rest, wherein they dare not to fail. The Prince of Lorraine came hither in confidence to have concluded his marriage with Madame, the King's sister, but the King hath entertained him with new delays, whereupon he is returned much discontented.

I will not further importune your Lordship with these idle lines ; but, beseeching your Lordship to conceive me ever in your honourable favour, and that I may make bold herein to present my humble duty and service to my Lady, and to Sir Charles Cavendish, I most humbly take my leave

From Paris, the 12th of July, 1598.

Your Lordship's most humbly bounden,
THO. EDMONDS.*

*To the right honourable my singular good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

* Calais.

† This gentleman, a minister of great abilities and integrity, was fifth son of Thomas Edmonds, Customer of Plymouth, by Joan, daughter of Anthony Delabere, of Sherborne, in the county of Dorset. He had been practised in the arts of foreign negotiation, especially in France, almost from his childhood, was appointed Envoy to that Court about ten years before the date of this letter, and in May 1596, Secretary to the Queen for the French tongue. He served that Princess in an embassy to the Archduke in 1599,

No. CCLXXXVIII.

(Cecil Papers.)

SIR JOHN STANHOPE TO SIR ROBERT CECIL. 1598.

Sir,

I HAVE been reading Mr. Edmonds' letter and yours to her Majesty, which came not to my hands till six o'clock, for I was all the afternoon with her Majesty at my book, and then, thinking to rest me, went in again with your letter. She was pleased with the philosopher's stone, and hath been all this day reasonably quiet, and hath heard at large the discourse of the calamities of Kerry, expresssed by Sir Edward Denis in very lamentable sort; where he hath lost houses, ground, corn, cattle, and all his stud of horses, and sweareth a revenge, to which the Queen hath hearted him with promise of employment. Of all the French news I do not

and was a Commissioner at the treaty of Boulogne in the following year. He was knighted by James I. at Greenwich, May 11th 1603, about which time we meet with him, ("little Edmonds") in the Duke of Sully's Memoirs, complaining to that nobleman that his services were ill rewarded; however he was soon after sent again to the Court of Brussels, and thence to Paris, in the character of Ambassador Leger, which honourable and important em- ployment he exercised with singular wisdom and fidelity till the year 1616, when he was recalled to take upon him the office of Comptroller of the Household, and was at the same time sworn the Privy Council. He afterwards succeeded Lord Wotton as Treasurer of the Household; was appointed Clerk of the Crown in the Court of King's Bench in 1620; and is said to have been raised to a Secretaryship of State in the latter part of his life, but I can find no proof of that assertion. He died, very aged, in 1639. Sir Thomas Edmonds married a daughter of Sir John Wood, Clerk of the Signet, by whom he had a son, Henry, who was made a Knight of the Bath at the Coronation of Charles I., and a daughter, Mary, married to Robert Mildmay, son and heir of Henry Mildmay, of Waltham in Essex.

find any great apprehension taken, save of the procuring of the marriage at Rome betwixt the King and his mistress, which how it can sound well in a religious Prince's ears you can judge. The Queen saith the Ambassador gave her this letter yesterday from the French King, which importeth some complaints against her subjects. She opened it, but read it not, but wisheth you to confer with my Lord Admiral about it, and to show it him, but to take heed you loose not the seal of it, which will scarce stick on.

It were good some Councillors were sent hither, for this Court hath not had any one this day. Mr. Greville is absent, and I am tied so as I cannot stir, but shall be at the worse for it these two days. Yesternight my Lord of Cumberland was with her after supper ; then my Lord Gray, and the Earl of Rutland, with divers others all night till twelve o'clock, and so I humbly recommend you my service, and rest your Honour's,

J. STANHOPE.

This 3rd of November.

No. CCLXXXIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. f. 288.)

LORD CROMWELL TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable my very good Lord,
If my happy fortune would in so good sort second
my desires as I could wish, your Honour should
then assuredly find my service as ready in perform-
ance as ever were my words forward to make pro-
testation in any opportunity ; but your abundant

love and plentiful kindness towards me, so many ways manifested, as well formerly as in your late journey into France, and since to her Majesty, far exceeding my desert and all means of requital, have, instead thereof, imboldened me, as you see, by a craving demand to continue myself wholly and only bound unto your Honour. My bringing up in the wars, begun and confirmed by a natural inclination thereto, I have now desired to continue ; rather choosing to live where blows and weapons give no place to flattering words and feigned dissimulation than in Court, where good endeavours are seldom accompanied with good fortune or happy success. In this Irish journey I do not yet know any place certain, but I was especially commanded to attend the same by her Majesty, who gratisiously offered me the place of Lord Marshal of the field ; the same being not yet gainsaid by my Lord of Essex,* who, using me most honourably, willed me to provide both for horse and foot, which as my ability will permit I do ; attending how I shall be directed. This day his Lordship sent unto me, that on Monday next, being the twenty-ninth of this month, he should have his commission, and then I should be employed to my own content, upon whose honourable word I much rely.

My good Lord, our going forward will I think now be much hastened, and my rendezvous, for any thing I can hear, is like to be at Bristol. May it

* Lately appointed Lord Deputy of Ireland, whither he went in the latter end of March following.

therefore please you to send your Honour's gift unto by me this bearer. I will, for the same, and many others, ever rest most bounden unto your Honour. What occurrences and news are here I know your Lordship is better advertised by Sir John Skidmore and Mr. Fulke Greville than I can report, and therefore I cease to trouble your Lordship therewith. The great grief I sustained by the late danger of my honourable good Lady, to whom in all true officious duty I most humbly commend me, is somewhat assuaged by the hope of her recovery, to whom I wish all happy health and honour. Thus, my good Lord, solacing myself with the remembrance of your Honour's love, so favourably inclined towards me, which I desire no longer to enjoy than (with all true faith and zeal, without compliment of words) I shall endeavour to deserve; and praying to the Almighty that as your virtues are numberless, so your joys, both in this world and that to come, may be endless, in all humble manner I take my leave of your Honour.

London, this 25th of January, 1598.

Your Honour's most humbly to be commanded,

ED. CROMWELL.*

*To the right honourable my especial good Lord
my Lord of Shrewsbury, at his Lordship's
house at Sheffield, give this.*

* Edward Lord Cromwell, son of Henry, the second Lord, by Mary, eldest daughter of John Poulett, Marquis of Winchester. He was summoned to the Parliament of 1593, and took his seat on the 27th of February as a Baron of the realm, which dignity he derived from his grandfather, who having obtained it in the lifetime of his father, Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, it escaped the general wreck of that great man's attainder. This young nobleman appears to have lived in the strictest intimacy and friendship with Essex, notwithstanding the doubtful manner in which he

No. CCXC.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 295.)

Indorsed, "Instructions from the Lords for the orderly mustering and training of soldiers in Derby."

THE Muster Master of the men to be trained have two of the arms, and the form and manner of training good proportion to have a company equally compounded of armed men and armed men to be all pikes, except the officers. The shot to be at least half muskets, and the rest harquebuzes ; but if the shot could be two parts of three muskets it were better. Also care is to be what men are put to every kind of arms ; the strongest and best persons to be pikes, the strongest and squarest fellows will be fit to carry muskets, and the least and nimblest should be turned into harquebuzers ; but, above all other respects, it is to be considered to what arms every man doth best frame ; for which cause it is not amiss that the Muster Master see the same men use several arms before they do appoint them certainly to carry any one.

here speaks of his hopes from the Earl's favour, for he accompanied him in this and several other expeditions, and was at last a party in the fatal insurrection of 1600 ; but Elizabeth, who was prudently merciful on that occasion, punished Lord Cromwell only by a short imprisonment. He married Frances, daughter of William Ruge, of Norfolk, by whom he had issue Thomas, his successor, created Earl of Ardglass, &c. in Ireland, and three daughters ; Elizabeth, married to Sir John Skelton ; Frances, to Sir John Wingfield, of Tickencote, in Rutlandshire ; and Anne, to Sir Edward Wingfield, of Powerscourt, in the county of Wicklow. Lord Cromwell died in Ireland, and was buried in the abbey church of Downpatrick.

For the form and manner of training that is to be followed which shall be soonest and most easily learned, and of most use for all kinds of services, which is this that followeth.

After every company shall be divided into three corporalships or squadrons, and every squadron into as many files as the number will bear, and every file into fellowships or camaradoes, the Corporal of every squadron shall be the leader of the chief file of that squadron, the Lanspesado (who in the Corporal's absence, as upon a guard, or otherwise, doth all the Corporal's duties) shall lead another file, and the most sufficient men of every squadron shall be leaders of the rest.

The company being thus divided, in training three things are to be taught ; 1. Carriage and use of arms ; 2. March and motion ; 3. Understanding the sounds of the drum, and words of direction, (which are our *vocabula artis*) and how by the drum or voice of a commander, to move and obey the direction.

The carriage of arms must be comeliest, and readiest for use : the use of the pike is either in receiving or giving a charge ; by being taught the first the soldier learns to withstand horse ; by the second, to encounter the enemy's pikes, in which the use of arms is most in knowing when and how every man, and so every rank should give his push.

In teaching the use of shot the soldier must first learn how to present his piece, and to take his level ; and bow and when to give his volley

with those of his rank. This is the proper office of Serjeants of companies, for they should both teach the shot the use of their arms, and be their leaders in service, if by special commandment a superior officer be not appointed.

In teaching to give volleys the ancient and vulgar manner of discipline (which is that the whole volley shall be given of all the shot in one battalion or troop at an instant, as well of them behind as before) is utterly to be condemned ; for either the hindmost must venture to shoot their fellows before through the head, or else will overshoot, and so spend their shot unprofitably ; besides, the volley being once given, the enemy comes on without impeachment or annoyance ; but, instead of this kind of volley at once, which only serves to make a great crack, let the first rank only give their volley, and, if the battalion march, then that rank that hath given their volley to stand, and the second to pass through it, and so to give their volley, and then to stand, and the third to come up, and so, consequently, all the ranks. If the battalion stand, then the first, having given their volley, shall fall back, and the second come in their places, and so the third and fourth, until the first rank is become last, and the last first, and so the volley shall be still continued, and the enemy never free from annoyance ; all which is easily performed, if before you do but make all your shot open their files.

In teaching of march, after every man knows his place, and is willed to observe his file and rank, in a plain march there is no hardness ; nor

yet in a counter march, if the leaders of the files be well chosen, and that every man observe well him that goes next before him ; besides, if there be any little disorder, the officers, keeping a good eye, and being every of them in his fit place, will easily reform it.

The places of the officers are, in the head of the troop for the Captain, and in the rearward of all for the Lieutenant (except it be in a retreat, and then the Captain should be in the rearguard, and the Lieutenant in the head) and the Serjeants on both sides, who are to go up and down, and to see the soldiers keep their ranks and files.

Teaching of motions is added to teaching of marches, because there are many such that are no marches at all. Some, without changing of place, in only turning the faces of the right hand, or on the left, or about, that is to say, the contrary way to that they were ; which is necessary if the enemy should charge on either side, or behind. Some other motions there are which change place, but yet no more than a removing from one rank to another, where as commonly when some remove others stand still ; and these kind of motions are doubling of ranks, or doubling of files, as the enemy, or ground we have, causeth us to make our flank or front greater or less. There is also to be taught another motion, in which all do move, and yet none do march, which is the opening and closing of files ; which is of use not only when we would have one rank pass through another, or the troop make a counter march, but when we would

draw the troop quickly, and in order, more of one hand or another.

In teaching the soldiers to know the sound of the drum, we must make them observe not only what the drummer doth, but what time he keeps, for according to that the soldier is to march slower or faster ; and as by the sound of the drum we do teach the soldiers to march, so by the voice we do teach them all other motions. To make them perfect in these motions it is thought good to use them to some certain words, which, being once learned, shall still serve for direction. Those which were used in training and disciplining her Majesty's army at Plymouth were such as these.

Leaders, stand forward with your files.

Ranks open forward, five paces

Faces to the right hand.

Faces to the left hand.

Faces about.

Open your files, three feet.

Close your files.

Open your files to the right hand.

Close your files to the right hand.

Open your files to the left hand.

Close your files to the left hand.

Double your files to the right hand.

Double your files to the left hand.

Double your ranks to the right hand.

Double your ranks to the left hand.

As you were.

Ranks from behind close.

Ranks open backward, five paces.

Files on the right-hand turn.

Ranks on the right-hand turn.

Front pass through.

Followers pass through.

Front as you were.

Files as you were.—and such like.

For the most of these words there can be hardly better chosen ; but it is not so material what words we first choose to train by, as it is to use some words constantly ; and yet the same words should be used generally throughout the troops of one army, or else it will breed confusion ; and if it were generally in the discipline of one kingdom it were better.

Express by THOMAS SMITH.

May 9th, 1595.

No. CCXCI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 307.)

LORDS OF THE COUNCIL
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

AFTER our hearty commendations to your good Lordship. We have received divers advertisements from sundry places King of Spain's purpose, with a fleet of ships and to make descent in the parts adjoining to her Majesty's city, and, having given order for all things necessary for the making of an army to encounter them where they shall seek to come on shore ; for as much as her Majesty knoweth that you are no ways ignorant that the scope of the enemy's designs is wholly to subvert the state of

this kingdom, which God hath blessed with so great peace and tranquillity these many years, and further assureth herself that you that are a nobleman and a peer of the realm, besides your natural inclination as a true English subject, do take yourself further interested in the honour and state of this Kingdom than persons of other quality, will always be ready, to your uttermost power, to withstand their malicious attempts who seek to bring the estate of this flourishing Kingdom into servitude and confusion, together with the destruction of her Majesty's most royal person; it hath pleased her Majesty, in respect of her good opinion, and experience of your affection and fidelity towards her, who hath been the minister of God's blessings so many years upon us, to command us in her name to require your Lordship without any other delay to repair unto the Court, to attend her person, among others of the nobility, by the twentieth of this month,* with such troops of horsemen as you may conveniently make, both for lances and light

* In a succeeding letter, dated August 12, the time is extended to the 25th on account of the difficulty of providing horses. It is probable that the true reason for this sudden levy was to counteract the ambitious designs and growing popularity of the Earl of Essex, whose late conduct in Ireland had greatly alarmed the Queen and her ministers; and the event seems to justify this conjecture; for Essex presenting himself soon after, privately, and in an humble manner, was committed to the custody of the Lord Keeper, and the forces were immediately disbanded. Camden tells us that 6000 foot were raised in London only, of which 3000 were for the guard of the Queen's person, and a still greater number in the counties. The Admiral Nottingham was appointed Commander in Chief of this army, his commission stating, that it was to serve as well against malcontents at home as foreign enemies.

horsmen ; wherein, to the intent your want of great horse or geldings (whereof the more you bring the better it shall be taken) may be supplied, otherwise her Majesty requireth you to increase your numbers by providing able men with petronells,* upon horses of smaller stature than is wanted for a lance or a staff ; the same to remain about her as long as she shall think convenient.

Herein we little doubt but your Lordship will, with all expedition and resolution, make manifest to the world your affection to her safety and preservation who never thought anything too dear that she possessed, of life, or fortune, so it might be thought fit to be employed for the good of her Kingdom and people. And thus, being ready for our parts also, to our best power, to unite ourselves in all things with you that may frustrate their ambition whose power this Kingdom doth contemn, having so just a quarrel, and such a Prince to defend, we commit you to God.

From the Court at Nonsuch, August 5th, 1599.

Your Lordship's loving friends,

| | |
|----------------------|---------------|
| THOS. EGERTON, C. S. | T. BUCKHURST. |
|----------------------|---------------|

| | |
|-------------|--------------|
| NOTTINGHAM. | G. HUNSDON.† |
|-------------|--------------|

| | |
|------------|------------|
| Ro. CECIL. | Ro. NORTH. |
|------------|------------|

| | |
|--------------|---------------|
| W. KNOLLYS.‡ | J. FORTESCUE. |
|--------------|---------------|

To our very good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury.

* Light hand-guns so called, which were slung across the breast.

† George Carey, Lord Hunsdon, eldest son of Henry, the first Lord, by Anne, daughter of Sir Thomas Morgan, Knight. This nobleman, as well as his father, was introduced to Elizabeth's favours, and the public service, rather by his relation in blood to that

No. CCXCII.

(Cecil Papers.)

MICHAEL STANHOPE TO SIR ROBERT CECIL.*

I HUMBLY beseech your honour to give me leave to unburden myself, and to entreat your help in that which I cannot now, as my case is, perform according unto my duty. These pearls my Lord Keeper presented by me unto her Majesty, as a

Princess than by his own merits. He attended the Earl of Sussex in the expedition into Scotland in 1570, when he received the honour of knighthood, having distinguished himself by his intrepidity in the field, and yet more by a challenge to the Lord Fleming, Governor of Dunbarton, in that romantic style which was then fashionable. He was also present at the memorable siege of Edinburgh Castle three years after, and having in these excursions obtained some knowledge of the affairs of Scotland, was joined to Mr. Robert Bowes in the embassy of 1582, and in 1589 went again to that country, charged with some commissions of small moment. Soon after his return he was appointed Governor of the Isle of Wight, and Captain of the Band of Pensioners upon his father's death in 1596, when he was sworn of the Privy Council, and invested with the Order of the Garter. He succeeded Lord Cobham as Chamberlain of the Household in 1607-8, and died in that high office, Sept. 9th, 1603, leaving issue by his wife, Elizabeth, daughter to Sir John Spencer, of Althorpe in Northamptonshire, Elizabeth, his heir, married to Sir Thomas Berkeley, son and heir to Henry Lord Berkeley.

† Sir William Knollys, Knight, second son of Sir Francis Knollys, K. G. by Catherine, daughter of William Carey, Knighth of the Body to Henry VIII., had lately obtained a seat in the Privy Council. He was commissioned in 1599, with others, to negotiate between the King of Spain and the Low Countries, and was appointed Treasurer of the Household two years after. James I. in the first year of his reign, created him Baron Knollys, of Greys in Oxfordshire; in 1614 made him Master of the Wards; and about the same time honoured him with the Order of the Garter. In 1616 he was advanced to the title of Viscount Wallingford, and in 1626, by Charles I., to the Earldom of Banbury. He died May 25th, 1632, aged 88, and was buried at Greys. For his marriages, and the remarkable consequences of the second, see Vol. I. p. 311.

* Indorsed, " November, 1599."

small token (in respect of her greatness) of his very thankful mind for her gracious care in maintaining of his credit, whereby he is the better enabled to his public calling and service. Her Majesty, liking marvellous well of the present, in respect of the goodness thereof, and better of his Lordship's nature and thankful mind, pleased to say that he was hardly imposed by the arbitrators, and no reason he should be at so great a further charge. After many speeches and tokens of her good liking of the present, and of her favour towards my Lord, she willed me to give his Lordship very many thanks, and to signify unto him how well she did take its good regard of her gracious dealing, but that her mind was as great to refuse as his was to give ; so, in her princely magnanimity, would needs have me to carry them back, with her many and kind thanks. When I came unto his Lordship, and delivered her Majesty's pleasure, and that he saw the pearl, his countenance changed, and I assure your Honour he looked upon me with a heavy eye, as if I had either carelessly or doltishly performed the trust he committed unto me ; and said that he was very sorry that the show of his thankful mind was no more acceptable unto her Majesty. He said that in regard of her greatness the gift was nothing, but that he did hope that it would have pleased her to have accepted his dutiful and thankful mind ; but for the pearls, he would not lay hand of them, but bid me do what I would with them.

Now I must acquaint your Honour what is the

cause that I attend not her Majesty again, as I meant to do. My wife's gentlewoman who waited upon her, having been sick four or five days, is now full of the small-pox ; my mother-in-law's gentlewoman in like sort. So soon as we had cause to suspect this, my wife and I did remove to my sister Bartel's house, where we stay, and mind to cleanse ourselves, to avoid the worst, if it please God ; till which time I dare not presume to approach her royal person, but humbly desire your Honour to perform the first part as in your wisdom shall seem best, and to make my case known unto her Majesty, in discharge of my duty.

So I humbly leave your Honour and rest,
ever your Honour's,

MICH. STANHOPE.*

*To the right honourable Sir Robert Cecil,
Knight, principal Secretary, and Master of
the Wards.*

* Michael, afterwards Sir Michael Stanhope, of Sudbourn in Suffolk, fifth son of Sir Michael Stanhope, of Shelford in Nottinghamshire, who suffered death in the reign of Edward VI. for his attachment to the Duke of Somerset, by Anne, daughter of Nicholas Rawson, of Aveley in Essex. Of this gentleman, who seems to have been a mere courtier, we know no more than that he was for many years a groom of the Privy Chamber to Elizabeth, and one of her chief agents in the petty intrigues of her household. He married Anne, daughter and heir of Sir William Read, of Osterley in Middlesex, and had issue three daughters ; Jane, married first to a son of Robert Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex ; secondly, to Sir William Withipole ; Elizabeth, to George Lord Berkeley ; and Bridget, to George Fielding, Earl of Desmond.

No. CCXCIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. I. fol. 321)

THE EARL OF LINCOLN
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My Lord,

I CAME presently to London upon the receipt of your letters, with a desire to satisfy the effect thereof, insomuch as was in my power, and to come to you myself with answer. For coming, I was staid with the extremity of the pain of my eyes. For the money your Lordship writes of, I should have received £500 of the Countess of Bedford (if her Ladyship had dealt truly and honourably with me), which I accounted of as a great help towards my great payment which you know of, and this day she offers to put me off with £200, and to arbitrate the rest, contrary to all reason, honour, or conscience; yet, nevertheless, I intend to be sure of the money which I am to pay to the party you know of long before the day that it is due: and, therefore, if £300 of that money will please you I will take it up presently, whatsoever it cost me, without any trouble or charge to your Lordship, so that I may have three or four words of his hand to acquit me of so much for my danger if I should fail to him; and my bonds are so extremely great that I dare not adventure to trust any man living in that case upon any reasonable assurance. I am loath to make any privy to the great losses and hinderances which I have of late years received for my goodwill and love in trusting my friends; which hath so mightily decayed my estate,

that even in October last I did forfeit to Mr. Brooke, the goldsmith, whom your Lordship knoweth, the rarest chains and jewels in London for £ 500, being worth double that money. One diamond for £ 300, worth £ 600; gold plate laid to gage for £ 500; one hundred of the fairest pearls in London, laid to gage for £ 500; (which pearl your Lady hath seen, and knoweth to be much better worth) which if my extremities had not been great I would never have done. Notwithstanding I am, and ever will be ready, with my poverty, to shew my goodwill unto your Lordship; to whom I recommend myself very heartily, and desire very much to hear of your better health and amendment, which God grant, to whose protection I leave you.

This 7th of January, 1599.

Your Lordship's very assured friend.

H. LINCOLN.*

*To the right honourable my very good Lord the
Earl of Shrewsbury, give these.*

* Henry Clinton, second Earl of Lincoln of his family. We have but little information respecting this nobleman, and that little is not to his advantage. Mr. Anthony Bacon, in a letter published by Doctor Birch, relating to his embassy to the Landgrave of Hesse, in 1596, arraigns his conduct at that court in the most bitter terms; and I have in my possession an original petition from Roger Fullshaw, of Waddingworth in Lincolnshire, gent., dated in the same year, to the Lords of the Council, stating the most horrible outrages committed against him by the Earl, and praying for protection. His behaviour in both these instances appears to have been strongly tinctured by insanity. He died September 9, 1616. See more of him in the *Peerages, Art. Duke of Newcastle.*

No. CCXCIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. f. 11.)

SIR THOMAS EDMONDS
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My most honourable good Lord,
YOUR Lordship may in reason expect that we should have done much business since our coming hither,* by the long time that we have spent here; but these men, that would fain exact more courtesy of us than we can yield them, have all this while amused us in marshalling the ceremony of precedence, so as yet there hath been no public meeting between them and us, but only interlocution between some of us and them. Immediately upon our arrival we agreed, as by my former I certified your Lordship to send and communicate to each other, the copies of our commissions; and, upon the sight of theirs, we found cause to except against the same for not being in all points so ample as ours, but, since, we have yielded to accommodate those difficulties, upon some reasonable satisfaction

* To treat with the Ambassadors of the King of Spain and the Archduke. Edmonds, to whom the negotiation was principally committed, was joined in commission with Sir Henry Neville, the English Ambassador in Ordinary; Secretary Herbert; and Robert Beale; but the differences about precedence to which this letter alludes rendered their endeavours fruitless. The King of Spain, as Sir Thomas observes, founded his claim on the present greatness of his monarchy; to which Elizabeth answered, that as England had always been allowed the priority to the ancient kingdoms of Castile, Arragon, &c., while they were separate, its right could not be impaired by their junction. The zealous author of this letter went privately to Rome during the treaty, merely to procure a certificate to that purpose from a certain collection called the Book of Ceremonies, which was kept in the Papal Court, and at that time gave the law in such cases.

which they have given us therein, referring the further supplying of all defects to the ratification.

Afterwards we proceeded, according to our instructions, to demand the precedency of them ; which they took in very evil part, and refused to yield us so much as equality. We delivered them reasons to prove the right of priority to be due unto her Majesty ; which, in effect, they could not otherwise answer than only with the present greatness of their monarchy ; but, to the end to make it appear that we would not stand upon the clearing of that difference, which we came not here to debate, but to proceed in the business of the treaty, we offered to meet them in any course of due equality, without prejudice to the pretence of either side. They shewed to be as unwilling and backward to agree to such equality ; pretending long stiffly that we have no reason to dispute the competition with them ; and, among other causes which they alleged why they could not like of an equal course, they stood chiefly upon this ; that they contesting with France for the place, and we yielding it to France, if they should now assent to an equality with us it were to quit their pretension against France. In the end they proposed unto us that so as we would come and treat at the lodging of their Ambassador, that they would give us there the honour of the first place, and that they would also come sometimes to our lodging ; but we rejected that motion for being too unequal, and, in effect, the same thing as if her Majesty should send to treat in their country, which they knew was di-

rectly refused. They pretended that there is very little inequality therein ; and that we ought not to refuse to yield them so small an advantage, to recompense the blow which we have given them by our claim of the precedence ; because the first challengers do, as it were, carry the honour. We maintained that they were nothing disparaged by our demand, and assured them that we were resolved not to yield in any the least jot of disadvantage or dishonour to her Majesty ; and protested to them that if thereupon there should grow any breach between us, that the fault should not be ours but theirs, who would not be satisfied with reason and equality, but would needs urge a prejudice and disadvantage upon us.

When, after so long contestation, they found us still thus stiff, then they prayed us to have patience with them a little while, till they might send to Brussels to receive the Archduke's further direction about this matter, and they have promised us that within four or five days we shall have an answer ; so as I hope we shall now forthwith come to an issue of that which we have so long disputed. And thus, beseeching your Lordship to pardon this presumption, I do most humbly take my leave.

From Boulogne, the 12th of June, 1600.

Your Lordship's most humbly bounden,
THOS. EDMONDS.

Having written this letter, and staying it by reason of the contrariety of the wind, I received in the mean time your Lordship's last letter, for which I do most humbly thank your Lordship. We have

understood here of the proceeding against my Lord of Essex, but we know not what to conceive ; whether, now that the Queen's displeasure is better satisfied, it is like to move her to more clemency towards him, as some will infer.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCXCV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. f. 19.)

THE QUEEN TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

BY THE QUEEN.

Elizabeth R.

RIGHT trusty and right well beloved cousin, we greet you well. How loth we are to burden our subjects with charges our own heart doth know best, and the manner of our proceeding therein, when cause hath been given, may plainly testify ; but seeing no Prince's ordinary means can suffice to all expenses, which extraordinary accidents may force them unto, we are justly moved now, as heretofore we have been, to use their service for extinguishing of the long continued rebellion in Ireland ; whereunto (after an infinite charge, and by the good directions lately given by us, and well executed there) great and hopeful beginnings are made, as we understand from our Depu'y and counsel of that our kingdom, by our Secretary there, whom they have sent unto us expressly to inform us thereof, and to require a reinforcement and increase of our army for some time, to the ends that by the greatness thereof a general prosecution

may be made upon those lurking rebels at one instant, in all places of their retreats which is specially to be executed this harvest; which, though it do draw us into a greater charge than we intended, and, consequently, our good subjects here into some part of the burthen, yet when we consider it such an increase for the present is like as much to diminish the charges in abridgment of time as it doth augment it in proportion, we cannot be of other mind than to further such good beginnings with some increase of our army both in horse and foot; the rather for that the arch traitor* now doth with more insolency than ever before, pretend the planting of the Romish superstition, which in sequel doth draw after it the extirpation of God's true religion, wherein we purpose to live and die.

In which respect we require and authorize you hereby to cause to be forthwith levied and mustered within that county of Derby, the number of fifty good, able, and sufficient footmen, and them to send to the sea-side to be embarked at such place and time, and so armed and furnished, as from our Privy Council shall be directed, to whom for all particulars for the furtherance of this service we refer you; adding only that which we cannot but with grief add, that our Deputy and Council, and all the ministers of our army in Ireland, do so often and seriously advertise us of the ill choice of the persons of such soldiers as are sent commonly thither, and of the mischiefs that thereby

* The Earl of Tyrone.

arise to our service, as we cannot but still expressly both charge you with that which is past, and require the amendment thereof now; letting you know, for assured, that, for as much as we find that no one thing is more the cause of continuance of this huge charge to us and our realm than the bad choice of such as are sent thither to do service (being, for the most part, persons so base and ill-conditioned as do both dishonour our nation, and hinder the public service), we cannot hereafter be senseless of the wound we fear our state herein receiveth, but must and will severely and exemplarily punish such abuses wheresoever we find them; wishing you, and others whom it may concern, to be forewarned by this admonition, and to give no cause to us to make them examples to serve for others instruction.

Given under our signet, at our manor of Greenwich, the 25th of June, 1600, in the two-and-fortieth year of our reign.

To our right trusty and right well beloved cousin the Earl of Shrewsbury, Lieutenant of our County of Derby.

No. CCXCVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. f. 13.)

LORDS OF THE COUNCIL
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

AFTER our very hearty commendations to your Lordship. Forasmuch as her Majesty hath been pleased, by her own letters of the 25th of this instant, to declare unto you at large, and in most gracious manner, the just and most important rea-

sons that have moved her to require at this time some farther assistance of foot to be levied in that County of Derby, to the number of fifty men, for the service in Ireland ; by which letters you may very manifestly perceive how unwilling her most gracious mind and disposition is drawn to the imposing of any such charges upon her loving subjects, and how gladly she would forbear the same, if it might stand with the honour and safety of her state ; it shall be altogether needless for us to make any rehearsal or declaration thereof ; and, therefore, we will immediately apply our letters to such particular directions for the setting forth of the said fifty men, as by her Majesty's appointment your Lordship is to receive of us ; of which the first and chiefest is touching the choice of serviceable and sufficient persons, a matter so often and so earnestly called upon by us in all our letters upon like occasion heretofore, and so slenderly regarded or performed, for the most part, as it grieveth us to see the little effect our admonitions have taken, by the evil choice of so many lewd and dissolute persons as have, and do continually, either run away before they come to embark, or abandon their service very soon after their coming into Ireland ; and, notwithstanding that those men are known and seen in divers counties, yet are they no way apprehended, but left unpunished. To the amendment of which, if other respects move not so much as they ought, yet we think that the regard for the country's credit, and continual charge, should be a very great motive ; considering that the evil choice

of such men as run away and forsake the service is the chiefest cause of the decay of the army, which decay hath required, and will , supplies will impose this kind of charge ; by which reason it is in the power of the country to ease itself, in great part, of the burthen of these levies henceforth ; and, therefore, if it be not done, it is manifest where the blame thereof is to be laid.

And as this first point, concerning the choice of the men, is of most importance, so likewise great care is to be taken that their arms be good and serviceable ; wherein, nevertheless, divers counties have been so faulty and deficient, as that oftentimes when the soldiers have gone unto the port, her Majesty hath been put to the charge of renewing arms for very many of them. For the sorting of the armies this order is to be observed ; that in the said number of fifty there be twelve pikes, armed with corslets, pouldrons, and good murrions ; six bills, with long stems, armed as the pikes ; muskets, with murrions and rests ; six bastard muskets, with good murrions, and twenty-six callivers, likewise with good murrions ; and specially that care be had to furnish them all with good swords and daggers, the swords to be Turkey blades, and close hilts ; of which there hath been very ill choice made, and therefore we do require you at this time to be more careful in the choosing of them.

The third point is concerning the provision of coats and other , wherein we find it necessary for very good considerations to vary some-

what from the custom of former times, in such sort as we hold it best for the service of the country, and for her Majesty's service ; for whereas heretofore, when the coats were provided by the several counties, divers inconveniences did ensue ; as the loss of the apparel when the soldiers did run away ; the spoil of it in their way to the port ; the unsuitable matching of the apparel of divers counties with the rest of the army, provided at her Majesty's charge ; the unskilfulness of choosing it as may be aptest for that service ; and many times the bad choice and of the apparel itself. For these considerations, and especially because the appareling of the soldiers for Ireland,* being different from such as would be meet for other service, cannot be so well fitted by provisions of the country, her Majesty is well pleased for the ease of the country, to add a charge of her own, to the sum of eight shillings at least in the appareling of every soldier, unto the allowance of the county ; and to give order to some chosen men to provide apparel for the whole levy (to be diligently viewed and allowed by gentlemen of good place, and of knowledge in service before it be sent), which shall

* In Vol. N of the Talbot papers, fol. 360, is a schedule of the usual apparel of a soldier on the Irish service, extracted from the Council-book, and signed by William Waad, the Clerk. It seems to have been annexed to a letter from the Lords of the Council to the Earl of Shrewsbury, dated Jan. 14, 1599, and consists of the following articles : "A canvas dubblete ; a pare of Venetyans of broad clothe ; two shirts and two bandes ; one paire of shoes, and two paire of brogues ; one paire of kersey stockings, and two paire of Irish frize ; a hatte cappe ; a cassocke, very longe, of broad clothe, and lined throughout, or an Irishe mantle."

be truly delivered to the several conductors of the soldiers forthwith upon their coming to the port; for provision of which apparel it is her Majesty's pleasure that you shall cause to be sent to Chester, and to be paid unto the Mayor there, so much money as may suffice for the said fifty men, after the rate of forty shillings a man.

The last direction that we are to give you is for the payment of conduct money for the said number of soldiers and their conductor, after the rate of eight-pence the day for each soldier, and four shillings a day for the conductor, for so many days and no more, as may suffice for their conduct to the port of Chester, where they may not fail to be in readiness by the 25th of July next; unto which port that they may be the more orderly conducted and restrained from running away, as many heretofore have done, we do pray and require your Lordship to cause choice to be made of some such fit and sufficient man to have the charge of conducting them to the port as you will undertake shall well and honestly perform the same; wherein, because heretofore when men have been chopped and changed by the way, it hath been doubtful where the fault was, we do now leave the choice of the conductor wholly to your Lordship, because none shall meddle with them till they be delivered to the Captains at Chester; and, as we have already given direction for receiving of them at the port, and for their transportation, and for their lodging and diet during the time they shall be constrained to attend their embarking, so for the charges of the coat money, according to her Majesty's usual

alremore of your buildings in Lancashire if the hundred masters will the same value mentioned before us in our resolution shall be made unto you, without any further remuneration charged by the Mayor of Chester; or, as your Lordship at any time if your Deputy Lieutenant, do send, under your own hand, a particular estimation of the said sum and hundred masters by the conductors unto the Mayor. Your performance of these things we do earnestly pray and require your Lordship to take speedy order; and, without, to cause triparty rolls to be made, according to the usual manner of the said number of soldiers (which are to be complete, without any abatement of dead pays), and of their several arms and furnitures, and to send unto us one of those rolls, retaining another to yourself, and delivering the third unto the conductor. So we bid your Lordship very heartily well to fare.

From the Court at Greenwich, June 26th, 1600.

Your Lordship's very loving friends,

THOS. EGERTON, C. S.

T. BUCKHURST.

C. HUNDON.

Ro. NORTH.

W. KNOLLYS.

Ro. CECIL.

NOTTINGHAM.

J. FORTESCUE.*

To our very good Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury,
her Majesty's Lieutenant of the County of
Derby.

* Sir John Fortescue, Knight, a person of considerable abilities and accomplishments, and one of the oldest servants of this reign. He descended from an elder brother of Sir John Fortescue, the great Chief Justice under Henry VI., and was the eldest son of Sir Audren, who was beheaded in 1539, by his second wife, Anne, daughter of Sir William Reed, of Bore stall in Buckinghamshire, and widow of Sir Giles Greville. He was so eminent a Greek and Latin scholar, that Elizabeth made him her director in the study of those languages; and so strictly honest, that though

No. CCXCVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. f. 25.)

LORD LUMLEY TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

MY duty humbly remembered to your good Lordship, and my good Lady; I think myself much bound to your Lordship, for your honourable letters left at my house in London; and, having understanding by my Lady your daughter of her sending now to your Lordship, I may not omit my duty in returning these, though I assure your Lordship, there is nothing present worth the writing that I know, other than it is like the King of Spain and the French King are like to fall into wars, for the King of Spain hath arrested all the French ships in respect of the wrongs done to the Duke of Savoy.* Sir H. Brunkard is returned

she chose him of the Privy Council at her accession professedly for his integrity, she afterwards declared that it surpassed her expectation. She likewise gave him the offices of Master of her Wardrobe, Chancellor of the Exchequer, and of the Duchy of Lancaster; but he retained only the last of those appointments in the following reign, for his favour at Court expired with his mistress. "His and Raleigh's failure," says Lloyd, "was their design of articling with King James at his first coming; not so much for himself as for his followers, in regard of the known feud between the nations." He married, first, Cicely, daughter and co-heir of Sir Edmund Ashfield, of Tottenhoe in Buckinghamshire, by whom he had two sons; Sir Francis, made a Knight of the Bath at the coronation of James I., and Sir William; and one daughter; Eleanor, first married to Valentine Pigot; secondly to Edward Hubert. His second wife was Alice, daughter of Christopher Smith, by whom he had issue an only daughter, Margery, who married Sir John Pulteney, of Misterton in Leicestershire. Sir John Fortescue died at his house in Westminster Dec. 23, 1607; and was buried at Mursley in Buckinghamshire, on the 6th of July in the following year.

* Charles Emanuel the First. He had wrested the Marquisate of Saluzzo, or Saluces, in Piedmont, from the French, while they were engaged in the wars of the League, in revenge for which

yesterday out of the North*, but what he bringeth as yet is unknown to men of my quality. The Queen is in no evil mood, but well enough disposed, if it be not by fits upon harsh intelligence. The ships which were sent with Mr. [redacted] to have done some good upon the returning of the India fleet, are returned without anything done, and all that treasure safely arrived in Spain. It may be that ere it be long we may have a Parliament, and then I hope (that which I desire) to see your Lordship and my Lady in these parts ; till when, and ever, I wish to you both all honour and prosperity.

From Nonsuch, this last of September, 1600.

Your Lordship's assured friend,

LUMLEY.†

Henry IV. attacked his dominions. The duke, who was of a busy ambitious turn, possessed a powerful interest in the Court of France ; and the King of Spain, whose daughter he had married, espoused his cause as a common enemy to that state ; but Henry's successes in Savoy forced him to agree to a separate treaty towards the end of this year, by which he was obliged to relinquish a large tract of country in the territory of Geneva, in exchange for the Marquisate.

* This gentleman is called in a letter from James VI. of Scotland to his Ambassadors in England, a copy of which is in Doctor Forbes's Papers, "Sir Henry Brunkard." He was sent by Elizabeth to congratulate James on his escape from the Gowry conspiracy, and was entrusted with other affairs during his residence in Scotland. He died President of Munster, in 1607.

† John Lord Lumley, from a great uncle of whom the Earls of Scarborough descend. This nobleman was little employed in matters of state, and history furnishes us with nothing relative to his public conduct, except his invective in the Star-chamber against the unfortunate Davison, which, for the honour of his memory, had been better suppressed. Camden, however, who recites it, tells us that he was "a person of entire virtue, integrity, and innocence, and, in his old age a complete pattern of true nobility." He died April 11, 1609.

My Lord of Southampton is returned out of the Low Countries, and is with his Lady, at my Lord Riche's in Essex. All things out of Ireland lie dead till we may hear what my Lord Montjoy* hath done in this his journey in the North against Tyrone. Our young Earl of Desmon is newly gone hence into Ireland, upon whose desert his patent of the title may follow, and therewith some portions of lands to be given him; in the mean time he hath the name of Earl given him, and a pension of the sum of £ 500.

*To the right honourable and his assured good
Lord the Earl of Shrewsbury.*

No. CCXCVIII.

(Cecil Papers.)

*Indorsed Feb. 1600. Names of prisoners, and where they are
prisoned.*

TOWER.

EARL of Essex; Earl of Rutland; Earl of Southampton; Lord Sandes; Lord Cromwell; Mr. Parker (called Mounteagle); Charles Davers.

GATEHOUSE.

Sir Ferdinand Gorge; —— Blumfeild; William Wingfeild; Edward Throgmorton; Sir Robert Vernon: x + Mr. Temple; Joseph Vaughan; Mr. Bromley; x Charles Ogle; Sir H. Linley.

* Charles Blount, Lord Montjoy, who had lately succeeded Essex in the office of Deputy of Ireland. He died April 3, 1596.

+ So marked in the original.

FLEET.

Sir Edward Lyttelton; x Sir Charles Percy; x Sir Jostlyn Percy; x Sir Edward Baynham; Henry Cuff, Secretary to the Earl of Essex; Gray Bridgis; Christopher Dorrington; x Sir Henry Carew.

LUDGATE.

Joseph Whelor; Thomas Brown; Thomas Medley.

NEWGATE.

x Sir John Davis; x Sir Gillye Mericke; x Francis Tresham; x William Downhall.

WOOD STREET COUNTER.

Thomas West, Knight; Stephen Mann; John Foster; William Parkins; Bryan Dunson; Thomas Crompton; x George Orrell; x Ellis Jones; John Lloyd; Richard Harford; Robert Catesby; John Lyttelton; a Scotchman.

COUNTER OF POULTRY.

x Francis Smith; William Sprat; Ambrose Blundell; Francis Kinersley; Edward Kinersley; Edward Hart; William Grantham; Edward Hamer; x Richard Chamley; Anthony Rous; John Ardern; John Tympe; Francis Leyster; Thomas Condel; Thomas Typin; Francis Manners; William Constable, Knight; Peter Ryddall; William Greeneall; William Greene; John Norris; John Vernon; Robert Dobson; Francis Pridew, stranger; John Lymrick; George Sheffield; John Routh.

MARSHALSEY.

x Edward Bushel ; x Robert Gosnel ; x Captain Buck ; x Captain Whitlock.

WHITE LION.

John Grant ; x Christopher Wright ; x John Wright ; William Isbroke, apprentice.

KING'S BENCH.

Robert Dalington.

Doctor Fletcher, committed to Alderman Lowe.

Doctor Hawkins, committed to Alderman Lee.

No. CCXCIX.

(Cecil Papers.)

SIR HENRY NEVILLE TO SIR ROBERT CECIL.

Right Honourable,

IT pleased my Lord Treasurer to let me understand that her Majesty had accepted of my offer of £ 5000 in such sort as I had made it, viz. to pay 1000 marks in money upon the delivery of my pardon, and to deliver land for 2000 marks more, and to pay the £ 3000 remaining by 1000 marks a year. Hereupon I have caused my counsel to attend Mr. Attorney ; and have satisfied my Lord Treasurer and him about all points to be performed on my part, saving only about the assurance for the yearly payment of the 1000 marks ; I offering my own recognisances for the several payments, and my Lord requiring bonds with sureties. Now, because it is an impossible thing for me to procure my friends to entangle their estates for me in bonds to the Queen, considering that all men know that

my state is utterly overthrown both in act and in hope, and that being so engaged to the Queen, who will be served before all men else, there is no means left me to secure them, I have been an earnest suitor to my Lord to accept my own recognisance, as he did in like case of my Lord Sandes. His answer is that he will not do it of himself alone ; but if I would move the rest of the Lords that were Commissioners as well as he, I should find him as forward as any man. I have therefore made bold to send an humble petition to the Lords to that effect, and have thought it my part to acquaint your Honour particularly with it, and to beseech you to yield me your good favour in it as you have done in all the rest, that I may hope to have an end of my misery ; which I do the rather and more instantly desire at this time in respect of my poor wife, whose state I do much fear, as being overcharged with grief and sorrow, besides my troubles, with the late loss of one of her children, and the likelihood to lose another. These afflictions coming one upon another I doubt will much endanger her weak body and mind, unless she may receive some comfort in some other kind. I beseech your Honour to take the more compassion upon us ; and so, with my daily prayers to God for your honour's preservation, I humbly take my leave. This 3rd of April, 1602.

Your Honour's most bound, and willing to do
you all service,

HENRY NEVILLE.*

To the right honourable Sir Robert Cecil, Knight,
principal Secretary to her Majesty, give these at
the Court

No. CCC.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 33.)

SIR ROBERT CECIL

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. 1602.

My Lord,

BECAUSE I know not whether you would help me to one to lead me when I am blind (though I durst believe well of my Lady's compassion) I must plainly tell you that when the matter is not extraordinary I must crave pardon though I do dictate to another man's hand, being not able to undergo the continual multiplicity of the dispatches of state, and the due correspondencies which I owe to so great persons, and so dear friends, as your Lordship is ; to whom I shall write both darkly, and too

* Sir Henry Neville, Knight, ancestor to the respectable family of Neville of Billingbear in Berkshire, and son of Sir Henry Neville, of that place, by Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Sir John Graham. He owed his introduction at Court to a family connexion with Secretary Cecil, and his promotion there perhaps yet more to his own merit, for he was a person of great wisdom and integrity. He was appointed Ambassador to France in April 1599, and in the summer of the following year acted as first commissioner at the treaty of Boulogne. Unfortunately for him the negotiation was concluded a few months before the discovery of Essex's conspiracy, and at his return he unwarily listened to some hints of that wild design, which his excessive attachment to the Earl induced him to conceal. Essex, on his arraignment, named him as a party ; he was committed to the Tower for misprision of treason, in the midst of his preparations for returning to his charge in France, and sentenced to pay a very heavy fine, which, as appears from this letter, was mitigated to five thousand pounds. The alteration caused in his pecuniary circumstances by the rigid exaction of this penalty compelled him, in the next reign, to accept of offices beneath his deserts, and contrary to his spirited disposition : we shall find him (*see subsequent papers*) projecting and executing various little schemes for the temporary relief of James's necessities ; and in spite of the efforts made by his friends to get him appointed

shortly, even for avoiding of pains, which when there is cause shall never be wanting, nor a far greater sacrifice, to witness the love and service I owe you.

What my opinion hath been of the great rumours of Spain you best know, and can best judge whether my case be not hard when I must rather yield to that which is *vox populi* than dissuade preparations, the interruption whereof, if disaster follow, would serve for a razor to cut my throat ; yet I thank God that I have saved the Queen many a man's levy, and many a penny that must have been spent, if I had believed that the King of Spain would either have sent 15,000, 12,000, or 10,000, men in Ireland. This I write not as seeking glory, for it is the portion that belongs unto me ; though, in respect of the envy, and idle conceits of the felicity wherein I live, I may say I have but Martha her part * Neither do I write this with any such

Secretary in 1612, he was never advanced to any higher employment, owing, as is said, to the King's having conceived a personal dislike to him. Sir Henry Neville died July 15, 1615, leaving issue by his wife, Anne, daughter of Sir Henry Killigrew, of Cornwall, three sons ; Sir Henry, his heir ; Edward ; and William a civilian ; and six daughters ; Elizabeth, married to Sir Henry Berkeley, of Yarlington in Somersetshire ; Catherine, to Sir Richard Brooke, of Norton in Cheshire ; Mary, to Sir Edward Lewknor, of Denham in Suffolk ; Dorothy, to Richard Catlyn, of Wingfield Castle in the same county ; Frances, to Sir Richard Worsley, of Apuldurcomb in the Isle of Wight ; and Anne.

Several letters written by this gentleman during his embassy may be found in Winwood's Memorials : Doctor Birch, by the misconstruction of a very material passage in one of them, (see *Winw.* Vol. I. p. 301.) confounds him with another Sir Henry Neville, who was, in fact, the eldest son of the then Lord Abergavenny.

* " Now it came to pass, as they went, that he (Jesus) entered into a certain village, and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house ; and she had a sister called Mary, who sat at

rash security (knowing that the King of Spain may at all times send into Ireland to trouble us, though not to devour us), but that I am as forward as others, in measure, to supply the army with 2000 or 3000, and think it a very good counsel till October be past to keep some fleet upon his coasts ; of which the Fleming are now grown weary, for their fleet is now come home full of Brazil sugars.

For the letter which your Lordship wrote unto the Earl of Ormond, it was well and wisely written, and therefore I wish it might go on ; but this very day the Queen beginneth to like exceedingly well that Sir Edmund Butler's son shall marry the Earl's daughter, seeing it is to so good a purpose as the maintenance of a noble house ; whereof I mean to - morrow to advertise him by my letter, that he may presently open himself with what state he will enable this gentleman, if her Majesty restored him to honour and dignity.* Concerning the Lord of Delvin you may save your labour, for

Jesus' feet, and heard his word : but Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone ? bid her therefore that she help me. And Jesus answered, and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful, and troubled about many things ; but one thing is needful, and Mary hath chosen that good part which shall not be taken away from her."—*Luke, chap. x, v. 38, &c.*

The admirable justness with which Cecil applies this passage to his public situation at that time, will be a sufficient apology for inserting it here at length.

* The Earl of Ormond and Sir Edmund Butler were brothers. The latter, who had been attainted for his concern in the insurrection in Connaught, in 1596, obtained a pardon about this time, and his eldest son, Theobald, who was afterwards created Viscount of Tullyphelim, married Elizabeth, the Earl's daughter and heir.

he is dead of sickness ; and, though he hath been suffered to have his wife and his physicians to resort unto him, yet there appeareth every day more matter against him than before. For other things, they are as you left them, and we, once again, resolved on Wednesday to go onward to my Lord of Hertford's ; though in my opinion we shall not much pass Windsor. Thus for this time, I take my leave, and remain your Lordship's affectionate friend to command,

ROBERT CECIL.

From the Court at Oatlands.

Commend my service, I beseech you, to my Lady ; and now know that our progress even now is broken, further than hereabouts.

No. CCCI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. M. fol. 61.)

**SIR JOHN HARRINGTON
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.**

Right Honourable,

I WENT to Mr. Hammond, according as I promised, and at that instant, as I understood by him, he was sending to me for the same cause by your Lordship's direction. I found by the conveyance of the house that the architects of this last age had been much more careful than the former to avoid as much of the inconvenience as they could ; and I saw they had spared no costs, for I found fair cisterns of lead, of which we must now raise new uses, for these, to speak in the lawyers phrase, are good but for a moiety, specially where they are.

Your Lordship will bear with me if in this text I write obscurely, because so it is most mannerly.

Concerning Court news I can say little that is like to be news to your Lordship. This day I heard Mr. Secretary tell at dinner that Biron is dead, and died very desperate — a suitable end to one that had been a great blasphemer, and that had killed many scores with his own hands in cold blood. He accused his accusers to have been the first suggesters of his treasons. For Low Country news, Sir Edward Conway,* of the Brill, arrived here yesternight ; and out of his speeches we that are of the Court, but not of the Council, do gather that, either for lack of victuals or of spirit, there hath yet been no fighting. For Irish news : the Spaniards are still expected, and Sir Oliver Sent-john† is presently to repair into Ireland, as some think to supply Sir John Barkley's place, Serjeant Major, who was lately slain in a but where nor how is not known. For home news ; one Mrs. Thwaits, if I mistake not the name (she is

* Knighted at the taking of Cadiz, and at this time Governor of the Brill. Towards the end of the next reign he was appointed a Secretary of State, and soon after created Lord Conway, of Ragley in Warwickshire. Charles the First continued him in the secretaryship, and advanced him to the titles of Viscount Conway in England, and Viscount Killultagh in Ireland. He died President of the Council, January 3, 1630.

† An officer who had gained great reputation in Ireland, where he was afterwards President of Munster, Master of the Ordnance, and at last Lord Deputy. He was created Viscount Grandison in that country, by James I., with remainder to the issue of Sir Edward Villiers, a younger brother to the Duke of Buckingham ; and by Charles I. Baron Tregoeze, of Highworth, in Wiltshire ; but dying childless, December 30, 1630, the latter honour became extinct.

sister to Mr. Clifford's wife) follows an appeal against Mr. Manners, and my Lord Monteagle, and others that have the Queen's pardon, for the death of her husband, and as freshly as if it were but yesterday ; but both she and her counsel, if they can be known, are like to be committed for their manifest contempt. The progress holds still, where it was, and as it was. My Lord Admiral is sick, and only hopeth to meet the Queen at the Earl of Hertford's. My Lady Ambassadress of France was entertained by the Queen yesterday very graciously, and gave among the Queen's maids French purses, fans, and masks, very bountifully.

This is all I had, and more than is worth the writing ; and so, desiring to be most bumbly recommended to my Lady; and most kindly to Sir Charles Cavendish, who shall have cause to thank me for his chamber in Broad Street,

I remain, humbly at your Lordship's service,

JOHN HARRINGTON.*

Greenwich, of July, 1602.

Postscript. I must remember in a postscript how Mr. Secretary made a great boast this day at dinner, that my Lord and my Lady of Shrewsbury had commended his river.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord,
the Earl of Shrewsbury, one of her Majesty's
most honourable Privy Counsel.*

* Sir John Harrington, Knight, second son, but at length heir to John, the first Lord Harrington of Exton, by Anne, daughter of Robert Kelway, Surveyor of the Court of Wards. He was made a Knight of the Bath at the creation of the Duke of York in January 1604, O. S., succeeded his father in August 1613, and died unmarried on the 27th of February following. His large fortune was inherited by his next sister Lucy, Countess of Bedford.

No. CCCII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 37.)

Indorsed by the EARL OF SHREWSBURY, "out of France.
Execution of DUKE BYRON."*

Monsieur,

LES grandes obligations que je vous ai ne me permettent laisser passer cette commodité sans me mettre en devoir de vous témoigner le désir que j'ai de vous servir, en attendant que Dieu m'en fasse naître un meilleur moyen.

* Charles de Gontault de Biron, son of the old Marshal Armand de Biron mentioned in former papers. He had been Henry's fellow soldier, and familiar companion. That Prince, who had formerly saved his life in the field at the imminent hazard of his own, raised him to the dignities of Duke, Peer, and Marshal of France, and continued to load him with favours even after his desperate designs were discovered. He fell a victim to the intrigues of Philip the Third of Spain, who, in concert with the Duke of Savoy, had formed a plan for annihilating the French Monarchy, by erecting the governments of provinces into petty states, and giving the sovereignty of them to their respective governors. Thus Biron was to have had Burgundy, Franche Comté, and the County of Charolois; and promises of a like nature were made to the Duke of Bouillon, the Count of Auvergne, and other disaffected persons of rank who had engaged with him. He was impeached by James la Fin, a man of noble family in Burgundy, who possessed every requisite for treason except fidelity to his employers, and who, as the Marshal could neither write or read, was employed in his foreign negotiations. These he disclosed to the French ministers several months before Biron's apprehension, who in the mean time had been sent Ambassador to England and Switzerland with a view of detaching him from his dangerous connections, in which after his return he engaged more deeply than ever. Henry, who loved him for his bravery and generous spirit, having vainly used all possible means to bring him to a confession, was at length obliged to give him up to justice; and his conduct on the scaffold exhibited a frightful instance of that disposition to which his unhappy exit was owing; a mixture of pride and melancholy, which on trying occasions generally rose to a degree of insanity.

sister to Mr. Clifford's w: Chancelier,*
 against Mr. Manners, & Stat et Maîtres
 and others that have Jivers jours, avec
 death of her husbar faire le procès au
 but yesterday; br autres Vendredi dernier
 they can be kno able, trois soldats sur les
 their manifestt ut un placart à la grande porte
 where it was ant en substance que ce n'étoient
 sick, and que l'on imposoit au Maréchal, et
 Earl of r eut a bien regarder comme elle la
 France , le reste ne contenoit que ses louanges.
 very r porté à Messieurs par le Chevalier du Guet,
 Fre quels se leverent tout aussitot, et se rassemble-
 nt le lendemain, qui étoit le Samedi, 19me de ce
 mois, pour ouïr le Maréchal, qui leur fut amené
 par Monsieur de Montigny.† Au commencement
 il fut mis au barreau, mais Monsieur le Chancelier,
 ne le pouvant entendre, le fait approcher dans le
 parquet, où on lui donna un escabeau; quelques-
 uns éstinent que c'étoit pour garder les formalités
 accoutumées de la Celette. Là il fait une belle et
 longue harangue des services de feu son père et de
 lui, priant Messieurs de mettre différence entre
 lui et La Fiu, qu'il chargeoit avoir été celui qui
 l'avoit poussé à telle chose, voir qu'il l'avoit en-
 sorcelé; qu'un chacun le cognoissoit pour être le
 plus méchant homme de la terre: et comme il ne
 voulut rien confesser, Monsieur le Chancelier lui

* Pomponne de Bellievre, Chancellor of France. He died in 1608.

† Francis de la Grange de Montigny, soon after Governor of Metz.

dit que la justice avoit des moyens pour faire parler ceux qui se vouloient montrer trop obstinées ; à quoi il repondit, que la justice n'étoit plus justice lors qu'elle vouloit par la force tirer des personnes les choses qu'il ne sçavoient point. Ce jou le Roi étoit aux Tuileries, qui pressoit fort qu'on en fait une fin, ce qu'on eut fait, n'eut été Monsieur de Fleury,* qui étoit rapporteur du procès, lequel ne voulut opiner pour l'heure, s'excussant de ce q:e le temps étoit passé ; qui fut cause qu'il fut renvoyé par eau en la Bastille, comme il étoit venu. Ce même matin fut aussi afiché un placart à la porte du Palais, qui disoit, "Aujourd'hui, pour faire plaisir à Rosny,† l'on fait mourir Biron, au seul témoignage du plus méchant traître de ce Royaume, meurtrier, paricide, faux—monnoyeur, violateur, ravisseur, et sorcier." Un autre fut jetté aux Tuileries fort seditieux.

Lundi dernier tous les Messieurs s'assemblerent des les cinque heures du matin, et ne sortirent point que sur les deux heures. Il n'y eut pas un des Conseillers qui ne fait quand vient à opiner une longue préface en la louange de ses vertus, toutes fois ils ne laisserent point de conclure tous à la mort, pourquoi la Cour le declara suffisament

* Stephen de Fleury, Dean of the Grand Chamber.

† M. de Rosny, afterwards Duke of Sully, in his Memoirs of this year, professes the highest sentiments of friendship for Biron, and laments his fatal obstinacy in very pathetic terms ; nor does this libel afford sufficient grounds for doubting that minister's sincerity. Popular opinions are seldom well founded in those countries where the measures of state, and the conduct of statesmen, are legally submitted to the criticisms of the vulgar ; how liable then must they be to error under governments of an opposite character.

attaint de crime de Leze Majesty au premier chef, pour avoir attenté contre la personne du Roi et son etat ; en réparation de quoi, apres qu'il auroit été ouï et interrogé sur faits et articles resultans du proces, elle le comdamnoit d'être mené en la Place de Grève, et là, sur un échaffaut, avoir la teste trenchée, et ses biens coefisqués au Roi, ou à cieux à qui il appartient.

Le lendemain, qui étoit Mardi, on s'attendoit qu'il seroit exécuté ; mais à cause que quelques uns de ses amis avoyent envoyé vers le Roi pour obtenir qu'il ne feut point executé publiquement, et le Roi l'ayant remis à la Cour, il fallut attendre à ce matin que la Cour s'est assemblée, qui a ordonné que non obstant l'arrêt du Lundi la Cour faisant grace qu'il seroit exécuté en la Bastille ; ou tout aussitot le Premier Président,* en le compagnie de Monsieur le Chancelier, se sont transportés en la Bastille, ou dès qu'il les aperçeux, il a dit à ceux qui étoient aupres de lui, "Voila ma mort venir," Le Chancelier lui ayant demandé l'ordre, il lui a répondu, " prenez là ; je voudrois ne l'avoir jamais vu." Et comme la Président lui a voulu prononcer son arrêt, il ne l'a jamais voulu ouir, l'interrompant à tout coup, le portant avec beaucoup d'impatience ; et comme quelques gens d'église l'admonetassent de se préparer à la mort il leur a dit, " Faites fin, ne voyez vous pas ce

* Achilles de Harlay, first President of the Parliament of Paris, in which office he succeeded his father-in-law, Christopher de Thou, the father of the famous historian. De Harlay died in 1616, aged eighty, having resigned his Presidency some little time before.

“ méchant la qui m'attend,” parlant de Bourreau
Et ainsi qu'il montoit sur l'échaffaut il lui est
souvenu d'une de ses sœurs qui étoit enceinte, de
laquelle il a demandé quelle enfant elle a fait ;
puis tirant un diamant qu'il avoit au doigt, a prié
que l'on le lui fait tenir ; il a aussi declaré beau-
coup d'argent qu'il avoit deça et delà, mais il n'a
accusé à personne. Et quand il a été sur l'échaf-
faut, et que le Bourreau s'est approché pour l'ac-
commoder, il lui a commandé de ne lui toucher
point de peur de le mettre en furie, “ Car,” dit il,
“ je vous etranglerois tous.” Il avoit le regard fort
furieux, et souvent regardoit alentour de lui s'il
pouvoit point se saisir de l'épée du Bourreau.
Il a mis son bandeau par deux ou trois fois, et la
deuxième il a prié l'un de ses beaux-pères de le
consoller d'autant qu'il n'en pouvoit plus ; et comme
il pensoit encore oter son bandeau, le Bourreau lui
a trenché la teste. Son corps doit être porté à
Biron. Tout aussitot que s'en a été fait un courrier
a parti pour s'en aller trouver le Roi.

Voilà comme s'est passé la fin de sa tragedie,
où je clorrai cette lettre ; vous priant de m'excuser
de ma hardiesse, et m'honorer toujours du nombre
de ceux qui désirent vous demeurer à jamais,

Monsieur,

Votre très humble et très affectionné serviteur, &c.

De Paris, ce dernier de Juillet, 1602.

No. CCCIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 43.)

Indorsed, "The Copy of a speech delivered to her Majesty, at her departure from Harvile, the Lord Keeper's house, Aug. 1602."

Place, attired in black, gives the Queen this at farewell.

Sweet Majesty,

BE pleased to look upon a poor widow, mourning before your Grace. I am this Place, which at your coming was full of joy, but now at your departure am as full of sorrow ; as I was then, for my comfort, accompanied with the present cheerful Time, but now he must depart with you, and, blessed as he is, must ever fly before you. But, alas ! I have no wings, as Time hath. My heaviness is such as I must stay, still amazed to see so great happiness so soon bereft me. O that I could remove with you as other circumstances can. Time can go with you ; persons can go with you. They can move like Heaven, but I, like dull earth, as I am indeed, must stay unmoveable. I could wish myself, like the enchanted castle of love, to hold you here for ever, but your virtues would dissolve all my enchantments. Then what remedy ? As it is against the nature of an angel to be circumscribed in place, so it is against the nature of place to have the motion of an angel. I must stay, forsaken and desolate ; you may go, with Majesty, joy, and glory. My only suit before you go is that you will pardon the close imprisonment which you have suffered ever since your coming ; imputing it not to me,

but to St. Swithin,* who of late hath raised so many storms as I was fain to provide this anchor for you (*presenting the queen with an anchor jewel*), when I understood you would put into this creek ; but now, since I perceive the harbour is too little for you, and that you will hoist sail and begone, I beseech you now take this anchor with you ; and I pray to Him that made both time and place, that in all places wherever you shall arrive, you may anchor as safely as you do, and ever shall do, in the hearts of my owners."

No. CCCIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. M. fol. 69.)

SIR THOMAS EDMONDS

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

My very good Lord,

THOUGH I know your Lordship was presently advertised of the execution of the Duke of Biron, yet, because the proceeding therein, and the manner of his behaviour at that time, are diversly reported, I presume to send your Lordship the copies of two letters, the one written in French,† the other in Italian, which do relate the same more particularly and truly than any other letters that have been written hither. Your Lordship will find that he died very impatiently, in presuming that the greatness of his merit and worth, joined with

* Alluding to an ancient prejudice, still entertained by the common people, that a rainy St. Swithin's (the 15th of July) will be followed by forty days of the same weather.

† No. CCCII.

the custom of their French liberty, ought to cancel a fault which was only begun out of discontentment, and afterwards, upon better consideration, left to be further prosecuted. It is not to be doubted but the same would have received "easy remission in another person; but the arrogance of his spirit and greatness of his power made him incapable of that favour.

There is little other news, for the present, worthy the writing to your Lordship. The Count Maurice is thoroughly engaged in the siege of Grave; and, thereupon, the Archduke is lately gone to his army, with purpose, as it is said, either to attempt to relieve that place, or else, if that be not feasible, then to besiege Berke; and he is in hand with other projects for the blocking of the haven of Ostend. We receive daily confirmation of the great preparations which are making in Spain; and the common opinion and discourse is that they are only intended for Ireland, and that their purpose is to make one descent in the North parts, and another in Munster. It is said that the time of their setting forth will be about the beginning of September.

Her Majesty hath had compassion, notwithstanding her earnest affection to go her progress, yet to forbear the same in favour to her people, in regard of the unseasonableness of the weather; and, for that purpose doth appoint to return by the end of this week, and to settle at Oatlands. Her Highness hath been very honourably entertained at my Lord Keeper's house, and

many times richly presented ; yet all men are not confident that the same will procure an abolition of former unkindness. The Lord Evers, Mr. Secretary Herbert, Mr. Doctor Dunne, and Mr. Stephen le Sieur,* are appointed Commissioners to treat at Breame with the Commissioners of Denmark. Mr. Grivell, and the rest of the Carrick Commissioners are newly arrived, and their charge coming by sea. This is all that for the present I have to trouble your Lordship withal, but only that it may please your Lordship to give me leave to present the remembrance of my most humble duty to my Lady ; and so I humbly take my leave.

From London, August 3rd, 1602.

Your Lordship's most humbly bounden,

THOMAS EDMONDS.

*To the right honourable my singular good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury, of her Majesty's
most honourable Privy Counsel.*

* Ralph Lord Eure, or Evers ; Sir John Herbert, Under-Secretary ; Daniel Dun, Doctor of Laws ; and Stephen, afterwards Sir Stephen, le Sieur, the Queen's Agent to the Princes of the Empire. They were sent to Breame (Bremen) to settle with the King of Denmark's Commissioners certain points relative to trade, particularly the fishery on the coast of Norway, and in the neighbourhood of Iceland, which the English had formerly rented on low terms, and at the expiration of every seven years, acknowledged the right of the Dane by asking for a renewal. This ceremony had been of late years omitted, and was at last plainly refused by the English ; in consequence of which the Danish ports were shut against their ships, and some of them were seized on the fishing coasts, and condemned as pirates ; the present conference, however, produced no determination.

No. CCCV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 45.)

SIR GEORGE CAREW
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

May it please your Lordship,
Your letter of the 18th of May, sent by Thomas Wingfield, your Lordship's servant, about five days past came unto my hands ; humbly thanking your Lordship for your honourable favour in vouchsafing to remember me, a poor creature confined to this barbarous country, where nothing of ease, pleasure, profit, or in any sort worthy of estimation may be found.

The rumours of Ireland are altogether wars and invasion ; the rebels thirsting, and the honester sort, of which the number is exceeding small, fearing their coming. In myself, I dare make no censure ; but, if the intelligences I have sent into England may carry credit, it is very likely they will come, and that within a few days. I know the truth of it is better known unto your Lordships there than unto me, and therefore I humbly refer the consideration of it unto your wisdom ; herein playing the part but of a relation, and not of a persuader, lest I might fall into one of two errors, either in being the cause, if the Spaniard should not come, of her Majesty's needless charge in sending of supplies unto my aid, or in hindering of the prosecution in the North, by procuring the sending part of those forces unto me. But of this one thing I am most assured, if the army of Spain do come so powerful as is reported, and here confi-

dently expected, I shall undergo a hard task until I be relieved, the places I have to guard being wholly, weak, and many, and my forces but small ; but God's pleasure must be done, and I hope, with his favour, to discharge as much as may be expected from me, or the companies that are with me. Only this I humbly beseech at your Lordship's hands ; if, in your wisdom, it shall be conceived that the Spaniard will invade us, that you will add your prayer that succours may be hastened unto me, if it be possible, before their landing ; for from the Lord Deputy himself being so far off in Ulster, and his forces necessarily dispersed into so many garrisons, before he can assemble them together, and come to my aid, a month will be expired. This last year, 2000 men happily arrived a little before the Spaniard's landing, which supply gave us means to make present head until the army might be assembled, but this year the enemy is like to come with far greater force ; whereof accordingly there ought to be a consideration, which I humbly leave to your Lordship's grave wisdom, evermore resting your Lordship in all humble service to be commanded,

GEORGE CAREW.*

Cork, this 11th of August, 1602.

*To the right honourable my very good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury at the Court.*

* Sir George Carew, Knight, one of the most eminent persons of his time ; a brave soldier, an accomplished courtier, and a man of letters. He was the son of George Carew, Dean of Exeter and Windsor, by Anne, daughter of Sir Nicholas Harvey, and was educated for the clerical profession at University Col-

No. CCCVI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 47.)

Indorsed by the EARL OF SHREWSBURY, "Extracts of Irish News, Aug. 1602."

THE 25th of this present, the Marshal, and Serjeant Major, accompanied with the companies of Sir Francis Stafford, Captain Hansard, Captain Ellis Jones, and other forces, consisting of 800 foot and 200 horse, went to take a fort which was held by Brian Macarthy. The rebels at their first going thither held the fort out for three or four days, not thinking our forces durst attempt them; but, seeing

lege in Oxford. He entered, however, very young into the army, and distinguished himself by several military gallantries previous to the popular expedition to Cadiz in 1596, in which he accompanied the Earl of Essex. In February, 1600, N. S. he was sent to Ireland as one of the Lords Justices, and Treasurer of the Army, and was appointed Master of the Ordnance, and President of Munster, soon after his arrival. The extinction of Tyrone's tedious rebellion was in a great measure owing to his admirable conduct there. James the First, upon his accession, gave him the government of Guernsey, and on the 4th of June, 1605, created him Lord Carew, of Clopton in Warwickshire, he having married Joyce, daughter and co-heir of William Clopton, of Clopton, the representative of a very ancient family in that country. The office of Master of the Ordnance for life was conferred on him about the same time; in 1612 he obtained a seat in the Privy Council; and, finally, was advanced to the Earldom of Totnes, in Devonshire, by Charles the First, but leaving no issue, his titles became extinct. He died at the Savoy, March 27th, 1629, in his 74th year, and was buried at Stratford-upon-Avon, in the neighbourhood of his seat of Clopton.

Sir George Carew wrote an historical account of affairs in Ireland during the three years of his residence there, entitled *Hibernia Pacata*, which was published in London in 1633. He left likewise a large collection of MSS. relative to the history of that island, part of which, as Dugdale informs us, were deposited in the Bodleian library, and the rest were purchased of his executors by Sir Robert Shirley, an ancestor of Earl Ferrars.

them at last work their trenches close under the fort ditches, they all yielded to mercy, and gave up the fort quietly. There were in the fort, some 60 rebels, and Sir Henry M'Shane O'Neal, who was prisoner. My Lord Deputy hath, since his coming, given him a charge both of horse and foot. There was taken in the fort much of Tyrone's plate, and of his own apparel, besides cows, horses, and great store of victuals. By report it is the strongest fort in Ireland. The Lord Deputy hath left Captain Langford's company there ; his Lordship the 20th hereof drew his whole army into the field, marching towards Blackwater.

These whose names hereafter follow, are come in to my Lord since April last, and to Sir Henry Danvers ; who have brought with them many heads of cattle.

Con O'Neal, brake prison ; Arthur M'Barran ; Henry Oge O'Neal ; Patrick M'Carthy Moile ; O'Caine ; M'Kennan ; two of the M'Canies ; Captain of Cambrazell ; M'Neil of the Clan ; O'Hagon ; O'Divellen ; Ne-O'Quin ; Cormack O'Quin ; Henry M'Shane O'Neil, escaped lately.

These whose names follow are still in rebellion.

Tyrone ; Cormock, his brother ; Maguire ; M'Mahone ; Brian M'Carthy ; Neil M'Cormock, Captain of Killogtough.

Hereby you may see in what poor estate the arch rebel is left ; whose best company, as was informed me in the North, are infinite numbers of stinging flies, who swarm so mightily in the woods that his followers are not able to endure them ; so

that shortly, either by men or vermin, you shall hear the confusion of that rebel. Tyrone is now quite gone out of the North, and hath left his own country, and is fled into Connaught, his whole strength being said to be not above three hundred.*

No. CCCVII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 48.)

SIR THOMAS EDMONDS
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

SINCE the writing of my other letter there hath been a great forwardness to have continued the

* Tyrone's submission followed soon after the date of this letter, and the Irish rebellion, which had lasted eight years, was now finally quelled. The following concise and impartial account of its rise and progress will serve as a key to the few papers in this collection which relate to Irish affairs, and is extracted from an admirable piece of history, now known only to the curious, the solid materials of which have been so frequently pulled in pieces and rebuilt, and so capriciously altered; that little of the original is to be recognized in the works of our modern essayists on this reign. "Thus," says Camden in his *Annals of Elizabeth*, "was Tir Oen's rebellion happily extinguished, through the Queen's better fortune, and the good conduct of the Lord Montjoy, Lord Deputy. It commenced at first upon personal disgusts, with a little touch of ambition at the bottom. It was fomented and kept up by the neglect and stinginess of England. It ran all over Ireland on the pretence of restoring Popery, and the prospect of unbounded liberty. It got strength by the weakness and credulity of some, and the private countenance of others that were in place; and gained more ground by one or two fortunate successes, backed by the Spaniard's gold and forces, and the Pope's indulgencies; it was protracted and spun out by the ill-timed emulations of the English; the lodging of the government in two hands; and the avarice of the old soldiers, who made the war a kind of trade; to which we may add, the subtle stratagems of Tir Oen; his feigned submissions, and treacherous capitulations; the protections granted to offenders; the difficulty and straitness of the roads and passages; and, in the last place, the desperate temper of the Irish, who trusted more to the swiftness of their heels than the strength of their hands."

progress to my Lord of Hartford's house, but now at length it is utterly broken, in respect of the lateness of the season, and it is in deliberation to find out some places about Oatlands and Windsor, as Horseley and Sunninghill, and others like, where to entertain the Queen for a fortnight, and afterwards to return to Nonsuch. We have news within these two days that all these great preparations of Spain are intended again for the renewing of their former enterprise for the besieging of Algier, and that it is discovered that the King of Fez doth join with the Spaniard in that action ; whereby we grow now to be secure that the Spaniards will not trouble us this year in Ireland, which if it prove so happy, there is great hope conceived that the Lord Deputy will make a speedy end of that war. There is no late news come from him since his departure from Carlingsford. From Dublin it is written that the Lord of Delvin is lately dead, whereby he hath ended his troublesome suit. On Sunday last the Lord Evers, and Mr. Secretary Herbert, and the rest of the Commissioners appointed for the legation at Breame, took their leaves of her Majesty, and Mr. Secretary Herbert was then made Knight, to the end that he may not be hereafter more abused with the name of "Doctor."

This is all that for the present I can advertise your Lordship, unless it will please your Lordship also to be informed that Mrs. Cecil and my Lady Hatton are lately brought to bed of daughters. And

so, with the remembrance of my most humble duty, I take my leave.

From London, the 1st of September, 1602.

Your Lordship's most humble bounden,

THOMAS EDMONDS.

Mr. Smith is lately enlarged out of the Tower, but not as yet poor Sir H. N.*

*To the right honourable my singular good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury, of her Majesty's
most honourable Privy Council.*

No. CCCVIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. M. fol. 73.)

BENJAMIN PIGOT

TO THE COUNTESS OF SHREWSBURY.

My most honourable and very good Lady.

I do understand by letters directed to me from Mr. Bouthe, by this bearer, that my Lord of Shrewsbury and your Honour will be pleased to accept from me some lines concerning the good agreement of the young couple, and of the good success of your Honour's labours about that business which was seconded, and is yet continued, here: The fruit thereof I can assure your Honour is daily much more comfortable to us than heretofore it hath been; and we have no doubt, with God's grace, but that a happy success in time will ensue, to the great comfort of all them that do truly honour and

* Sir Thomas Smith, one of the Sheriffs of London, who had been a prisoner ever since the beginning of February, on suspicion of having favoured the Earl of Essex's designs in the city, but was now admitted to bail. By Sir H. N. is meant Sir Henry Neville, for whom see No. CCXCIX.

wish well to this match. My very honourable good Lady shortly after your Honour's being in Bedfordshire, I did, in the kindest manner I could, persuade the young couple to lodge in one bed together ; which was conceived, and modestly respected and upon good consideration, not being hastened more than was fit, my Lady Elizabeth* did yield her willing consent to admit my cousin Grey to lodge in bed with her. The end and purpose thereof we all assure ourselves is acted. We cannot discover any defects to hinder it, for they do both accompany in very kind and familiar sort, both in bed, at home, and abroad. Myself can witness this to be true ; and therefore we trust, if God be pleased, that we shall have great comfort, both of the young couple, and of the fruit of their bodies, which God grant, if it be his holy will, even for Christ Jesus' sake.

My very honourable good Lady, myself, together with my wife, do most humbly thank your Honour for all your gracious favours bestowed upon us. We can no way deserve the least of them but by our prayers to Almighty God for your honour and happiness, both in this world and in the world to come ; and even so we rest, ever most faithful in all humble duty,

At your Honour's command,
BENJAMIN PIGOTT.†

Dated at Gravenhurst, Sept. 2, 1602.

*To the right honourable and my singular good Lady
the Conntess of Shrewsbury, deliver this.*

* Second daughter to the Earl of Shrewsbury.

† It appears by the Visitations of Bedfordshire that this honest

No. CCCIX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 54.)

WILLIAM BROWNE

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right Honourable,

THE opportunity of this bearer, whom I met with by chance, hath forbidden me to defer any longer to write unto your Honour though my determination were first to have seen the Court, and have informed myself better what to write. By the latest letters from Flushing, dated about the 11th of this month, the news is that we are likely before long to have the town of Grave* at devotion. The

gentleman, whose simplicity of manners is so strongly characterised in his letter, was descended from Thomas Pigot, a serjeant-at-law, in the second of Henry the Eighth, and was the second son of Francis Pigot, by his second wife, Margery, sister of Oliver, first Lord St. John of Bletsho, and widow of Henry Grey of Wrest, grandfather to the young Earl of Kent here spoken of by the appellation of "my cousin Grey." He was thrice married, and had a numerous issue by his two last wives: Henry Pigot, his eldest son, was living at Gravenhurst in Bedfordshire in 1634, and other branches of the family were settled in different parts of the county. A letter from the Earls of Shrewsbury and Kent, inserted in Doctor Robertson's Appendix, informs us that Mr. Pigot was one of the few persons called by those noblemen to be witnesses to the untimely death of the Queen of Scots.

* A strong city in the province of Dutch Brabant, which had surrendered a few days before the date of this letter. The siege of Ostend, afterwards mentioned, proved the most remarkable which occurred in those wars, for it lasted three years and four months, and was said to have cost the Spaniards 100,000 men. It was conducted by the Marquis Ambrose Spinola, who commanded under the Archduke Albert, the Spanish General. The person styled here "his Excellency" was probably Sir Francis Vere, the English Commander, to whose wise and brave conduct the glory of the siege was chiefly owing.

counterscarp was gained about the 6th or 7th of this month. They are very weak ; within town not above 700 or 800 able men ; surgeons and their wares are their chiepest wants. If that service were brought to an end, or might be ended with any convenient speed, I persuade myself they would yet, to please her Majesty, attempt soinewhat else in the quarters near, or at Ostend. They will be the better able to undertake any thing by reason that the enemy's army continues still mutinous, and possess themselves of castles and strong holds, and deny to do service ; and some good troops of horse here be that, as it is written to me, make offer to his Excellency to give themselves to his service, upon terms to receive reasonable content-
ment. From Ostend I hear that the enemy, endeavouring to stop the entry of the haven, hath been hindered by the foul weather he hath ; but, though he take that, yet have we devised a new haven, which, as it is supposed, cannot be taken away. There is speech of seven gallies that should be in some part upon the coast of France, but if it were so, I presume we should have heard of their coming forward before now, the wind having served them so well. This is all the news I can write your Honour till I have been at the well-head to fetch more ; the next week, God willing, I will write to your Honour again.

At my coming to London I found my Lord of Pembroke gone down to Wilton, and my Lady Ann sick in her bed, not to be seen, at my Lady of Huntingdon's ; so that I could neither remember

your Lordship to him, nor my Lady to her : my Lady of Huntingdon told me that she had been, since my Lord's going down, so sick that she feared her much, but now, God be thanked, though weak and in her bed, yet is she in the way of recovery. That which should have been my preamble I reserve for the last, which is to acknowledge the debts and entire devotions which I owe unto your Lordship, and my most honoured good Lady. I cannot express my true acknowledgment of the favours received, for the compass of my thoughts do but contain the desire I have to be thankful in all the services I am able to do. I most humbly take leave of your Lordship, and will continually pray that all honour and happiness may follow your most honourable deserts.

From Fulham, this 17th of September, 1602.

Your Honour's true servant, in all humbleness
and sincerity,

WILLIAM BROWNE.*

The only hope which I can conceive which makes the town of Grave to hold out thus long,

* This gentleman, who was born in 1558, was the only son of Nicholas Browne, of Snelston in Derbyshire, by Eleanor, daughter and heir of Ralph Shirley, of Stanton Harold in Leicestershire. He was one of the old Low Country Captains ; served in Flanders almost from the beginning of the war ; and had the conduct of the surprise of Gravelines in 1586, where he was made prisoner. Sir Philip Sydney was his particular friend and patron, and the valiant brethren Sir Francis and Sir Horace Vere, who had probably been trained to the military profession under his care, always styled him " Father." He was appointed Lieutenant Governor of Flushing towards the end of this reign, and seems to have gained no further promotion in the next than the honour of knighthood, which was conferred on him at the Tower, March 15, 1604-5.

seeing themselves frustrate of the enemy's means to visit them, is this ; that commonly in September and October great store of rain falling in the upper countries is wont to raise the waters, as that it usually every year overfloweth all the banks ; and, if they can continue some four or five weeks longer, haply such inundations may come as that his Excellency will be much troubled to lie there. This is, for all I can conjecture, their only hope. Your Honour will pardon my scribbling.

*To the right honourable my singular good Lord
the Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of the
Garter, and one of her Majesty's most hon-
ourable Privy Council, &c.*

No. CCCX.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. M. fol. 36.)

WILLIAM BROWNE TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable,

I LEFT the enclosed letter to be delivered to a man of your Lordship's, he could not be found ; I send it now because your Lordship may see my diligence. I have since received news that Grave is rendered by composition, the motion coming from them of the town first ; the particulars of their contract are not yet come. It came in good time for his Excellency, as I am written, for the continual rain had made the rivers so to swell, that the mines of his Excellency, and many of his approaches, were under water. His Excellency, as I hear, hath sent some 2000 horse to invcst Venlo, and means to go that way ; yet some write that he means, as I wrote in my former, to bend his course towards

our borders of Zeland, nearer Ostend ; which indeed, unless there be great likelihood of yielding Venlo, I do the better believe.

I send your Lordship herein enclosed some verses compounded by Mr. Secretary, who got Hales to frame a ditty unto it. The occasion was, as I hear, that the young Lady of Derby* wearing about her neck, in her bosom, a picture which was in a dainty tablet, the Queen, espying it, asked what fine jewel that was. The Lady Darby was curious to excuse the shewing of it, but the Queen would have it, and opening it and finding it to be Mr. Secretary's, snatched it away, and tied it upon her shoe, and walked along with it there ; then she took it thence and pinned it on her elbow, and wore it some time there also ; which Mr. Secretary being told of, made these verses, and had Hales to sing them in his chamber. It was told her Majesty that Mr. Secretary had rare music and songs ; she would needs hear them, and so this ditty was sung which you see first written. More verses there be likewise, whereof some, or all, were likewise sung. I do boldly send these things to your Lordship, which I would not do to any one else, for I hear they are very secret. Some of the verses argue that he repines not though her Majesty please to grace others contents himself with the favour he hath. I am now in haste, but will write again when I have been at

* Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Edward Vere Earl of Oxford, and wife to William Earl of Derby: She is called here "the young Lady," to distinguish her from her sister-in-law, the late Earl's widow.

Court; in the mean time will pray for your Lordship, and my most honourable Lady, and remain ever

Your Lordship's in all humbleness, sincerely,
WILLIAM BROWN.

Sept. 18th, 1602.

To the right honourable my most singular good Lord, the Earl of Shrewsbury, Knight of the Garter, and one of her Majesty's most honourable Privy Council, give these, with speed.

No. CCCXI.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. M. fol. 18.)

THE EARL OF WORCESTER
TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. 1602.

Noble Lord,

I HAVE received your second letter, which came to my hands, being sent from my house; but the messenger I could not learn, otherwise I would have written by the same; so that my letter shall now take his fortune.

This day it is reported that Grave is won, and delivered by composition. The particulars I cannot advertise; neither whether it be true or no; but you in the country must take it for good whatsoever we write out of Court. It is likewise reported that the engines of fagots which the Archduke had made at Ostend are all defeated but one, and it is thought that one will not long continue. The town holds out yet and will do; but the plague doth somewhat trouble them. It is said there hath been an offer of peace from the Duke and his wife to the United Provinces; that if they will acknow-

ledge them as their Lords, he will withdraw all the Spanish forces out of the country, and himself and his wife will live in the Dukedom of Burgundy : this take with the rest, and believe as you list. The King of Spain hath failed of his purpose at Algiers once more. I pray God we hear not the souuer from him in Ireland. The traitor there is almost driven out. I believe this winter will make an end of that war.

We are frolic here in Court ; much dancing in the Privy Chamber of country dances before the Queen's Majesty, who is exceedingly pleased therewith ; Irish tunes are at this time most pleasing, but in winter, Lullaby, an old song of Mr. Bird's,* will be more in request, as I think. And so, with my heartiest remembrance to my honourable Lady, I will ever rest

Your Lordship's affectionate to command,

Sept. 19.

E. WORCESTER.

No. CCCXII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 56.)

WILLIAM BROWN TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY.

Right honourable,
THIS is my last letter which I shall send your honour while I am in England, for I am commanded away with her Majesty's letters to the Prince Maurice, and the States General : I presume the

* William Bird, an organist of the chapel royal in this and the following reign. Several of his compositions were published ; the most considerable of which, entitled "Gradualia, seu Cantionum Sacrarum, quarum aliæ ad quatuor, aliæ vero ad quinque et sex Voces, editæ sunt," was printed at London in

contents be to waken them, now that they have taken the town of Grave, to do somewhat for the distressed town of Ostend. The enemy's mutinied soldiers are, as our last news report, agreed to come to the States' service in good troops. Some that lay at a place called Hochstraet, numbered to 1300 horse, and 2000 foot, are said to be revolted from the Archduke ; who took an extraordinary course against them, by setting a reward to any that should bring him the heads of any of these mutineers, viz. : five crowns on every private soldier, ten crowns on Corporals and Sergeants, and 1000 crowns for the head of the Elector. If matters go thus with him, the States are like to have unexpected prosperity.

There came letters from the Earl of Bath,* of 1500 Spaniards that should be landed to the westward of Kinsale some 30 leagues, at or in, a bay called the Skilliagles†. This news came to him by a bark that came from Ilfordcombe : the Mayor wrote it unto him, and the Mayor had it from a little bark that, as he writes, came from some part of Ireland, but I hear not that any confirmation is come of it from Ireland by letters to the Court.

1610, in six volumes quarto. He was likewise author, says Wood, of several divine services and anthems in English ; of a most admired composition in forty parts, long since lost ; and, with the assistance of two others, of a collection of twenty lessons, called " Parthenia, or the Maidenhead of the first music that ever was printed for the Virginals.

* William Bourchier, third Earl of Bath of that family. He died July 12, 1623.

† Now called Ballinskelligs Bay, in the county of Kerry.

Your Honour will be pleased to pardon this hasty scribbling, for my haste is such as I can only add my prayers to God for your Honour's and my most honourable Lady's most happy prosperity.

London, this 21st of September, 1602.

Your Honour's, in all humble true service
to be commanded,

WILLIAM BROWN.

*To the right honourable the Earl of Shrewsbury,
Knight of the Order, and of her Majesty's
most honourable Privy Counsel.*

No. CCCXIII.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. M. fol. 75.)

SIR FULKE GREVILLE

TO THE COUNTESS OF SHREWSBURY. 1602.

Right honourable, and my very good Lady, I do long to know how your Ladyship doth by a messenger of my own, which makes me presume to send this bearer; and if I shall tell you that your greatest and worthiest friends here do long as much for my Lord's coming up, and yours, out of that darkness, as they call it, I shall say no more than is true; and, Madam, believe it, his love and good opinion of yourself is none of your least happiness; for it is as constant as he thinks you, and grounded upon as great confidence of your worth and honour as any creature can have of another. I know this is no news to you, and yet not amiss that your poor friends should repeat and testify when they know.

Since my return from Plymouth I understand my Lord Marquis hath offered his house for sale,

and there is one Swinnerton, a merchant, that hath engaged himself to deal for it. The prize, as I hear, is £ 5000, his offer £ 4500; so as the one's need, and the other's desire, I doubt will easily reconcile this difference of price between them. In the mean season I thought it my duty to give your Ladyship notice, because both your house and my Lady of Warwick's are included in this bargain; and we, your poor neighbours, would think our dwellings desolate without you, and conceive your Ladyship would not willingly become a tenant to such a fellow. It may therefore please you to determine of your own, in your wisdom; wherein, if my travel to my Lord Marquis might do you any service, when I shall receive your directions I shall bestow myself more contentedly in no business whatsoever. Good Madam, be pleased to resolve with my Lord, and do something in it, that we may not lose you.*

* The foregoing paragraph deserves some explanation. The estate here mentioned was the site of the dissolved monastery of Augustine Friars, situated in Broad-street Ward, near London Wall, which had been granted by Henry the Eighth to William Poulett, first Marquis of Winchester, who made it his town residence, and it was called, while it continued in his family, by the different names of Poulett, and Winchester House. His grandson, William, the "Lord Marquis" named in this letter, who about this time was reduced to great necessities by his magnificent style of living, and the burden of a large family, was obliged to dispose of this mansion and its appendages to raise money for the payment of his debts, and John Swinnerton, a rich merchant, became the purchaser. The latter was descended from a reputable family, seated at Oswestry in Shropshire, which appears to have branched from the ancient house of Swinnerton, of Swinnerton in Staffordshire, since Camden, who was his cotemporary, allows him the same arms in his

The best news I can yet write your Ladyship is of the Queen's health and disposition of body, which I assure you is excellent good, and I have not seen her every way better disposed these many years. Till this time this wayward charac business hath made me a stranger to this place ; before Michaelmas the great commission I have will be out, and we inferiors out of office, I hope. Among all the goods there is little delicacies worthy of you, but, if I might understand your Ladyship's pleasure, I would gladly do you service in it. The kinds be calicoes ; slived silks ;* all manner of spices, but nutmegs and sugar ; jams, rich and store ; carpets, the Queen hath staid all, neither is there any half comparable to your old one ;† damasks, very few ; ebony wood, abundance ; and

funeral certificate. He was appointed Sheriff of London this year ; was knighted at Whitehall on the 24th of July in the next ; served the office of Lord Mayor in 1612, when he attended officially at the splendid nuptials of the Princess Elizabeth and the Palsgrave ; and dying at his house in Aldermanbury, Dec. 8, 1616, was buried with great solemnity on the 21st of January, having bequeathed a plentiful fortune to each of his seven children. The contempt with which Sir Fulke Greville speaks of this respectable person induced me to give so particular an account of him, as it affords a remarkable instance of the distance at which the nobility then kept themselves from even the first members of the commercial order ; a distinction which, however extravagant it may appear to us of later days, was perhaps at that time justifiable on principles of national policy.

* Sleved, slayed, or slea silk ; silk not twisted, for working embroidery. It is mentioned in other places.

† Carpets were at this time excessively dear. Mr. Brown, in a letter to Sir Robert Sydney, on the 29th of November this year, says, "I have bought a Turkey carpet for my Lord Bergavenny, seven Dutch ells long ; (about sixteen feet long) it cost £27 sterling, but it is esteemed very fine, and well worth the money."

this is the sum: be pleased, noble Lady, to command me as you please; and so, with my most humble duty, I commend your Ladyship to God.

From the Court at Oatlands, Sept. 23rd.

Your Honour's to do you humble service,

FULKE GREVILLE.

To the right honourable the Countess of Shrewsbury.

No. CCCXIV.

(Talbot Papers, Vol. K. fol. 58.)

SIR ROBERT CECIL

TO THE EARL OF SHREWSBURY. 1602.*

My Lord,

SOME reason why I have not written to you oftener hath been because good Fulke,† our true friend (for so I now protest to you I cordially hold him) was about to have stolen down to you, and then should you have had our sack of news, even from the Privy Chamber door to the Porter's lodge, but further than that you know we are no censurers. Well, Sir, he cannot for his life get down now from the Queen; for, though his services absent have much contented her, yet she now will not let him go from her, and therefore take this for his just excuse because it is warranted by as honest a man as the Earl of Shrewsbury.

For the state of Ireland, these two points are most in discourse and remarkable, and therefore I touch them. There are no Spaniards yet, nor, I say, will be this year, unless some ten rogues, with

* Indorsed, Mr. Secretary. Sept. 25, 1602."

† Sir Fulke Greville.

some little help, may be sent with O'Donnell. For the Deputy coming, he says, and I wish it may be, to cancel all faults ; but when that will be I protest to God I cannot yet discover in the Queen's disposition, for until his journey from Ulster that cannot be seen, because that will represent to us the certainty and state of all things there. For the Low Countries, since Grave was taken I hear not ; only now, this very hour, Spinola's* gallies are seen between Dover and Calais. They are laid for at Sloose by the States, but I assure myself they will in. The Earl of Northumberland hath a son ; I would you had another. I have now shewed you what we do ; and, because you may know where to find us, this comes from Oatlands, and will shortly write from Richmond ; but I assure you if it must post to the Peake, it shall not cost the Queen so much paper and iuk, nor the posts so much riding.

Your poor friend at command,

ROBERT CECIL.

I must not leave my best wishes to my Lady unremembered, because it is all I can do for her.

† Frederick Spinola, brother to the Marquis Ambrose, who hath been lately mentioned. He commanded the squadron of gallies spoken of by Mr. Browne in No. CCCIX., which was totally routed in the Channel by Sir William Mansell the very night before this letter was written.

END OF VOL. II.

B. BENSLEY, PRINTER.





—



